



# EPOCH OF TWILIGHT

BOOK 04

*Don't Play People For A Fool*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Epoch of Twilight

(纪元黎明)

by

**Don't Play People For A Fool**

# Synopsis

---

Have you ever thought that the state of the world as it presently is, could revert to the laws of the ancients? When a series of strange incidents beginning with the disappearance of his friend led Luo Yuan to question the possibility of an apocalypse, he becomes embroiled in the midst of a global-scale chaos.

Evolution has turned the flora and fauna of the vast and bountiful Earth into something that had never been seen before. Coincidentally, the all-dominating Homo sapiens have ended up at the bottom of the food chain. From mystery to crisis, will Luo Yuan discover a means of saving humanity by racing to the top of the food chain? Or will he strive in accordance with the law of the jungle? It is the dawn of an age of the survival of the fittest.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: Will And Soul

---

Just as Luo Yuan was about to feel a little relief, he was shocked and stared at the corpse of Mo Li. As her eyes were losing vitality, a pale silver shadow was seen coming out of her ice-cold body. A chill rose from Luo Yuan's heart which engulfed his body, causing goosebumps!

"It's her soul!" Luo Yuan was stunned, and could not believe his eyes when he laid his eyes on that shadow.

The apparition was exuding a pale silver radiance as if it was covered with a layer of thick fog, yet it completely resembled Mo Li with all her features and limbs.

Finally, she managed to break loose from her physical body, and slowly stood up. In fact, she was floating into an upright position.

She looked confused and lowered her head to look around as if she had forgotten something. When she saw her own body lying there, she seemed dazed and puzzled for a period of time.

To prevent any unforeseen accidents, Luo Yuan slowly took a step backward and realized that he was also floating in the air like Mo Li's soul. Better yet, he could move his body effortlessly with just his Will.

He expressed surprise and retreated about ten meters away. While the soul or ghost of Mo Li was staring at her own body, he scanned the system and finally discovered two unread messages;



one of it was the notification of the accomplished mission.

"Current Mission: D-level Mission: Puppet Master – Locate and kill the mysterious mind controller" "Duration: Five days"

"Mission Status: Completed"

"Remarks: Perfect"

"Character: Luo Yuan"

"Completion: 100%"

"Rewarded Basic EXP +9600\*100%"

"Remarks: Perfect, EXP +9600\*100%"

"EXP: 43920/153600"

Luo Yuan only scanned through briefly, as he required more EXP to level up. Besides, a D-level mission would not meet the requirements to level up, even if he scored a ‘perfect’ score in the remarks. Either way, he had a long way to go before he could level up.

What caught Luo Yuan's attention was the second message.

Point added to your Will while defending against the mental attack; your Will +1

After a point was added, he had a total of 17 points for his Will. The effects of such a high amount of Will was that he could remove the effects of the earth's gravity and fly in the air if he focused. A sliver of joy flashed through him and immediately, his emotions began to stabilize.

After all, it was not the right time to be distracted.

With that thought in mind, he landed onto the floor once more and felt slightly relieved. After all, he was a person who practiced a kind of martial art that was particular about the earth being used as the source of energy and power, hence, he felt insecure about being in the air.

Finally, Mo Li reacted by shifting her focus from her body, looked up and stared blankly at Luo Yuan.

She suddenly opened her mouth but before Luo Yuan could cast his doubts, his mind came to replay a subtle voice of Mo Li. The voice appeared to be silent and was deathly still, as if she was both complaining and crying.

"Were you the person who killed me?"

If Luo Yuan was a commoner, he would have peed in his pants. However, he was not frightened as he had met such an enemy before. He wasn't interested in physical immunity as he did not have much of a defensive ability from his aura and Will. The only concern he had from this encounter was the mental attacks from her. However, since he had already killed her, how could he be afraid of the dead?

Indifferent and cold, he said, "Who else other than myself, is standing here before you?"

When Luo Yuan stayed alert, Mo Li voice was unexpectedly heard again, "Then you should know me. Who are you? And...who am I?" Her face became confused again like she had lost her memory.

Luo Yuan hesitated for a moment, before he told her the truth, "I'm Luo Yuan and you're Mo Li!"

"Luo Yuan and Mo Li... that sounds familiar. Yes, I'm Mo Li!" she seemed to be deep in thoughts, and stood there in a trance for a few seconds. Out of a sudden, she looked at Luo Yuan with surprise and asked, "What are you doing here, who are you?"

Luo Yuan felt strange and answered again, "Luo Yuan!"

"What a familiar name... how did you die?"

Luo Yuan said nothing but he knew what was happening. After a while, as expected, she seemed to have seen Luo Yuan for the first



time again and said something similar.

He recalled of a report that said if a ghost truly existed, it must have no memory, or at most only a temporary memory. This is because a soul does not have a brain to act as a memory storage.

Nonetheless, Luo Yuan found out that the view was inaccurate, but he could not exclude the possibility that the soul of Mo Li could be too strong. Her soul could possibly still have some vague fragments of memories and allowed her to reminisce her own identity. It was still even capable of having memories, even for just a few seconds.

...

But alas, it seemed like the strength of the soul could not last long. As time passed by, her figure gradually had become gloomy, and the illusory shadow began gleaming after about ten minutes. The silver radiance had become almost transparent.

At that time, she could no longer speak and had a blank look, which was most probably the illusory shadow losing its spirituality.

After she persisted for another one minute, the shadow finally dispersed into numerous light spots and completely disappeared from the world.

As Luo Yuan was looking at the dispersal of Mo Li's soul under

the dim light, unexpectedly, he felt lost and sad.

Disregarding the hostile demeanor they had against each other, and even though her immense strength had made her become an almost complete soul, she still dispersed into nothing eventually.

After Luo Yuan glanced over, he had an idea. His body slowly floated and flew to the front.

...

It was his first time flying, but to his surprise, he did not feel uncomfortable as if flying had always been second nature. Every movement he took felt as natural as breathing, as his body turned and sped along with his thoughts.

The wind blew against his face and left his hair windswept. As the suppressed excitement had risen from his heart, he became more exhilarated as he soared on. If it was not for the late night and having just returned from a crime scene making him easily exposed, he would have wanted to let out a long wheezing bellow.

Though he did not shout out loud, his face was getting more joyous.

Flying has always been a human's dream and because of this dream, we humans have invented various modes of transportation to enable flying. However, the excitement of flying by yourself would not be comparable to the excitement of flying with a tool.

Finally, Luo Yuan understood why Wang Shishi no longer wanted to walk on the floor when she learned how to fly. The reason to practice was, in fact, a small part of it, while for the most part was that the feeling was indeed addictive!

The speed of flying was not fast at all. Luo Yuan estimated it to be about 20 m per second or 72 km per hour. It was slower than running with all his strength, where the speed would be about a hundred meters per two seconds.

However, it was not an absolute number, because if he wanted to hurry on his journey, especially through the mountain road, flying would be much faster. After all, there were no obstacles in the air, which allowed him to travel on an unobstructed route, instead of worrying about the topography when he runs on.

...

The level of Will was not defined by how one expresses their emotion but rather, on one's ability to control it. Examples are to remain calm during the hour of peril, intoxicated without being lost and enduring intense pain, loneliness, boredom, and stress. As Luo Yuan got back into his house, he had calmed down.

Looking at the dusty surface, Luo Yuan remained silent for a moment, took up a broom, and wanted to clean up. Then, an idea struck him! He put down the broom in attempts to focus on his Will, and waved his hand.

An intangible force emitted from his body and all dust, debris,

and trash on the floor as well as on the wall flew quickly into the air to form a gray mass, which gradually grew as large as a football.

While looking at this trash ball, Luo Yuan pointed towards the main door, and the ball quickly flew out in adherence.

Along with a light knock sound on the wood, Luo Yuan walked out of the door and went down the corridor for about thirty to forty meters. Then, when he peered into the wooden dustbin lying against the wall, he found that the ball was already inside.

Luo Yuan was shocked and could not believe what had just happened. It was like a dream to him.

What's more mysterious was what had happened was the result of merely two broad and general thoughts.

For instance, the first thought was to collect the trash while the second was to throw them into the dustbin.

He did not even have to think of the type of trash, be it the dust, debris or yellowed newspapers and did not even have the multitasking skill to gather all dust together. It was the subconscious which had perfected his thoughts and gathered all the trash he would think of, all by itself.

The second thought was also the same. He neither had to walk out of the door, nor think of the location of the dustbin, but the subconscious had helped him complete the rest. Though he could

do similar things previously, none was as easy as this time where his wishes turned into a command.

...

A glaring light ball appeared and lit up the dark room. Then, it became a burning flame out of thin air and resonated into a heat wave. With that, the flame gradually lengthened and formed a flaming long sword.

The next moment, the flame had quickly disappeared. The air suddenly became freezing cold, and the room had begun to be blanketed with frost. Just like a kid with a new toy, Luo Yuan enjoyed new experiences.

His excitement was more intense now than it was when he was flying.

With such a degree of Will, it could not only further sharpen the saber or shield his body, but also became a brand-new power, different from what the physical body could do.

He clenched his fist and intangible Will was suddenly being focused on it. It then appeared to be palpable and glistening in the sun, like flowing water.

# Chapter 302: Second Migration

---

It was about midnight when Luo Yuan's biological clock automatically woke him up.

He opened his eyes and stared at the ceiling for a while before he jumped out of the bed. The room was indeed spick and span after he cleaned it, but it appeared to be now barren and chillier than before!

He stretched out his hand to beckon the Zhanmadao beside him, and it flew quickly into the palm of his hands. After his Will leveled up, the speed of the flying Zhanmadao was quicker, but its attack range was still limited.

He would still need more time if he wanted to be able to fly his sabre around!

Luo Yuan had a go at a few slashes before he put the Zhanmadao back in its sheath. Then, he simply picked a jacket to wear and left the house.

The body of Mo Li was obviously found as the number of cops on the street increased. However, Luo Yuan deliberately escaped or damaged the cameras when necessary, to deter himself from being captured. Furthermore, it was very late at night, and nobody was on the street, hence, he was not worried about being found.

As Luo Yuan walked by, a few cops had taken a few more glances at him, before immediately shifting their focus.

He went around to the second floor and when he entered the military camp. Huo Dong was already waiting.

"Boss Luo!"

Luo Yuan patted Huo Dong's shoulder and sighed, "It must be difficult for you during this period of time, could you lead me there?"

Before he visited Master Liu yesterday night, he had met with Huo Dong alone. When he heard about the recent condition of Huang Jiahui, he subconsciously recalled the doodle of Shishi and found an insight to the meaning.

The sun covered by the clouds was not pointing to a location, but was insinuating [Wang Xiaguang](#) instead.

Xiaguang or 霞光 in Mandarin means "rays of morning or evening sunshine"

Had Huo Dong not mention, Luo Yuan would never think of it, not because of his intelligence quotient but because of a dissimilar direction of thoughts.

...

"Have some water," Huang Jiahui handed a glass to Wu Xiaoxiao, who was hiding at a corner.



Wu Xiaoxiao shrunk her body subconsciously as if she was terrified. Since Sun Youde passed away, she had been keeping silent all the time.

Maybe other people had yet to discover but how could she know nothing as his wife? She had always been a light sleeper as she would easily wake up with any noise. In fact, when Sun Youde went out, she had already woke up.

She saw with her very own eyes that Wang Shishi went after him but when she returned, there was only Wang Shishi left; Sun Youde was gone.

Sun Youde was not a perfect husband. He was short, average looking, and his character was extreme with many shortcomings. If it was not for troubled times, she would never had chosen Sun Youde. However, since she got married to him, he pandered to her every whim. Unlike plants, human being had emotions, even a person with a heart of stone would be touched upon receiving such a treatment.

After that, she barely spoke and distanced herself from the rest. She even lowered her head all the time, in efforts to hide her insecurity and hatred.

Then, there was a commotion in the group. Huang Jiahui, Wang Shishi and the rest suddenly stood up with excitement.

As Wu Xiaoxiao raised her head to take a look, her breath suddenly

became quick and she had a rather complicated expression plastered across her face.

"Luo Yuan!"

She had a complexed feeling. She knew that she could not blame Luo Yuan for what was happening, but if she was not meeting him, she would not be in this situation. The life of Sun Youde would not be in mystery as well.

He was the main cause to all these!

Wu Xiaoxiao was rooted to the ground and her eyes turned red. She replied with constraint, and flashed a bitter smile when Luo Yuan looked at her. Luo Yuan shifted his focus and hugged Huang Jiahui in front of him. As he felt her shivering body, he patted her back, "You must have been through a lot recently."

"It's great that you've come back!" Huang Jiahui tried her best to control her emotions and said, while trembling.

When Luo Yuan had let go of Huang Jiahui, Wang Shishi did not care what others might think and ran over quickly to hug him. Luo Yuan sighed and hugged her briefly. When he was about to push her away, he felt that his shoulder was damp, and then he comforted her with a gentle tone, "It's over now."

"I knew you'd be fine, I knew it!" Wang Shishi was crying out loud.

This time, she was not only worried about Luo Yuan's safety, but she was also enduring enormous pressure, because she was the strongest evolved person in the group after Luo Yuan. Therefore, she matured at a faster pace, but was exhausted from all that!

The volcano-like, blazing hot affection of the young girl made Luo Yuan, an old man, feel embarrassed, "Alright, alright, the others are looking!" Wang Shishi released him from her embrace; her face was flushed pink.

As Zhao Yali saw Luo Yuan was looking at her, she hurriedly wiped her tears away and took a step back. As she was bashful, she was not used to hugging in public. Luo Yuan also did not force her, as he knew her well.

Finally, Luo Yuan looked at Wang Xiaguang, and kept silent for a moment, before he said, "You may come back too, it's not safe to live alone."

Wang Xiaguang expressed mixed feelings, glanced at Luo Yuan, and smiled with constraint, "No, I'm not used to such a big family. I would feel that I'm an outcast here."

"Nobody regards you as an outcast; we're all good sisters," said Huang Jiahui sincerely, as she approached Wang Xiaguang, and held onto her hands.

"I know!" Wang Xiaguang took a deep breath, "In fact, I'd miss all of you too. But I'm so used to staying alone, so don't try to

persuade me anymore."

Luo Yuan looked rather glum. Having feelings was the most complicated problem of all. He definitely knew the affection Wang Xiaguang had towards him, but feelings cannot be forced. Besides, she wanted sincere feelings only between the two of them, which he was unable to commit to.

Wang Xiaguang looked very feminine, but her heart was much stronger than everyone else's. Luo Yuan sighed and said bitterly, "If so, I'll not force you. You can look for us anytime if anything arises. No matter what, we're friends... the best of friends, even before the apocalypse."

Wang Xiaguang nodded and suddenly turned her back. Even so, Luo Yuan could clearly see that a drop of tear trickled down her cheek. He was consumed with mixed feelings and forced himself to shift his focus onto somebody else. When he saw Wu Xiaoxiao, he realized that somebody was missing, and asked, "Where's Sun Youde?"

The atmosphere became rather quiet as nobody would speak a single word. At the end of the day, it was Huang Jiahui who replied obliquely, "He has gone missing!"

When Luo Yuan noticed Wang Shishi's eyes blinking and Wu Xiaoxiao's body slightly shivering, he wisely did not ask any further but comforted Wu Xiaoxiao, "Don't worry, I'm rather close to Mayor Wu... We will find him."

Wu Xiaoxiao briefly shook her head, lowered her gaze, and said nothing.

Luo Yuan finally looked at Chen Jiayi and Mu Wenwen, "Alright, let's go home."

Wang Xiaguang was seeing Luo Yuan and his group off, and suddenly felt the loneliness arising from her inner self. She slowly sat on the floor and felt lost!

...

In just a blink of an eye, three days had passed by!

Earthquakes kept occurring within these few days – no one knew why.

Fortunately, the magnitudes were all low, and they did not last long. Therefore, it neither caused injury nor destruction of buildings. Such a high frequency of earthquakes were however, causing panic among the people and turned the atmosphere into a depressing one.

The Reconstruction Area was located at Taklamakan, where it was also part of Kunlun Mountain's earthquake belt. Since the apocalypse, the rising sea level and changing mantle pressure, especially the intense activities at the earth's core, and large-scale nuclear blast induced by the cosmic storm, had stimulated the active tectonic plates activities, frequent earthquakes and volcano

eruptions.

According to the frequency of the earthquake, these low magnitude earthquakes made the people worried, as they could be a precursor to large-scale earthquakes.

As the refuge had been built underground, the effects of the occurrence of high magnitude earthquakes would be far too dreadful.

With Luo Yuan frequently going to the city council office these few days, he knew more about the matter at hand. Therefore, he became gloomier and stressed day by day.

The refuge had finally reconnected with the Reconstruction Area – the information and news they got were not optimistic. The location they were at, was located right in the region of the active tectonic plates.

A series of data showed that the tectonic plates of this area had collided into one another, hence, a new mountain range will be formed from the desert in a short time, which could also take thousands or even millions of years. However, the precursors of the formation of the mountain range could in fact, easily destroy the Reconstruction Area and also, Desert City. After all, the strongest man-made structures paled in comparison to the power of nature.

Besides, the range actually included almost half the Reconstruction Area.

It never rains, but it pours!

When the Reconstruction Area was still struggling to defend itself from the insect plague, another issue occurred simultaneously.

Besides, the city council had also received news, that the national large-scale second migration had begun. Had they not been connected in time, they might still be in the dark.

The migration in Desert City was also imminent. Even a person with ambition and desires would have to confess that all human beings must come and work together in order to survive while facing such stressful situations.

On the fourth day, the underground train station was finally reconnected again, after days of non-stop urgent repairs.

On the fifth day, the warehouses at the second floor of the refuge were opened. Numerous cars were seen transporting those goods and materials to the train station and being loaded into the train.

When it was about 9:30 p.m., Luo Yuan accompanied Mayor Song to look at the departure of two trains, which were transporting only important industrial equipment and instruments. Nobody was allowed to board the train.

What came as extremely bad news, was that Luo Yuan found out



that Desert City was short of trains. Therefore, they had to wait for the return of the earlier train in order to migrate.

To make matters worse, the destination of the trains was not anywhere nearby, as those cities had either fallen or moved, but Hope City needed a full day for a return trip – only if it goes smoothly.

Two full days were required to transport all the goods and materials. In other words, the people could start migrating only two days later. With eighteen carriages per train, even after dismantling the chairs and tables as well as the unnecessary facilities, each carriage could only fit about five hundred to six hundred people. All the all, the train could only take in ten thousand people, which amounted up to twenty thousand people for two trains. As the Desert City had a million people, the two trains were needed to make fifty return trips, in order to accommodate them all.

In short, it would take seven days for the people of Desert City to be finally evacuated.

Yet, they could only pray for safety during these seven days.

Luo Yuan got back to the lodgings worriedly. He looked glum because he hated the feeling of not being able to be in control of his life. However, he needed to adapt to being stuck not knowing what to do during the apocalypse and to struggle to survive, just like the rest.

Lying in bed, Luo Yuan felt the ground tremble slightly. He was tossing and turning around due to insomnia, furrowed his eyebrows and stared at the ceiling, wide awake.

...

The next morning, when he was having breakfast, there was a knock at the door.

Luo Yuan opened the door to find Zhang Wu and Yang Zhiqing, and an unfamiliar evolved person. Then, he realized that he had forgotten about Zhang Wu and did not contact him at all.

"Come in, you are?" Luo Yuan said.

"Hi Mr. Luo, I'm Yan Mengjun," the unfamiliar evolved person said uncomfortably.

Luo Yuan smiled, "Make yourself at home, come on in!"

"Mr. Luo, as we're moving soon, do you have any plans?" Yan Mengjun asked, the very moment he sat down.

"Plans?" Luo Yuan doubted, "Aren't you guys coming along?"

"The high frequency of quakes is really worrying. Besides, the news I got was that it would take a long time to move and we'll have to worry about unforeseen issues such as the possibility of our

railways being destroyed by the quakes. As I heard that Mr. Luo has abundant experience in traveling, I'd like to convince you to move, and we'll move along with you."

Then, Yan Mengjun anxiously looked at Luo Yuan. He was one of the people who escaped captivity but did not follow Luo Yuan, because he was worried that his aims could possibly be too far-fetched. It was only when he talked about it with Zhang Wu, that he got to know that many things had happened and the whole rebellion was almost suppressed by Luo Yuan alone.

As the condition was getting worse, they kept exchanging messages when they met. They soon realized that the condition had jeopardized their life. After a thorough discussion, they had decided to take the risk, instead of waiting like a puppet of fate in the refuge.

However, they could not secure their safety by themselves, as Luo Yuan decision was the key to drive any further action.

Their words woke Luo Yuan up!

Luo Yuan was in a daze for a moment and felt renewed. Oh yes, why am I not leaving?

A commoner could not migrate by themselves but they had the potential to. Since the beginning of the apocalypse, they had been traveling almost throughout the whole of China. Could it be the cozy life that had conditioned him?

Luo Yuan pondered for a while and said, "You've reminded me well. As the situation does not look optimistic, we shall depart as soon as possible. The best would be by this evening!"

The few people who were there were glad to hear that. "Then, we'll go back and prepare!"

After Zhang Wu and the others left, the atmosphere in the lodgings became somewhat gloomy.

After all, not everyone had such courage. A normal person would certainly have the innate fear towards the wild, especially with abundant mutated beasts. Many would be afraid and tend to avoid both snakes and scorpions!

"I'll not be going!" Wu Xiaoxiao was cowering in fear by herself in a corner and said softly. It was not surprising to see her resisting so hard. In fact, Wu Xiaoxiao was disregarded in all aspects, ever since he came back. She would keep a distance from the rest, and her eyes would wander when she took a furtive glance at Wang Shishi.

Luo Yuan already knew the reason, but Sun Youde was not only not as close to him, he wanted to divulge information too. Therefore, he would feel nothing even if he had to die ten thousand times. For Wu Xiaoxiao, he was just trying to help, even for the very first time meeting her. Yet, with what happened recently, perhaps it would be better for her to leave.

Nonetheless, what surprised Luo Yuan was Mu Wenwen, a strong

evolved person who had declined too. Considering her characteristics of being abnormally quiet and socially awkward, besides seeming to have an intense feeling of insecurity when coming into contact with dangerous environments, Luo Yuan understood and let her be.

## Chapter 303: Passing By

---

No one had a good appetite in the morning as they were thinking about their own problems respectively. Luo Yuan went out to the military campsite after eating his breakfast.

Although Huo Dong hesitated, he rejected him in the end. He had become a soldier and was no longer a normal citizen. He had to be disciplined as it was not up to him to join or leave whenever he wants. The accusations of such actions were always severe even before the apocalypse.

"Alright, take good care then!" Luo Yuan said as he looked at Huo Dong.

"Same to you, Brother Luo." Huo Dong said.

He was getting more mature as a soldier as his tone was firm and his body posture was straight. He was no longer the cheeky businessman but was now a qualified soldier. Luo Yuan sighed in his heart and left the military campsite.

Countless trucks were lined up on the street, moving at a very slow speed. The crowd was watching with anxiety and worry as the rumors of Desert City's great migration spread faster than they could imagine. As long as they were smart enough, it was not difficult to see the truth from the events that they have witnessed.

The atmosphere the refuge was filled with seriousness, frustration, and anxiety.

However, the crowd did not cause any chaos as the citizens and soldiers had planted the spirit of discipline and unity in their heart.

Luo Yuan saw a couple that hugged and kissed each other to comfort one another.

An old man was smoking with a shaking hand.

A large sized guy was carrying a child in his arm with a pair of miserable eyes, seemingly helpless.

Their peaceful life has been ruined and they were forced to leave their home to start in a journey that was alien to them. The memory of a great migration is a one which nobody wants to recall as the pathway that led to that was paid for by millions of deaths and a lot of blood. No one knows who would be the next person that would be left behind.

Luo Yuan slowed down his footsteps as he saw the pitiful scene, he felt guilty for them.

However, he quickly recovered from sympathizing and became serious once more as he knew he could not save everyone. He could only try his level best to help those who were around him.

He held his saber tightly and then ran away from the street.



The atmosphere in level one of the shelter was depressing. The crowd was anxious and in panic as the noise buzzed in Luo Yuan's ears.

Luo Yuan had finally found Wang Xiaguang at a corner. She seemed to be arguing with a guy and it looked quite serious.

"I've told you that I've fallen in love with someone else. Please, do not disturb me again." Wang Xiaguang said coldly.

"Xiaguang, please, don't lie to me. I haven't seen a guy visit you since the day I met you." He looked polite with a pair of black frames that sat atop his nose. He smiled embarrassingly and said, "Can't you even give me a chance? Maybe, we can have a date for a period of time first?"

Wang Xiaguang sighed as she looked at his sincerity. She calmed down and said, "It wouldn't work even if nobody comes to visit me, you're just not my cup of tea. You deserve someone better."

"What kind of man do you like? I can change!" The guy quickly asked as he thought he still had a chance.

Wang Xiaguang shook her head and said, "You won't become the man I love no matter how much you change, and I'm not the kind of person you've imagined me to be."

"Who, who is that?" The guy asked as he felt sad when he saw a lovely facial expression forming on Wang Xiaguang's face.

"It's me!" A stranger's voice disturbed their conversation as someone grabbed the hand of Wang Xiaguang and said, "Let's go!"

Wang Xiaguang tried to struggle but to no avail. She gave up after a few tries and said angrily, "Why are you being so bossy! Where are you bringing me?"

"You'll know soon!" Luo Yuan said as he walked towards the exit. He knew he did not to tell her too much information as she would not listen.

"Hey! Hey! What are you doing!?" The guy with spectacle stomped his feet and said, "Put her down! I'm going to call the security guards!"

However, it was very noisy in the refuge and none of the security guards notice what was happening. Both of them got further away from him. He ran after them but when he arrived at the exit, they have already left.

"So can you tell me what's happening now?" Wang Xiaguang asked angrily as she was dragged by Luo Yuan.

"I'll tell you later!"

Wang Xiaguang felt helpless and decided to just follow him to the second level of the basement.

After about 10 minutes, Luo Yuan brought Wang Xianguang back to the hostel and said to Huang Jiahui and Wang Shishi, "Please help watch over her."

"I'm not a prisoner!" Wang Xianguang said as she pulled her arm away.

"You're finally here." Huang Jiahui laughed. "We hardly see you these days."

"You guys are acting weird! What's happening, Sister Huang?" Wang Xianguang asked with uncertainty.

She became very serious after listening to Huang Jiahui's explanation. It was really dangerous to stay there as an earthquake is enough to destroy the whole city.

In comparison with the forest, an event that was similarly dangerous would still afford them the chance to escape.

Besides that, she was not a weak lady. As a matter of fact, she had never missed a single day of training since she arrived in Desert City and she had mastered her weapon skills by now. The probability of her surviving was higher as compared to when she was staying in the refuge, migrating with the crowd. Here, they had Luo Yuan and Wang Shishi to protect them.

Being arrogant, she insisted on coming but since she was caught and forced by Luo Yuan to be here, she just agreed to stay here.

...

Luo Yuan try to sense for a trace of his Will and found a hostel which was converted from an unused warehouse. It looked like where Wen Yujie used to stay.

He knocked on the door and heard someone walk towards the door.

Luo Yuan was anxious as he had no confidence to persuade Wen Yujie to leave with them as she was different compared to the rest of them. She was an idealist, full of excitement and discipline. She would not escape with them. However, Luo Yuan decided to come because she once saved his life.

The door opened but it was another young girl. She looked at Luo Yuan for a second and then said shyly, "Can I know who you are looking for?"

"I'm looking for Wen Yujie, is she in?" Luo Yuan asked.

"She's not here, she has gone out for work. Do you want to come in?" The young girl invited Luo Yuan to enter after taking a peek at him once more. Luo Yuan had this charm on young girls, they just could not help it.

He peered into the house through the main entrance. Apparently, it was a shared dorm for girls as there were many female

undergarments inside the dormitory. Luo Yuan quickly moved his eyes away and rejected her, saying, "I'm good, thanks. Do you know where is she working?"

"Oh! Didn't you know? She is working in the security department for the state government.

"Alright, thank you so much!" Luo Yuan smiled and said.

He did not expect Wen Yujie to be working in the municipal hall and yet he has never bumped into her. He returned to the municipal hall and realized that the security department has been moved to the office area that he had been to previously. It was in the hall where he had a battle with Su Yu.

Recently, the electromagnetic towers have been removed and had been replaced by gym equipment. There were evolved men all around training. However, everyone stopped as they saw Luo Yuan enter the hall.

Most of them were those who had escaped from the prison, which is why they were impressed by Luo Yuan. Besides that, they also heard rumors about him. His name and story were the topic of discussion after their they had their lunch or during their tea time. Event the most arrogant of the evolved men naturally became humble when they spoke of Luo Yuan.

Although they looked excited, none of them dared to step forward. Those who were very powerful compared to normal citizens became as obedient as cats in front of Luo Yuan.

"Looks like Mr. Luo."

"Is he going to be our manager?"

"According to Captain Xiao, Mr. Luo's power has been upgraded to Level Six!"

"Tsk! I'm only at Level Two, I have no idea when I'll be as strong as him."

Luo Yuan grinned as he listened to the genuine compliments. However, he hid his joy.

"Look! His strap is so cool!"

"It's glowing man! What material is it made of?"

Luo Yuan twitched his mouth and ignored the noise. He quickly scanned around the hall and could not find Wen Yujie. He finally got the news that she had boarded the train with a group of soldiers to protect the railway, she would be back by nightfall if everything went well.

Luo Yuan sighed in his heart. Perhaps, it was fate. He hesitated before leaving the security department.

## Chapter 304: Surprise

---

Shortly after, Luo Yuan went to the office of the Mayor as he had been well taken care by Mayor Song during his stay in Desert City. At the very least, he should say his goodbye before he leaves. Moreover, the security in the refuge was strict, it would be difficult for him to leave smoothly. He would need an official approval instead of being violent.

Mayor Song had a hard time as they needed to migrate after the earthquake. There were more than 100 tons of important resources and more than 100,000 citizens to be handled. He looked exhausted, many new white hairs visible within a few days.

He did not even have time to think about his dead 'niece' anymore.

Despite his hectic schedule, he put aside his work to see Luo Yuan once the new temporary secretary informed him about his visit.

As the most powerful evolved man of Desert City who had defeated the rebels, Luo Yuan deserved this privilege.

However, the news he got was not his favorite one. He thought he heard wrong when Luo Yuan told him of the intentions for his visit. It was a fearsome wild place that may be full of mutated insects.

However, he knew he had no leverage to ask Luo Yuan to stay once he recalled that Luo Yuan has gone through a lot to be here.

He was such a strong and powerful evolved man who could not be judged on common sense alone.

However, it was best for him to keep Luo Yuan on his side. Apparently, Luo Yuan insisted on his departure. Mayor Song issued an official approval to him in the end.

...

It was 12 p.m. when Luo Yuan left the city hall. The traffic on the street was still as bad as before.

The ground shook once in a while, but it was just minor tremors. Besides that, there were many heavy trucks moving on the street, hence, none of them could feel the shake.

As a evolved man with the element of the earth as his main attribute, he could clearly differentiate an earthquake from regular tremors as his sensitivity was 10 to a 100 times better than regular humans. In fact, he was able to sense the tremors since the night before.

The tremors were a sign before a huge earthquake happens. The refuge was definitely not strong enough with the possibility of it collapsing anytime when the earthquake hits. Luo Yuan quickly rushed back to the hostel.

He realized everyone was there, none of them have left but there was an extra person.



"This is my lover, Gu Meiyan." Yan Mengjun said nervously as he saw Luo Yuan looking at her. He then pulled the lady over and whispered, "Hurry up, greet him as Mr. Luo."

"It's alright, just call me Luo Yuan." Luo Yuan smiled and said.

"H...Hi, Mr. Luo." Gu Meiyan looked at Luo Yuan and then said shyly.

Luo Yuan nodded and looked at everyone, "Since everyone is already here, let's go!"

Everyone took their baggage and ready to leave. Suddenly, someone knocked the door.

Luo Yuan opened the door and saw a group of soldiers standing by the doorstep parcels on their back. Luckily he could recognize the new secretary of Mayor Song, else he would have thought that they were not able to leave.

The secretary smiled and said, "Mayor Song knew you were leaving and he was kind of worried. Here are some food and resources for you, we thank you on behalf the city. Please, accept it."

"Please, help me to thank Mayor Song, we really appreciate it." Luo Yuan shook her hand and said sincerely.

"Sure! I'll help you deliver the message. I need to go, goodbye!"

The new secretary came and left hurriedly and left eight backpacks on the doorstep which were about a meter tall when it stacked atop one another. Based on the way the soldiers put it down, the backpacks were quite heavy.

"Let me see what's inside." Wang Shishi was excited and could not wait to check it out.

Everyone opened the backpack one-by-one.

"Here are the food!"

"Mine are tents!"

"This one also has tents!"

"I got water here!"

"Lighters, maps, torch lights, insect repellent, 20 boxes of bullets and three modern rifles."

...

Mayor Song was definitely a qualified politician; a sociable and understanding person. He lent them his hands at just the right

moment when Luo Yuan unable to reject his advances with a "No".

Compared to what Mayor Song had given them, what they packed really did not make it seem like they were going to travel.

For example, they only brought a few pieces of clothing, some water, and their weapons. Anyway, the food was something they could not get more of even if they were rich.

Of course, it would not be a big issue due to their power. No one would reject having a better life in the wild.

Everyone quickly took their backpacks and departed.

Wu Xiaoxiao was hiding in a corner and watched them pack their things. She was idling. Perhaps, she thought that she would not be meeting them again after today. She suddenly recovered and sounded like like she had put her hatred aside.

"Take care!" Luo Yuan said.

"You too, safe journey!" Wu Xiaoxiao raised her chin and looked at Luo Yuan. That was the first time she looked at Luo Yuan in the last few days.

Luo Yuan felt touched and smiled gently. He said goodbye to Mo Wenwen before he left the dormitory with his teammates.

Very soon, they arrived at the exit and soldiers let them go after taking a look at their approval letter from Mayor Song.

Luo Yuan did not feel anything when they left the refuge but the rest felt stunned. They have been staying in the refuge for almost a month, Desert City had become something alien to them as it was akin to an abandoned historical site.

The only thing they saw was a single piece of greenery, a few pillars and nothing else as there were a lot of weeds which had grown to half a meter tall.

Countless mutated beasts tried to escape the bushes as Luo Yuan began to release his power.

"Give me the map." Luo Yuan said.

Huang Jiahui found the map from the backpack and passed it to Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan looked at the map for quite a long time as he tried to recall navigation of the map and said, "The underground railway is the main transport hub for Desert City and security is strictest here. Of course, the security at the moment should be worse than ever but it is still much safer than other options that they had. It might be a longer route if they went along the underground railway but it's definitely much safer."

"Any objection?" Luo Yuan asked. He looked at them, especially

those who recently joined them.

"No." Yang Zhiqing said.

"Mr. Luo, it's your call." Yan Mengjun said.

"I'm following Mr. Luo." Zhang Wu said.

Luo Yuan nodded. The key thing of team management is to build authority from the beginning and implement a spirit of unity. It seemed to be a good start.

However, Luo Yuan was overthinking things as no one dared to go against him unless they had a death wish.

"Let's get out from here first and find a place to rest. I need to go somewhere." Luo Yuan said.

"Where else would you need to go?" Wang Xianguang asked curiously.

"We need the two vehicles." Luo Yuan smiled and said.

Huang Jiahui and a few of them were very excited. Wang Shishi even asked, "Brother Luo, are you bringing the giant lizard and King Kong back? I miss them so much!"

Zhang Wu and a few of the new members had no idea what was happening as they looked at each other. They remained silent but were making wild guesses in their mind.

A warbeast was something common for evolved men. The security section of Desert City had its own team of warbeasts but they have been sent to the frontline to fight the mutated insects, no one knows whether they were still alive.

The streets of Desert City were very busy as it was full of trucks. The group had looked for a spacious area far away from Desert City to prevent any chaos when the two warbeasts came.

"You all wait here, I'll be back soon." Luo Yuan said to them but he sounded weird.

He suddenly bent his knees and took a big leap. Everyone was shocked and as he flew up like a rocket into the sky.

He was getting further away from the ground and became a tiny dot before he disappeared eventually.

"Brother Luo... Since when was he able to fly?" Wang Shishi asked. She turned around and looked at everyone's expression. They were even more shocked than her as all of them were stunned and was not able to move at all. It was unbelievable.

Even when they recovered, they were still in shock.

# Chapter 305: War Of The Giant Beasts

---

The wind was so strong, it blew Luo Yuan's hair away. As compared to the previous journey they made through this passage, this time was much more exciting as he flew through the sky.

It was a feeling of freedom, without restriction and he could fly to any location in the world.

Above him were thick, rolling clouds that obscured the sun. It had been cloudy for several days as there did not seem to be any sunny days when Luo Yuan left home.

Looking at the thick cloud formations, he had an urge to break through the clouds to see what was beyond them.

Compared to Wang Shishi who utilized her telekinesis to hold her body up so she could fly, Luo Yuan's flight used Will, which was superior. There were no height restrictions and as long as his Will could support him, he could continue his flight. If it was not for his need to breathe and the pressure on his body, he would be able to even fly into space.

The scenery on earth was shrinking to a very small size. Minutes later, he broke through the clouds and the sun shone brightly through the mist, the effect akin to a blurred radiance. He looked up to feel the blue sky and warm sunshine on his skin but suddenly, he broke out in cold sweat on his forehead. He saw numerous small and large birds hovering above the clouds, tweeting from time to time.

On occasion there would be a few giant birds with wingspans as much as 10 meters with bodies that grew up to 100 meters in length that passed above him. It was thrilling and shocking at the same time.

Before he could fly, he looked up into the sky but was not able to see beyond the clouds. He never knew there were so many giant birds circling in the skies above.

He quickly stopped flying and sneaked into the thick clouds, hiding himself.

He was still able to fight if he was on the ground. However, he was now in the sky which was the home of his opponents. The only thing he could do was pray they would not find him. With the speed of his flight at only 20 or 30 meters per second, even if he were to escape it would be something like the speed of a snail when confronting natural flying creatures.

Luo Yuan calmed down and found the behavior of the birds strange. They circled the same spot, but they were not hunting, the tweet sounded more like a lament than anything else.

This scene was very familiar to Luo Yuan.

This was a precursor to a major disaster, though compared to the time before the apocalypse, these mutated creatures were much more powerful. No matter how they changed, their instincts that feared natural disasters would always remain. It was a valuable



asset left behind from hundreds of years of biological evolution.

Looking at the circling birds and their lament, he was heavy hearted. He did not mean to delay any longer and quickly took out his satellite phone to locate the two giant beasts via the implanted chips.

After the chaos on the ground, he had gotten back all his belongings which included the satellite phones.

On the display, the two green dots also were still close to each other but no longer at their original position, They had been separated by hundreds of kilometers. In fact, Luo Yuan had been tracking the movements of the two giant beasts.

Before the advent of the influx of insects, they seemed to have felt the threat and began to move further to the east. After they ran hundreds of kilometers, it was only until the last wave of insects that they began to take the initiative to return. However, they stopped at a spot hundreds of kilometers away from the original spot and no longer move forward.

He did not know before this but now he had some idea after seeing the reaction of the birds above Desert City.

He looked serious. After he identified the direction, an invisible force was generated from his body; the next moment he was like an arrow, diving downwards at an oblique angle.

Making full use of gravity, his speed rapidly increased. Within half a minute, his speed reached 100 meters per second, but he was still accelerated at three meters per second.

The air became denser, it felt like he was flying into the water. Due to the high air resistance, Luo Yuan hardly breathed. Without his "floating sportswear" the air resistance had highly affected his speed.

As time passed, the resistance increased and it felt like there was a thick barrier right in front of him. By this time, he was close to two-thirds of the speed of sound but he was at his limit. Under heavy air resistance, the effect gravity decreased and subsequently caused fatigue.

However, his speed was still blindingly fast. He was flying downwards at an oblique angle of 10 degrees had already reached a speed of 250 meters per second. Within two minutes Luo Yuan had reached the original location of the giant beasts.

By this time, he was already close to the ground was not able to leverage support from gravity which only allowed him to fly slowly using Will. After he flew for another half an hour, a huge lake appeared in front of him.

This radius of this giant lake was about several kilometers wide. It seemed it was recently formed as there was no indication of it on the map.

Before the apocalypse, along with the rising sea levels and the

drastic changes in the global climate, the originally dry desert had been full of water. Sometimes after a heavy rain, it would form a river or even a lake.

From the view above, it was a beautiful lake, the water was thoroughly clean. It was surrounded by lush growing trees which formed a forest in a short period of time.

The signal displayed that the two giant beasts were somewhere nearby.

Luo Yuan carefully observed from the top, the forest was still too young and it was not possible to hide both the giant lizard and King Kong. There were traces of their movement everywhere in the forest. In just a moment Luo Yuan found them near the lake. He quickly flew towards their direction.

He found the two giant beasts as they played with one another, or more precisely King Kong was harassing the giant lizard. It was actively jumping around the lizard, trying to pull its tail.

Luo Yuan felt a bit strange. The last time he saw King Kong, it was still timid with a pitiful look. He did not expect it to become so extroverted now.

As he approached them, he saw the giant lizard which had already upgraded itself to a light green level with its appearance totally changed. He was shocked to see that King Kong had changed tremendously too. He could barely recognize it. The original black hair had now turned into fluffy golden hair. The golden hair

looked like a burning flame when it jumped around. Its body had almost doubled in size and was almost taller than giant lizard, looking from afar.

Luo Yuan opened the properties panel of King Kong:

"War Beast: Mountain Moving Apes;"

"Level: Light Green"

"Properties"

"Strength: 23"

"Agility: 14"

"Physique: 21"

"Intelligence: 9"

"Perception: 11"

"Will: 13"

"Experience: 0 / 2400"

"Skill: Hammer 18, Tearing 18, Collision 13, Throwing 8, Biting 15, Climbing 19, Field Survival 18;

"Abilities: Inborn Strength, Tough Skin."

"Status: Elite"

"Loyalty: 75 (With a value less than 50, there will be risk of betrayal or escape)"

"Unassigned attribute points: 0"

"Unassigned skill points: 0"

Luo Yuan looked at properties and surprised that the changes were so huge. The name had changed from "Big Ape" to "Mountain Moving Ape" and most shocking was the huge changes on the properties.

After this evolution, its Strength had increased by two points. That aside, its Agility, Physique and Intelligence had increased by one point respectively. All four properties improved, with Strength being increased by two points.

After the Agility increase, each attribute value of the giant lizard was now lower than King Kong.

He also looked at the words "Elite" at the status bar. The word seemed to have some other meaning.

Luo Yuan recalled that when he tamed the giant lizard, the status panel did not have the word "elite". It started as "weak" before it became "healthy", "strong" and it was only after it was upgraded by the system several times that it got such a qualification.

One was acquired through system upgrade while the other one was genuine through natural means. It was apparent that the latter's potential was much greater than the former.

They seemed to sense the presence of Luo Yuan. King Kong suddenly took a deep breath. It was inattentive and was beaten by the tail of giant lizard; it made a loud noise that sounded like an explosion, causing an airwave.

King Kong was screamed in joy, the huge body that was nearly 12-13m rolled endlessly after being hit by the tail and several big trees along the way were broken by the body of the King Kong.

Once it stopped rolling, it immediately stood up and was active once again. Apparently, the smack by the giant tail did not have any impact on it. Though, it seemed rather annoyed after being it was hit as its eyes turned red and growled angrily. It beat its chest making a thunderous bang before it rushed towards the giant lizards as if it had forgotten the familiar scent that it once knew.

When the heavy weight of body jumped forward, the momentum

and movement were too big until it shook everything on the ground.

However, the giant lizard slowly wagged its tail, awaiting the arrival of King Kong. Only until the distance was about 20-30 meters did it turn its head towards King Kong.

Just as they were about to collide into one another, King Kong slowed down as it was hit by the horn of giant lizard before. It circled around the giant lizard and the battle was caught in a deadlock once again.

The battle between the two giant beasts was extremely thrilling, even if it was just running and jumping around, it had an amazing amount of movement. To top it off, this is was just slapstick match between two friends and was not a real battle. No sharp claws or abilities were used, else the scene would be even more shocking and bloody.

Luo Yuan watched for a while and before he landed from above. Both of the giant beasts were stunned for a while when they saw Luo Yuan who landed from the sky and quickly stopped their activities.

King Kong lowered its head and looked downward, its eyes glanced at Luo Yuan from time to time. After the increase of one point in its Intelligence, its hideous face was now had a flattering look.

Perhaps the lesson was too hard when it was tamed. The fear of

Luo Yuan seemed to deeply affect it. Even after it had evolved into a light green mutated beast, the fear has yet to subside.

As compared to King Kong, the giant lizard was much closer to Luo Yuan so it was joyful to see him. It wanted to come nearer to Luo Yuan but he was not comfortable to see the ten-meter-high hill-like giant lizard walk towards him. He quickly pressed his hand in the air.

When the giant lizard saw the familiar gesture, it hesitated before it kneeled down on the ground.

Luo Yuan floated his body and landed on the back of the giant lizard. With a loud command, the giant lizard slowly stood up and marched on.



# Chapter 306: Battlefield

---

On the way back, there were a large number of flies and mosquitoes. It was somewhat sparse initially but got denser as they moved on. After 10 kilometers they were almost unable to move as there were countless flies and mosquitoes that filled up the entire space.

The giant lizard looked a bit irritated and hesitated to move. However, under Luo Yuan's command, it could not reject and had to move on.

The air was filled with the stench of rotting corpses. The ground had become somewhat bumpy and there were a lot of potholes everywhere, making them feel like they were on the surface of the moon. On the ground, it was full of mutated insect and human carcasses. It was interesting to see the dead bodies everywhere. The flesh of the carcasses had been swallowed by carrion creatures and only the skeleton was left.

Luo Yuan slowed the giant lizard down and observed the surroundings. When he was in the sky he never noticed that the battlefield was not far away from Desert City. Undoubtedly it was only one of the more insignificant battlefields but its radius was extremely large. Luo Yuan circled around the battlefield and found that the radius was about hundreds kilometers.

There were a lot of broken tanks that were bent out of shape and anti-aircraft guns thrown everywhere like scrap metal on the battlefield. There were also live artillery shells that rolled at the side with bugs on top of it. Luo Yuan could feel the tragedy of the

war even if he observed from afar.

When he passed by a fort he saw a collapsed corner. The fort could actually withstand heavy artillery but its corner had collapsed. He flew into the fort to take a look and saw countless corpses lying on the ground in a mess.

On the concrete floor there were few deep claw marks that divided the entire floor into several parts. However, the culprit behind these scratches was not seen in the fort.

...

When the sky was getting dark, Yan Mengjun frequently looked at the time, there was anxiety on his face. It was about five o'clock and the sky would be getting dark in an hour.

The wilderness was dangerous at night. This was once a desert and the temperature was vastly different between day and night with, most mutated creatures becoming active during the night. Today due to the drastic changes in climate the desert had become a prairie but the habits of these creatures were unchanged.

In the past, with his level three ability, it was not a threat to him at all as it was close to Desert City and was also within the human's line of defense. Besides that, the mutated beasts within the territory had been tamed until they were so docile that even a normal human could fight with the mutated beast.

However, this place had collapsed and the security zone was no longer safe. After the last wave of insects, there were unknown numbers of residual strong mutated beasts that hid in this prairie waiting for an opportunity to hunt.

At first, they had Luo Yuan to rely on but now, he had been away longer than expected and had not returned yet. As the sky darkened, his worries intensified.

His wife looked pale and seized his arm firmly. He could barely smile and comforted his wife, "Don't worry, I am here for you."

"Sister-in-law, please rest assured. Our people can guarantee your safety." Zhang Wu who was next to him also comforted.

"Look at them, they don't seem to be worried at all." said Yang Zhiqing curiously. He was considered relatively calm amongst the others.

The other side had all the women there so the team seemed to be divided in two. However, compared to the people on this side who were all tensed up, the group of women on the other side seemed calm; they were chatting about daily matters.

"Let me go and ask!" Said Yan Mengjun after he took a glance at the women. He was formerly a real estate broker so he was more eloquent than anyone else in the group. He brought Gu Meiyang with him and went over to ask, "Excuse me, do you all know what time Mr. Luo will come back?"

"He should be back soon." Huang Jiahui looked at the time and said with a smile. She had gone through so many things and already became accustomed to this concern, "Sorry but please wait for a while!"

"No, don't be sorry! I'm just a little worried. It was getting late and it may be dangerous later on." Yan Mengjun quickly explained, these people were the closest people to Mr. Luo. If they misunderstood his intentions and thought that he was impatient, it could spell trouble in the future.

"Thank you for reminding us, we'll pay attention." Huang Jiahui said politely but she was not concerned at all. Not to mention that they had Wang Shishi who was also very powerful. So much so that even on her own, she could face the usual mutated beasts without fear. They had gone through so much before, which is why they did not seem to worry at all even when they were in this desert that was on the outskirts of Desert City.

Yan Mengjun was helpless, he turned to his wife and returned to his side of the team, shaking his head when he saw Zhang Wu.

As time passed the sky became dark. The lush grasslands gradually began to see movement and a large gust of air gushed from time to time in the grasslands. A few hideous mutated beasts started to appear from the grass.

This area had been occupied in less than a month and the mutated beasts had improved both quality and quantity. They were able to see a few level two and three mutated beasts from far.

However, these creatures seemed to sense some anxiety in the air and started to become restless. They acted strangely and looked around carefully. Some of them wandered around and looked lost while others drilled themselves back into the ground.

"What was it?" Yan Mengjun looked curious, "What happened?"

"Could it be an earthquake?" Zhang Wu surmised.

"It feels like it is an earthquake." Yang Zhiqing felt careful and it was indeed a tremor.

"Look, what is it?" Gu Meiyang suddenly discovered something and quickly pulled Yan Mengjun over. She was shocked. They could barely see two small dots from afar but they became clearer as time passed and enlarged rapidly. At the same time, a tremor began to shake the ground slightly.

When the sight became clearer, the crowd was frightened and became pale. They could see two gigantic beasts approaching rapidly along with the strong quake. At first glance, the two beasts were still two to three kilometers away but after 10 seconds they were right in front of them. Humans looked tiny in front of these giant beasts. They ran until they were unable to stand properly. Yan Mengjun and the gang looked completely pale and kept sweating from their foreheads. Although they desperately wanted to escape, their body was weakened and they were unable to make a move. A few of the mutated beasts that were not able to escape in time froze on the spot and were trampled by the two giant beasts

until they died.

As compared to Yang Mengjun and the gang who met the giant lizard and King Kong for the first time, Huang Jiahui and the ladies were undoubtedly calmer and less worried but they were shocked too. These two beasts not only had changed in their appearance, the size had doubled compared to the last time they met. If they had never seen Luo Yuan sitting at the back, they would have thought that they were faced with a big threat.

As the distance got closer to a few hundred meters away, the two giant beasts slowed down their speed. It was difficult to notice the existence of Luo Yuan compared with these two giants. Only at this moment did Yan Mengjun and the gang realize that Luo Yuan was sitting at the back of the giant lizard and they breathed a sigh of relief.

...

"Am I hearing you correctly? You want us to sit on these giant beasts?" Yan Mengjun opened his mouth and looked at him in disbelief. As a regular person, this was crazy. These were ten meters high, scary, gigantic beasts that could by virtue of touching them, hurt them gravely.

"Is there any problem for you? It is impossible for us to walk for more than a thousand kilometers," said Luo Yuan while looked at these people with an ambiguous look.

"No... No." Yan Mengjun looked pale and shook his head.

"Very... very reasonable, I have no other opinion." Said Zhang Wu with a stiff look.

"As long as it does not bite." Yang Zhiqing took a glance at the two giant beasts and whispered.

The previous rattan blanket had already gone. Since the sky had not completely turned dark the crowd tried to find a vine that could be used to make a new rattan blanket for them.

There were ups and downs when the giant lizard ran, if they did not have a rattan blanket to hold them in, they would fall down from its back easily, especially the giant lizard who was now nearly ten-meter height. If they fell down from the top it would end up in disaster.

The wilderness today had nothing but these mutated vines, which had become extremely strong and flexible after they mutated. Even Luo Yuan could not break the vines which had been intertwined into several layers with all his strength.

Of course, in order to make the rattan blanket, they needed to find thicker vines. Each of the vines had to be as thick as human arms. Not only could they skip twirling them together for a thicker cord, thicker vines would also result in a better grip so they would not fall down easily.

There were no pampered people after the apocalypse, even Gu Meiyao who was always unwell after the appearance of the

mutated beasts also came to help up and she was very efficient.

At this time Yang Zhiqing, who was not very outspoken earlier had caught Luo Yuan's admiration.

Perhaps he had experience making a fishing net before as was very good at weaving the rattan blanket. Under his guidance, the rattan blanket they were working on finally lookg like a real rattan blanket. The blanket was woven in perfect proportion, was strong and durable. Compared to the previous one Luo Yuan made that was just a tangle of vines that he pulled, this was a work of art.

As the back of giant lizard was very broad, making a rattan blanket required a huge amount of effort. Based on rough estimations, it was about two hundreds square wide. Naturally, it was extremely heavy that even Luo Yuan had difficulties moving it. It was at least two tons in weight.

Eventually, Luo Yuan summoned King Kong to help to lay the huge blanket on the body of the giant lizard.

This was a huge undertaking so when everything was completed it was nine o'clock at night. However, Luo Yuan did not want to camp here as it was an active area within the territory. It was evident from the tweet of the giant birds above the cloud as well as the earthquake data from the redevelopment area.

With the hanging vines, everyone climbed onto the back of giant lizard under Luo Yuan's supervision. Once everyone sat down properly Luo Yuan patted the giant lizard's head. The giant lizard



irritability snapped and blew fire from its nostrils. It stood up and ran in a slow pace under Luo Yuan's control.

The sky was as black as ink without the shine of moon and stars, even Luo Yuan could only see the vague outline of Desert City which gradually disappeared from their eyesight. Luo Yuan had complicated feelings when he looked at that pile of rubble and thought of all those people who were waiting to migrate.

...

He could see electromagnetic towers along the way, but the electricity had been cut off since the place collapsed and it became a habitat for insects.

When the two giant beasts passed by, countless insects flew into the sky.

The deterrent that was two giant beasts helped smoothen the journey as no mutated beasts dared to confront them.

When it was four o'clock in the morning, a strange city, through the dim glorious of dawn gradually appeared in their sight.

# Chapter 307: Violent King Kong

---

Just like Desert City, this city had also experienced a tragedy and collapsed into ruin with broken walls everywhere. It was a dead city.

Luo Yuan stopped the giant lizard somewhere in the outskirts as it was flat land and was not as complicated as the inside of the city. Even if they met with any threat, they would still be able to respond in a timely manner.

The crowd came down from the giant lizard trembling with fear and had a look of exhaustion because they had not eaten since afternoon. Although Luo Yuan did not feel hungry, the rest of the people were exhausted and hungry since they had been traveling nonstop over the night.

Luo Yuan dismissed the giant lizard and King Kong so that they could go and hunt for their food. When the two giant beasts were around everyone felt like the atmosphere was very intense and felt pressured even when they knew that the beasts would not hurt them. When the two giant beasts walked away, everyone immediately felt relieved and relaxed.

The portion of prepackaged food in the backpack was sufficient for everyone for one meal. In addition, the crowd was too tired to hunt for food so they chose a place that was trampled by the giant lizard as their resting spot and put on a cloth on it as a mat. They had to be extra cautious when living in the wilderness, any carelessness would cause injury or death.

The giant lizard was more than ten tons in weight so the land that it had stepped on was extremely firm and strong, even if there were any hidden mutated insects in the sand, they should have died from the pressure.

Everyone squatted on the ground and tore the packs of food assigned to them. The packs of food automatically heated up when they poured water on it. It was the first time Luo Yuan had this kind of food so he felt that it was very interesting. When the temperature was hot enough, he opened the bag and took out a palm-sized sandwich-like food, the texture of the flour was somewhat rough. Apparently, it was made by cactus flour. In the middle was a large piece of minced meat and vegetables.

Luo Yuan finished the sandwich very quickly and felt a little warmth in the stomach. With his experience, he could roughly determine that the minced meat was dark blue level. This portion of food could fill the stomach at least for a day for normal soldiers, however, it was fairly enough for him only. It could hardly fill up his stomach even if all the food was given to him.

Luo Yuan drank some water while looking at the ruins on the land nearby. From the map, this was a prefecture-level city which was much larger than Desert City which was a county-level city. It was also a military town for the area nearby. It could be seen from the high walls where several cannons and anti-aircraft guns remain.

There were a few high-caliber cannons which were historical remnants of World War II. These cannons had a thick black hole which could hide one or two individuals inside and they could even

shoot down the mutated beasts like the giant lizard.

This heavy artillery which had almost been eliminated by the missiles before the apocalypse was heavily used in recent days. It was because the war between human beings and mutated beasts were completely different from wars between humans. Mutated beasts did not have a strategic position, there were no core areas and no logistical burdens. Accuracy was the least important thing in the battle against mutated beasts. More importantly, they were everywhere, from the sky to the land, from the sea to the mountains.

The whole battlefield was interlocked and the fighting commenced at multiple locations at the same time. This was a cruel and fierce war compared to those that came before the apocalypse. This was especially so with the effects of the electromagnetic storm from outer space as it greatly affected the accuracy of missiles. Such expensive weapons were now rarely be seen on the battlefield unless it was absolutely necessary. As such, the artillery which had greater shooting power was used as the main weapon during the apocalypse.

At this time, the giant lizard seemed to have found something and roared.

Luo Yuan was shocked and quickly took a look. He saw that the giant lizard and King Kong had been walking far away from the crowd. The giant lizard was roaring fiercely to the ground with sparks of fire scattered from its nose, whilst the King Kong at the side was jumping up and down looked very restless.

---

"D-Level Task: Clear the injured uninvited guests"

"Time: One day"

"Accept / Cancel"

The task notification flashed in Luo Yuan's mind, his heart sank and told the crowd beside him, "You all stay here, I'll go and take a look."

"Be careful!" Said Huang Jiahui with a worried look.

Luo Yuan nodded before running quickly to that direction. By gathering his Will, he was as fast as lightning making his body emit an invisible force field, a lot of dust was blown away from his body. This time, his speed actually improved.

After his Will improved by one point, he not only could fly but it also gave him a powerful force field when he ran on the ground. It leveled up his overall strength as he could accelerate to a hundred meters per second in just a single breath of air. Zhang Wu and the rest were stunned watching Luo Yuan ran away as fast as the lightning. In their hearts they were shocked, "Is this really the speed of a human?" Zhang Wu opened his mouth and said with incomprehensible look, "Is... Is Luo Yuan really a level five evolved human?" However, none of them had the energy to answer this question, all of them were distracted by the speed of Luo Yuan.

At this time, an accident suddenly happened. Before Luo Yuan arrived, the giant lizard growled loudly. It was as loud as a thunderstrike. The next moment the ground suddenly exploded and a beast as huge as the giant lizard jumped out from the ground. The giant lizard immediately stood up and its flaming tail struck the mutated beast that was going to hit it. An explosion ensued with a booming sound and sent a huge airwave outwards to the surroundings.

The mutated beast that jumped out from the hole screamed in a loud shrill and fell down on the ground after being struck. The flame on its body burned intensely. It flapped its wings at a feverish pace because of the pain and irritation on its body. It flushed out a few layers of sand and caused a mini sandstorm along with numerous fist-sized flames in the air.

The giant lizard was not a fire type mutated beast so it was not real fire that it breathed but a kind of flammable liquid that would quickly burn once it encounters air. Once it gets on you, it was extremely difficult to get rid of the burn.

After watching this shocking scene, Luo Yuan had to stop moving forward. At this point, King Kong suddenly became excited and joined the battlefield. It disregarded the flame that hit its body as well as the burning pain. It jumped into the sandstorm and hammered the mutated beast with both its fists. A loud bang was heard and the ground shook slightly, along with the sound of broken bones. As the so-called "Mountain Moving Ape", King Kong had a shocking amount of strength. The force that it brought with its pair of fists the size of two round tables was about ten tons in weight. The strength so immense that until it could even pinch a piece of metal or steel flat.

The mutated beast was severely hit the ground, its back had been crushed until it collapsed and its entire exoskeleton had been completely shattered. However, it was still struggling and its sharp claws were like a cutting machine, tearing at King Kong's body. In an instant, King Kong's body was bloodied and the pain made it show growl ferociously before revealing its fangs.

The provocation the mutated beast did brought out the violent nature of King Kong. It hammered the mutated beast again and again regardless the injury it already had on its body.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

...

Like a heavy pile driver, the mutated beast eventually stopped moving. Through the dust in the air, Luo Yuan could see that the mutated beast had been smashed into the ground entirely and was badly mutilated.

"Current Task: Clear injured uninvited guests"

"Time: One day"

"Accept / Cancel"

"Task Status: Completed"

"Rating: Perfect"

"Evolved Human: Luo Yuan"

"Progress: 0%"

"Basic experience bonus +  $9600 * 0\%$ !"

"Rating: Perfect - Experience +  $9600 * 0\%$ "

"Experience: 43920/153600"

"War Beast: Giant Lizard"

"Progress: 40%"

"Basic experience bonus +  $9600 * 40\%$ !"

"Rating: Perfect - Experience  $9600 * 40\%$ "



"Experience: 8820/19200"

"War Beast: Mountain moving ape"

"Progress: 60%"

"Basic experience bonus +  $9600 * 60\%$ "

"Rating: Perfect - Experience  $9600 * 60\%$ "

"Experience: 4320/9600"

It has been upgraded!

It has been upgraded!

...

Luo Yuan took a glance on the task completion notification and looked at King Kong which was still hammering the mutated beast nonstop. He twitched his mouth and said "It's over. I didn't even have the chance to intervene in this D-level task and did not gain any experience points." Looking at the King Kong which had upgraded by two levels with two extra property points and ten skill points, Luo Yuan felt dumbfounded.

He quickly calmed his mind down. Anyway, it was still a pleasant surprise to see that King Kong had upgraded by two levels. King Kong was already strong enough, with two extra property points it would be even more powerful which made him even more confident to complete D+ level tasks in the future.

After all King Kong was an intelligent type of creature and it was easier to tame. It always had inherently high loyalty thus he was never worried about King Kong rebelling even if it became stronger. He looked at the property panel and thought for a while, then he assigned two attribute points to Agility and Will respectively.

The reason he assigned the points to Agility was mainly to enhance the flexibility of King Kong and improve its combat power while assigning points to Will was to make sure it would not be scared when it encountered a higher level mutated beast. Will was very important for war beasts especially when they faced powerful enemies. His initial plan was to make the giant lizard serve as a shield, to attract as much attention as possible to contain their enemies. However the Will of the giant lizard was too low, in most situations, it was too frightened and escaped from battle. In contrast, King Kong was more active in fights but its Strength was too low. After this evolution, the Strength of King Kong had significantly improved and Luo Yuan had switched his sight towards it.

...

Once the property points were assigned, King Kong stopped the

attack and its face turned red with confused eyes. It felt a creeping sensation on its entire body and the bloody wounds on its body were quickly healing. In fact, the skin of King Kong was quite rough so the wounds were not deep. After this evolution, to a certain extent, some self-healing ability and most of the injuries were healed in a short period of time. It seemed like it could feel a strange sensation in its body thus it did not move.

Slowly, its confused eyes became sharp and at the same time, the atmosphere became a vindictive and oppressive one.

# Chapter 308: Portent

---

The giant lizard stepped back. Feeling insecure, it began to roar softly.

Luo Yuan began to worry, as King Kong made him feel stressed. To be safe, he scanned King Kong's loyalty. He was relieved when he did not see any changes.

After a while, King Kong recovered and tried to walk and jump around slowly. At first, it was not able to walk properly, just like a baby learning how to walk for the first time. However, its posture soon became more stable, and it could eventually move faster.

When Luo Yuan walked towards it expressionlessly, King Kong quickly stopped and looked down. It stared at the ground like a kid who had just done something naughty. This behavior did not match its size and it made people feel strange.

Luo Yuan did not bother it though. Instead, he walked towards the disfigured carcass about 10 meters away.

Even if he did not use his identification technique, Luo Yuan would still have known that it was a green level mutated bug. That kind of creature was valuable, as its flesh was rich in active energy. It was attractive enough to make Luo Yuan drool.

Ever since the last time he had gotten severely injured, the energy in his heart had been fully drained. Although he had recharged it, low-level flesh could not supply sufficient energy for

him. Until now, it had still been as tiny as a sesame seed, which was vastly different compared to the size of a green bean, when Luo Yuan was at optimal condition.

Perhaps that energy could only prevent him from starving when he was doing well. However, it could also save his life when he was severely injured.

The green level mutated bug looked pitiful with its cracked shell and bones. Its abdomen was broken, and a lot of its internal organs had flown out along with a greenish fluid, forming a puddle of disgusting liquid on the ground.

Luo Yuan did not care though. To him, there were only two types of mutated carcasses. One was edible, and the other was poisonous.

However, after removing the internal organs, he discovered that the bug was not as they'd imagined. There was actually a lot of muscle inside it, especially in its abdomen. There were also a lot of muscles in its chest, which had about 48 square meters of surface area. The tiniest muscle fiber was as big as a human thigh, and it looked strong and elastic.

Luo Yuan estimated that the muscles could weigh up to a few tons.

King Kong realized that Luo Yuan would not bother it and secretly ran away. It was so excited that it began to run around and howl.

Luo Yuan looked at it and then moved his focus back to the dead mutated bug. Luckily, King Kong had broken all its bones and saved him the time it would have taken to clean it. He just threw away the bones and began to cut the meat of the bug.

He definitely could not take all its meat with him. It was too heavy for him, plus meat rich in active energy got spoilt easily, especially in such hot weather. It would not last long, even if they tried to preserve it.

In the end, Luo Yuan cut only about 300 kilos and then stopped. He hadn't wasted too much of it. Right after he left with the meat, the giant lizard walked up to the carcass. It sniffed it for a few seconds before it began to feast on it.

Compared to the days when it used to go crazy every single time it smelled green level meat, the giant lizard had better eating manners after evolving. Apparently, green level food was no longer that attractive to it.

...

Luo Yuan had been thinking of departing right after their meal, but he had not expected that incident to delay them so much. Most of the food needed to be processed immediately to preserve its quality. Huang Jiahui and many of the others wanted to help, but Luo Yuan told them to get some more rest. He could see that they were exhausted.

Of course, Luo Yuan did not treat the guys as nicely as the ladies.

Zhang Wu, Yang Zhiqing, and Yan Mengjun have been instructed to work like dogs.

That area used to be a safe zone previously, so lots of hay had been cut by the previous rulers. They only needed to look through the bushes to find the stacks of hay. It was very dry and highly flammable, as it had not rained for a long time.

However, 300 kilos of meat was not a small quantity by any means. It would be noon by the time they finished smoking it.

The atmosphere filled with the delicious smell of food. Zhang Wu and the others drooled as they watched Luo Yuan put the smoked meat in his backpack and stuff some into his mouth every once in a while.

Luo Yuan was not stingy, but the meat was too hard to bite. Although it smelled good, it was as tough as latex. No matter how hard they try to bite on it, they could not break it. Still, the meat was of higher quality than the soft internal organs. They could not help it though, as they did not evolve by gaining energy.

In the end, they could only borrow Luo Yuan's sword and cut the meat before cooking it in the pot. The meat only became harder after draining the water. Three hundred kilos of meat fit in only two backpacks. Luo Yuan zipped the bags up and waited for the soup to get ready for Huang Jiahui and the other girls.

After drinking the soup, they were on their way again.

The train was finally there around 1 pm. The sound came from afar and yet it felt so near to them, before it passed by. That was the first return train. It had come a day later than Luo Yuan had estimated. Apparently, it had not been a smooth journey.

Luo Yuan felt depressed. This meant that the great migration of Desert City had been delayed. This was definitely horrible news for them, as an earthquake could occur at any time.

The worse thing was that the resources had yet to be transported. According to Mayor Song's plan, the train would have to go one more time, which would cause an even bigger delay.

It was a choice between life and resources. Luo Yuan could not decide which one was more important, and he had no right to decide anyway. There were many people still trying to find valuable things in the abandoned site, and lots of people trying to save them.

The beautiful Northern Lights appeared at night.

It was the third time Luo Yuan had seen them. They were a portent of disaster. They had appeared before the volcano eruption in Hedong City and the rainstorm in the Kunlun Alps, both unforgettable times.

"Is an earthquake coming?" Wang Shishi asked softly.

Luo Yuan remained silent before he eventually said, "I'm not



sure, but we'll be fine."

Everyone looked panicked.

# Chapter 309: Different From The Past

---

Since the earthquake would happen anytime now, Luo Yuan decided not to rush at night, but take shelter in the Gobi Desert instead. They stopped nearby. The ground was full of rocks there, so it would not collapse easily, even if there was an earthquake.

Luo Yuan chased away the giant lizard and King Kong to prevent any unnecessary injuries to his team members. It was totally dark that night.

They made a bonfire and sat around it to wait for the earthquake. The Northern Lights lasted for six hours before they slowly faded away at dawn. It was very quiet.

There were no birds chirping or animals roaring. Even the wind had stopped blowing.

The giant lizard seemed to have sensed something in the distance. It had started stomping around and puffing. Meanwhile, King Kong kept scratching its ears in frustration.

A pressure suddenly occupied the entire space. Everyone's hearts tensed up, and their breathing got faster. Even an idiot would have felt the fear of the impending disaster.

"Luo Yuan!" Zhao Yali shouted nervously.

Luo Yuan held her hand tightly and said, "Don't worry, we'll be

fine. Just be careful!"

Zhao Yali nodded, but her face was as white as paper.

"Shishi, remember to focus on the rescue job! The rest of you try your best to protect yourselves!" Luo Yuan said quickly. As an evolved man with the earth element as his core property, he could feel a strong force moving underground. It felt as if it was about to explode.

As soon as he finished talking, he felt a shock.

He immediately looked towards the South. A beam of red light shone on the sky before it was immediately gone. Suddenly, a booming, crackling sound came from every direction, sounding like an explosion. Everything started shaking vigorously.

Zhao Yali and Huang Jiahui slipped and fell down. Luo Yuan quickly pulled them up. Wang Shishi floated and pulled Wang Xianguang up. Everyone else had also fallen on the ground, and many of them had hurt their heads and started bleeding.

However, that earthquake was only the beginning. A second, stronger earthquake came fast before Zhang Wu and the others could even get up again.

A few of them fell on the ground again and kept rolling around. The stones on the cliff were sharp, so they got injuries all over their bodies.

Chen Jiayi performed a lot better than the rest of them. The girl, who had moss growing on her body, got up from the ground very quickly after falling the first time. She was the best among the three kids who had learned martial arts from Luo Yuan. Although she could not stand properly and almost fell again a few times, she still tried her best not to.

The strong quake caused the cliff to crack, and countless stones rolled down like a waterfall. The field in the distance began to sink, as the ground was too soft there. Luo Yuan could see a huge crack forming, extending a few kilometers horizontally in just a few seconds.

Luo Yuan stood on the ground, trying to adjust his center of gravity so he could stabilize himself. The quake was not really a big deal to him, as he was used to jumping on mutated beasts. He was already used to that kind of turmoil.

The earthquake lasted for three minutes before it slowly subsided. Everyone felt very depressed as they looked at the scene. Everything looked completely different now.

Ever since the end of the world had come, human beings seemed to have used up all their good luck. Several disasters had happened to them since. In less than two years, they had been forced to live in the forest, and once they had finally gotten a safe place to stay again, disasters had started to befall them.

Luo Yuan tapped on his clothes to clean away the dust and mud

as the rest of them got up one by one. They were still in shock but fortunately, none of them had been hurt badly. Gu Meiyang's injuries looked the most serious, but they were just a few scratches and bruises. They all seemed to be agitated and they hugged each other, grateful to have survived.

"We don't know whether Huo Dong and Cao Lin are safe! Or all those people in the shelter!" Huang Jiahui said after the excitement had subsided. Everyone slowly calmed down.

"We can't do anything, Sister Huang. We can only pray for them," Wang Xianguang said guiltily as she shook her head.

Luo Yuan sighed. The magnitude of the earthquake had been at least nine, so they might not have been able to survive.

"Brother Luo, why don't we go back and take a look?" Wang Shishi said softly. "Perhaps some of them are still alive?"

"She's right, Luo Yuan," Zhao Yali agreed. She looked really pale.

Luo Yuan felt pumped up as he walked around for a while. He finally stopped and said, "Alright, let's go back! We'll try our best to save them."

Their spirits had been boosted, and everyone was excited again. They had escaped to survive, but they still felt guilty about it.

This was a critical moment for mankind, so escaping from an

organization was equivalent to being a deserter. They definitely would not pass up an opportunity to compensate for escaping.

...

The giant lizard and King Kong had run away during the earthquake and could not be seen anywhere. Luo Yuan flew up to the sky and found them hiding behind a dune. They were lying on the ground, the whole bodies shaking. Especially the giant lizard's, who had buried its head into the dune. It did not dare stand up, no matter how many times Luo Yuan tried to order it to.

It seemed like animals were more afraid of natural disasters than humans. Even though the giant lizard and King Kong were very strong, they were still afraid of the earthquake.

Luo Yuan spent more than 10 minutes comforting them, He also hit them every once in a while. Finally, they overcame their fear and got up again.

.....

Everyone climbed on the giant lizard and set off for the shelter.

The path was strange, and they did not come across any familiar places. Most of the electromagnetic towers had collapsed, and the ground was full of cracks. Luo Yuan even saw a flatland that had become a lake.

A lot of water had gushed out from under the ground and formed a 100-meter tall fountain.

When they passed by the abandoned city again, they realized it had completely collapsed. There was a long crack extending from the east to the west, crossing the entire city. Two-thirds of the city on the left side had sunk more than 10 meters into the ground.

Everyone was shocked by the scene. They began to feel insecure.

The situation at Desert City would be even worse than that.

Luo Yuan urged the giant lizard to increase its speed. Perhaps they might be able to save those who were still alive and trapped in the shelter if they were fast enough. However, Luo Yuan realized that the pressure in the tectonic plates had been relieved after the earthquake. He assumed there would no severe earthquakes for a short period of time.

Everyone had gotten used to the shaky ride, as it allowed the giant lizard to go faster. It had taken them about 16 hours to leave, but only 10 hours to return. Around 2 pm, they finally saw Desert City in the distance.

Zhao Yali quickly covered her mouth in shock as she looked at it.

Luo Yuan could not believe what he was seeing either. Although he had told them about the worse case scenario, the scene before him still made him feel extremely depressed.

The flatland where Desert City used to be had been replaced by several rows of small mountains. The biggest mountains were about a few hundred meters tall, and the smaller ones were less than 20 meters tall.

Luo Yuan saw the ruins of Desert City beside one of the mountains. There was a lot of broken concrete and wood scattered all over the place.

He was devastated. He could not imagine the destiny of the shelter after suffering such a strong force from the earth plate. They could only pray now.

Soon, they reached their destination.

The rocks were still warm from the earthquake, and the ground was a mess. They could not see any buildings nearby, only some broken bricks and pieces of wood.

Luo Yuan immediately jumped down from the giant lizard. The rest slid down with a rope.

"Luo Yuan, what should we do?" Huang Jiahui asked desperately.

"Let's dig. We can try to search," Luo Yuan said with a sigh.

Zhang Wu and the rest were too stunned to ask any questions.



Luo Yuan called King Kong over and pointed as he said something. King Kong's Intelligence was already 9 points, which was only slightly below human intelligence. It could understand most common instructions, and even complicated instructions were not a problem if there was some kind of demonstration or sign involved.

Luo Yuan acted like he was digging, and King Kong scratched its head and dug a handful of soil up. It smiled as it saw Luo Yuan nod, and then it began to dig.

As a giant beast with strong skin, powerful strength, and a pair of flexible hands, this was the perfect job for it. It was surprisingly efficient, just like a giant machine. Every handful of soil consisted of more than 10 tons of stones, but King Kong just threw it all 100 meters away.

Shocked, everyone quickly tried to escape.

# Chapter 310: Survivor

---

Luo Yuan told King Kong to stop after a minute.

There was already a deep pit in the ground about eight meters deep and 10 meters wide. Luo Yuan pondered it a bit before jumping into the pit. He listened carefully, but unfortunately he could not hear any sounds. It was completely silent.

Luo Yuan got out of the pit and asked King Kong to keep digging.

After 20 minutes, the pit grew more than 10 meters deep and 10 meters wide. This was even deeper than the location of the shelter, but Luo Yuan still could not find any signs of it, even though there was a light smell of blood spreading out from the pit.

Judging by the stones at the bottom of it, the shelter must have been squashed during the earthquake and mixed in with the rocks.

Luo Yuan did not ask King Kong to stop. He told it to keep digging instead. He did not believe that everyone in the shelter had died. As King Kong continued to dig deeper, the smell of blood got stronger, and they began to notice a tinge of dark red color on the soil. After a while, King Kong found a few corpses and threw them away along with the stones. Everyone was shocked.

It was not that appropriate to call them corpses, as they had been squashed together with the rocks. All their bones were broken and no one would even have recognized them if not for the clothes sticking on them.

King Kong sensed their strange reaction and quickly stopped. It seemed to know what it had dug up as it looked at Luo Yuan innocently.

It was sensitive to those small creatures wearing clothes. It was used to interacting with humans, and Luo Yuan had spent a lot of time educating it. It felt guilty, although it had simply thrown away a few corpses.

Luo Yuan did not blame it. He just told it to keep digging.

King Kong hesitated before it started to dig again. The pit was getting deeper, and they found a lot more corpses. Every few seconds, they would see one, and King Kong would carefully set it down at the edge of the pit.

Zhang Wu and some of the others were shocked. None of them could have imagined that such a scary beast could be so intelligent.

Luo Yuan was not surprised, as he was aware of King Kong's intelligence. That was nothing compared to humans. Even a beast 10 times smarter than King Kong would only pose a minimal threat to them.

After a while, King Kong reached the bottom, which was full of tiny grains of sand and rocks. Luo Yuan observed it for a while before telling King Kong to dig horizontally. It seemed like the entire shelter had been squashed together. They did not find anything for a long time. It was evening when they finally

discovered something.

A part of the rocks collapsed, and the sound spread out from the hole. Luo Yuan was stunned for a second before he jumped into the pit happily.

The pit had become more than 30 meters deep and 100 meters wide. It looked like the crater of a meteor that had crashed on Earth, even though King Kong was working at only half his maximum pace. This excluded the tunnel, which was 100 meters deep into the ground. If there had been such a beast before the end of the world, it would have helped them earn a few billion a year just by digging tunnels.

Luo Yuan told Huang Jiahui to throw him a flashlight. Then he walked into the tunnel with his sword, soon reaching the end of it. He saw that the wall on his left had collapsed, and more than 10 tons of rocks had covered half of King Kong's body.

Of course, that was not a big deal for King Kong. It did not even care, it just kept digging until Luo Yuan came. Then it stopped and got out of the pile of stones.

King Kong had made the tunnel narrow, but it was wide enough. Luo Yuan asked it to stand aside as he turned the flashlight to the spot where the wall had collapsed. He discovered that the rocks were loose and there were some gaps between them. The possibility of finding something further up front was quite high.

"Dig this way!" Luo Yuan said as he pointed to the left. "Dig

slower and more carefully."

Luo Yuan repeated himself, and King Kong understood what he meant. It had been doing the same thing the entire afternoon. That order was nothing new to it anymore.

To avoid another collapse, Luo Yuan backed off about 10 meters. King Kong had only dug twice when the entire wall on the left collapsed and exposed a hole about a meter tall. The strong smell of blood and an awful scent rushed out of the hole, making Luo Yuan step back.

He took a deep breath and told King Kong to leave. Then he bent down and squeezed his body into the hole.

It was stuffy and dark inside. Luo Yuan saw a mess of rocks and broken walls under the torchlight. Some of them were supported by big rocks, but they seemed ready to collapse anytime soon.

Several corpses were lying on the ground in the gaps between the rocks. Most of them looked purplish and scary. They had obviously died of suffocation. Luo Yuan checked around, but he did not find any survivors.

He tried to listen carefully, and a grin formed on his face. He quickly walked towards a heap of stones, where a sound could be heard, and found someone talking and moaning under it.

"Someone is still alive!" Luo Yuan said happily.

He looked at the huge pile of rocks and realized King Kong could not make it there. It would only cause another collapse if it tried. He put down the flashlight and his sword and tried to move the rocks. Stones were falling from the ceiling, each of them weighing a few tons. Even the smaller ones weighed a few hundred kilos. Luckily, Luo Yuan had brought his Zhanmadao. He just cut the rocks into smaller pieces if he could not move them.

Soon, he got the attention of some of the survivors.

"Anybody there?" a soft voice was heard asking.

"Please wait a moment! I'm coming to save you!" Luo Yuan shouted. His hearing was good, but theirs was not. They would not hear him if he didn't shout.

"It's useless, we're not getting out! It's just a matter of time before we die!" a second, desperate voice said.

"Who says you're not? How do you think I got here?" Luo Yuan said as he threw aside a 300-400 kilo rock.

A minor chaos ensued as everyone got excited. "Wait! The government sent you to rescue us?"

"I'll tell you later! How many survivors are there?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Eight! No, nine! Someone fainted, but we can still save him!" someone answered quickly.

Now that there was hope of survival, everyone started to move the rocks away.

"Do you know if anyone else is alive somewhere else?" Luo Yuan asked.

"I'm not sure. We heard many people shouting for help during the earthquake, but not anymore. I'm not sure if anyone else is still alive."

...

"Luo Yuan, where are you?" Huang Jiahui was shouting from outside. She had not seen Luo Yuan for too long, so she jumped down into the pit and went into the tunnel.

"I'm here!" Luo Yuan shouted. "Be careful when you come in, it's dangerous!"

Many of them followed Huang Jiahui, all of them looking pale as they saw the corpses along the way.

"Hurry up! Help me, please! There are still people inside!" Luo Yuan said.

Everyone became energetic and quickly joined him. By 9.10 p.m., they had finally carved a path through the rocks.



# Chapter 311: Hope City (I)

---

The burning campfire seemed to move cheerfully in the dark beneath the pot.

"So were there a lot of people who departed before the earthquake?" asked Luo Yuan.

"Yes, the train was originally supposed to be carrying goods, but the signs of the earthquake were really obvious, so they changed their minds," a middle-aged man said quietly as he hugged his daughter. He had been fortunate enough to survive the tragedy.

The girl in his arms looked about three or four years old. She was already tired and falling asleep. When she finally did, her brows were furrowed and her body was tense. It seemed like she was having a nightmare.

Luo Yuan looked away and asked, "Do you know how many people escaped from Desert City?"

"I'm not sure. It was pretty hectic at the time. Time was wasting, and the train was seriously overloaded. There must have been twenty or maybe thirty thousand people on it," the middle-aged man said, remaining silent for a while. His name was Cui Weichuan. Before the earthquake, he had been a basic level government employee. When the migration had taken place, almost all civil servants had been required to maintain order, so he had somewhat understood the situation.

There was a total of nine survivors rescued, including the children. Fortunately, aside from an unlucky person whose left arm had been cut off by a rock that had collapsed, the rest of them were not injured. Luo Yuan used his Will to heal the injured survivor. The man had stopped bleeding, but his left arm was not going to grow back.

"The soup is ready, let's have it first," Huang Jiahui changed the topic. She and several other women served each person a bowl of soup.

"Thank you!"

"Thank you!"

The survivors accepted the soup with a look of gratitude. After drinking it, their faces quickly flushed and they started to look less tired. Luo Yuan talked to them for a while before he gave them two tents so they could rest.

...

Late at night, Luo Yuan was lying in his tent with his eyes open, staring ahead of him blankly.

From their conversation, he had gathered that the situation was better than expected. Assuming that the train had departed at eight and the earthquake had happened at four, that eight-hour gap should have been enough for them to escape the impact of the

earthquake.

This meant that at least one-fifth of the people had managed to flee from the catastrophe, including students, researchers, engineers, and the part of the military that had maintained order.

Luo Yuan was slightly relieved. At least Zhong Chujiang and Deng Chao would not have died, but the status of Huo Dong, Cao Lin and Mo Wenwen was still unknown. He admired Mayor Song's decision and the fact that the majority of the public servants had chosen to stay back and face the earthquake.

"Do you think we would still have survived if we'd never escaped?" Huang Jiahui asked suddenly.

Luo Yuan was silent for a moment before he said, "Don't think too much. Go to sleep while it's still early."

"I can't sleep. Whenever I close my eyes, those familiar faces appear in my brain, except now they're corpses. We don't know whether Huo Dong and Cao Lin are still okay or not," said Huang Jiahui with sadness in her voice. As she uttered that last sentence, her voice sounded choked.

Luo Yuan sighed and said, "This is the apocalypse. We have been through a lot these past few days."

"But we are in the Reconstruction Area," Huang Jiahui said weakly.

"We were, but now it's collapsed," Luo Yuan said with a heavy heart. "Go to bed. We have to get up early tomorrow."

...

The vast grassland was restless. Countless mutated beasts were running around. After a while, two giant mutated beasts gradually appeared on the horizon, quickly walking towards their destination.

It had been four days since their last departure. As there were a few more survivors added to the team, including injured adults and children, their speed had diminished by a lot. However, despite the delay, they had almost reached their destination. According to the map, they should be able to arrive at Hope City before nightfall.

The impact of the earthquake on Hope City had been minimal. There was no sign of destruction in the area. A large number of construction vehicles and heavy trucks were driving on the grassland, raising a big cloud of dust. Beside the grassland was the construction site and a huge gantry. There were a lot of construction workers underneath it. It seemed like there were thousands of them creeping on the ground like ants. There were a lot more construction sites like this in the area. Luo Yuan could see at least seven or eight of them. Several giant fortresses already had a foundation, and the workers were now building their upper framework. Apparently, the Reconstruction Area had been evacuated in order to rebuild its defense.

Before Luo Yuan could go closer, a military vehicle drove quickly towards them and stopped five meters away from them. A man with an intense expression shouted using a speaker, "My friend, this is the military powerhouse! Please don't come any closer! Go somewhere else!" It was very rare to see such huge beasts, even on a battlefield. Anyone who could sit on them had to be an extraordinary person. However, they still had to stop them, as this was a construction site and most of the people working there had only had minimal military training. If any of those beasts came closer, they would create chaos and fear. No one wanted to take responsibility if there was an accident.

"We are from Desert City, so we are not clear about the situation here. Could you show us the right way, sir?" Luo Yuan quickly jumped down and went over to talk for courtesy's sake.

"You are from Desert City?" the officer asked curiously. He was relieved when he saw Luo Yuan walk over. "I heard that that area was close to the epicenter and the entire city collapsed during the earthquake."

"The situation was more serious than you think. It's really hard to describe. Did any people from Desert City come here during the past two days?" Luo Yuan did not want to say anything further, so he changed the subject and asked for information.

"I'm not sure. You can go to Hope City and find out," the officer said. "Your battle beasts might affect our construction workers though, so you'll have to take a detour. Come with me."

The military vehicles led the way, followed closely by the two

giant beasts. The two beasts were ten meters tall, but their walking speed was no slower than the military vehicles' in front of them. They passed most of the sites before the military vehicles finally stopped. The officer stuck his head out and guided them enthusiastically, "You just need to walk for 200 more kilometers, and then you will see Hope City."

They thanked the officer and kept heading in the direction he had pointed.

...

"Lately, the sun has been too hot and my skin had been peeling."

After entering this area, everyone had relaxed visibly.

Wang Xianguang rubbed the back of her hand as she complained. Both her back and face were full of wrinkles and shedding dead skin. She looked kind of scary. The others were not any better. After the earthquake, the sky had finally cleared and it had been sunny for several days. Everyone had been happy for the sunny weather after escaping from the dark shelter. However, their joy did not last long. The sun was too hot, so in just a few days' time everyone's skin had been burned dry.

"Should we have stayed indoors and not exposed ourselves to the sun for too long?" asked Huang Jiahui. She turned and looked at Luo Yuan and Chen Jiayi with envy. Everyone's skin had been burned badly except for these two's, who had experienced no impact at all.

Luo Yuan was fine because he had a powerful physique, so he did not have to be afraid of ultraviolet rays. As for Chen Jiayi, she had been parasitized by moss, so she fared well in that kind of situation. She actually looked even better than before. Her skin was radiant and shining.

Luo Yuan seemed okay when Huang Jiahui looked at him strangely, but he actually had something in his mind. Young Chen Jiayi was as restless as a frightened rabbit. She quickly pulled back the moss on her head and blushed slightly before she explained, "We haven't exposed ourselves to the sun for too long. It's just that the sun is bigger now."

"But we haven't been feeling any hotter. It's actually better than the time after the thunderstorms," Zhao Yali joined the conversation. Women always had a lot to say on any topic.

"This is what the moss in my body is telling me. I'm not sure either," Chen Jiayi said timidly.

"It should be because of the strong ultraviolet rays," Zhang Wu suddenly said. Those days he had relieved a lot of his tension. "Before the apocalypse, I had traveled for a long period of time. I was running around all over the country, Tibet included. The temperature was not high there, but the ultraviolet rays were really strong. While I was there, my skin peeled off several layers."

Luo Yuan scowled as he heard what they were talking about. This area was not at a high altitude with thin air. It was a grassland, and

after the rise of the sea level, the altitude there was no more than 1,000 meters. Plants grew luxuriously now, and the animal population had been growing significantly. Besides, the concentration of the air was much higher than before the apocalypse.

He looked up at the sky. Ever since the end of the world, the sky had become as blue as a sapphire. Now it seemed a little darker though. They could even vaguely see the stars in the sky during the day.

In fact, long before the influx of insects, Luo Yuan had been feeling a little strange. The environment he had been familiar with seemed to be changing gradually. Although the changes were so small every day that they were barely visible, things had still been shifting constantly.

Perhaps the insect influx and the earthquake were connected to these changes.

Such significant changes could not have escaped the attention of the management of the Reconstruction Area, yet they had kept it a secret. Even Mayor Song from Desert City had seemed to have no idea about it. The only speculation that Luo Yuan could make was that the consequences of these changes would be far more challenging than he expected.

...

The group continued their journey until three in the afternoon



when a magnificent fortress city appeared before them.

## Chapter 312: Hope City (II)

---

"Hope City has been under construction since the early stages of the end of the world. It was first built according to the standards of a city center as a last resort for China. This is the only place suitable for satellite launching in China other than some heavy industry factories and big labs. However, the government did not use Hope City as the new capital. They built another one instead."

Cui Weichuan sighed as he looked at the giant city. "It's still very important though, as it's one of the biggest industrial zones of the rehabilitation base. Almost all the military facilities are here, and there are about 3,000,000 people living in the city. I used to live here before I got assigned to the Desert City."

Luo Yuan looked in the distance. It would have been more appropriate to describe it as a scary war device rather than a city.

There were countless cannons inside the seven-by-eight-meter wall made of meat vines. A few of them looked extremely strange. The tubes of those cannons were slim, but their bases were big, so they looked a lot bigger than those around them. There was one every few meters, surrounded by regular cannons.

"What kind of weapon is that?" Luo Yuan asked as he pointed at the strange cannons.

"It's an electromagnetic cannon invented during the past two years. It's eight times faster than the speed of sound, and it can travel up to 500 kilometers. One would be enough to kill a level

seven mutated beast. It consumes a lot of electricity though, so we don't use it that often," Cui Weichuan said proudly.

In order to boost military battle spirit, the rehabilitation base would advertise massively every time they invented a new technology. Hence, he knew everything about the weapons as well as his own assets. Level seven was equivalent to green level. Luo Yuan felt slightly uncomfortable as he looked at those scary electromagnetic cannons. He had never fought such a super mutant before.

"What about that one? The one that looks like an airship," Luo Yuan asked again as he pointed at an object floating in the air.

It looked gigantic, and the shadow it cast underneath covered a few streets. However, its surface was colorful and seemed to have many patches.

Cui Weichuan looked at the airship and said, "You're right, Mr. Luo. That's an airship."

When he noticed the shocked expression on Luo Yuan's face, he explained, "It might look fragile, but it's made of the skin of many different mutated beasts over level 5. It has a very strong defensive power. A normal mutated bird could not cause any damage to it, and it's big enough to scare away any mutated bird. Also, this kind of A-model airship can transport up to 3,000 tons, which is 20 times more than the capacity of a normal cargo ship."

Luo Yuan was shocked as he listened to his explanation. He could

not imagine how many mutated beast skins it must have taken to build such a gigantic airship. Perhaps no less than 5,000 mutated beasts worth of skin.

Based on its capacity, it was equivalent to one-third of the transport capacity of a courier train. What's more, it was not restricted by terrain or traffic, and it could relocate the entire military base if there was an emergency. Luo Yuan had no idea how many cargo airships they had, but he assumed it wasn't more than 10. It was not easy to find mutated beasts above level five after all. It would only get more and more difficult to build new airships.

Suddenly, there was someone rushing towards him. "Is this Mr. Luo? Luo Yuan?" he asked.

"I am," Luo Yuan said. He did not find it surprising, as there was a microchip inserted in his battle beasts, and his biodata was recorded there. It was traceable no matter where the battle beasts went.

"I'm sorry, Mr. Luo. According to the policy of battle beast management, your battle beasts are not allowed to enter the city. Could you please follow me to the appropriate department to make some arrangements for them?"

The giant lizard slowly lay down, and the group climbed down one by one.

"That's Hope City. I'll just stop here. Take care, everyone!" Luo

Yuan said.

"Thank you so much for your help, I'll always remember it," Cui Weichuan said as he carried a little girl in his arms. "I hope to see you again!"

"You will," Luo Yuan said with a smile.

"Thank you, Uncle Luo and you sisters, for saving our lives. Uncle Luo, will you visit us in the future?" the little girls asked as they heard everyone saying goodbye.

"Sure," Luo Yuan said. However, everyone knew that the possibility of that happening was low. Normal people would all lose their freedom, and none of them could predict the future.

"Good girl, Ningning. You're such a lovely girl," Huang Jiahui said as she touched the little girl's face. That little girl reminded her of her own daughter.

Luo Yuan sensed her feelings and held her hand in an effort to comfort her.

Huang Jiahui smiled reluctantly. When she turned around, her eyes were teary. That was something she regretted, but could not help. She always woke up from nightmares. The rest of them expressed their sincere gratitude one by one. They would have died if Luo Yuan had not gone back to rescue them. They had no words to describe how grateful they were.

Luo Yuan shook their hands with a smile for more than 10 minutes. They were all really passionate and could not thank him enough.

Besides the survivors from the earthquake, Yang Zhiqing, Yan Mengjun, and his wife had decided to leave the group. Zhang Wu decided to stay with them and follow Luo Yuan.

The government employees were waiting patiently further up front with uniform smiles on their faces. They knew the status of that man, as the top management had expressed its concern. They had received a call regarding Luo Yuan even before he'd arrived at Hope City.

The call was from a special department. Even the Mayor of Hope City might need to pay his respects to Luo Yuan. They dared not simply entertain him. The battle beasts were scary enough to make them maintain their service quality though.

...

The battle beasts' new habitat was a natural valley 100 kilometers away with plenty of plants and old trees. It was easy to preserve such a big forest near Hope City.

'There are 27 battle beasts living here, each of them about 10 kilometers away from the next one. We feed them at a specific time, so they don't have to worry about finding food. We have conducted a few experiments by luring them with food, but none

of them have left their habitat," the government servants explained as they walked beside Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan nodded. He found that it was not bad there compared to the Desert City. The giant lizard and King Kong would like it.

As he was about to leave, the giant lizard and King Kong seemed to sense something different and looked slightly depressed. Luo Yuan chased them away, but they secretly followed him a few times. Luckily, they could trace the battle beasts with their microchips, otherwise, Luo Yuan would not have known.

The women were all in tears. They would have tried to persuade Luo Yuan to keep them if they had lost their minds. Zhang Wu felt touched as he watched the scene. He felt like getting a battle beast himself. They had ridden on the giant lizard on their way there, but a car drove them to their own residence.

The car ran on electricity, as sources of fuel were scarce those days. Other than the heavy trucks still using diesel, it was really difficult to spot any regular vehicles.

They finally entered Hope City at 9 p.m.

The streets were empty, and there were not many people walking around. They could hardly see any shops. The place looked more like a giant industrial zone than a city. The lamps on both sides of the streets were bright, and they could hear the loud sound of heavy machines.

The car kept moving, but they could only see factories on both sides of the road, nothing else. Many heavy trucks passed by, causing the ground to shake a little. Countless smoke funnels with clouds of smoke gushing out could be seen all along the way.

After all, this was a city of steel and fire meant to produce heavy metal products.

They felt secure as they looked at the big city. They were finally relieved.



# Chapter 313: Hope City (III)

---

Half an hour later, the group was sent to the hostel in the city.

A civil officer had made arrangements for their rooms. Just before he left, he suddenly received a phone call. After hanging up, he turned towards Luo Yuan and respectfully said, "Mr. Luo, the mayor wishes to see you."

His expression looked slightly confused. In order to improve the government's efficiency after the apocalypse, there had been some shifts to the administration system. At the moment, the bureaucracy was according to a mayor administration, with the mayor as the highest-ranking official.

Nonetheless, although both were of a mayor position, the status of the mayor in the strategic Hope City compared to the mayor in the small Desert City at the border was vastly different. If they had to be compared, the equivalent to their differences was akin to a provincial level to a local officer.

Luo Yuan recovered from his slight excitement, and calmed down, "Sorry to trouble you."

No, no... it is no trouble at all. Mr. Luo, you are being far too polite."

The government officer seemed to be overwhelmed by the flattery.

"You guys do not have to wait up for me. Take some rest after dinner. I should be back soon," Luo Yuan put down his sword and said to Huang Jiahui.

Luo Yuan followed the officer and left the guest room. About ten minutes later, he entered the municipal government building.

"You are Luo Yuan, aren't you? I am the mayor's secretary, Lai Yonglai. The mayor has been waiting for you for some time now. Please come with me," said a muscular middle-aged man, who approached Luo Yuan just as he entered the hall.

His gait was as confident as a tiger. His foot was planted firmly on the ground, while his eyesight was sharp and alert. Such a person, even if he was not one of the evolved persons, he very well should have been one of the practitioners of the evolution. However, according to the customary selection rule during the apocalypse, the secretary would have to be both an evolved person, as well as a practitioner, with indomitable strength.

"Sorry to trouble you, Secretary Lai. Please, do lead the way," Luo Yuan flashed a smile after noticing that the secretary had no intention to shake hands.

Secretary Lai did not speak; his face remained expressionless with an unwelcoming look. He studied Luo Yuan from head to toe, as though scanning for any hidden weapons, and was inclined to conduct a body search on him, no less.

Ultimately, Secretary Lai did not carry out a body-search. For an evolved human, if he ever intended to kill an ordinary human, he will easily assassinate, even without a weapon.

Observing the other party staring at him, was like coming face to face with an enemy of the same rank. Luo Yuan did not mind at all, as he knew fairly well that everyone was neither obliged to be polite to him nor required to like him.

Although it was already ten o'clock in the evening, the building was still full of people coming and going; hustling and bustling about.

The two of them soon walked to the mayor's office located at the most inner part of the building. Secretary Lai walked up, knocked on the door and said softly, "Mayor, Luo Yuan has arrived."

"Let him in!" The voice coming from the other side of the door was husky and deep, giving an impression of an elderly person.

Secretary Lai shot a warning look at Luo Yuan, and gestured him to enter. Luo Yuan pushed the door open and went in.

"You must be Mr. Luo, the comrade! Have a seat," chuckled a man who looked to be in his fifties or sixties with almost-white hair, donning a pair of black-framed reading glasses. Upon seeing Luo Yuan coming in, he took them off.

Luo Yuan hesitated for a moment, and took a seat on the couch

by the side.

"Comrade Luo, I hope you don't mind my summoning you here at such a late hour?" The old man smiled and asked politely.

Luo Yuan shook his head, and complimented him by saying, "It is my honor, for a mayor to call upon me!"

"My, oh my... Ever since I received information about you, I had always wanted to meet you. But unfortunately, the mayor of the Desert City, Song Guangming, was so reluctant to let go of you, and had even asked you to stay on. And now, it was so unfortunate that the whole Desert City had wiped out – even Song Guangming was also sacrificed," said the elder, with a forlorn look on his face, as he exhaled a long sigh.

"I am just a normal evolved person, there is no need for a mayor to pay so much attention to me," said Luo Yuan, slightly confused.

"Comrade Luo... You are young but very humble, and this is not a good thing," the old man pointed at him and reprimanded in jest. "I know you have your own concerns, and I have also heard some nasty rumors about you, but this is all due to those with bad intentions, ones who are useless to our society. You should understand that."

Luo Yuan nodded his head. He knew the elder was talking about the military purge of the evolved humans. It had resulted in a genocide of countless evolved people, while causing some of the more powerful ones to escape into the wild, turning into vagrants

in the process.

"It can now be said that mankind has already reached a point between life and death, with the extinction of humans being no longer just a joke, but a fast reality. Perhaps we can endure this for another five years, or maybe we may not even last a year.

You may not be aware that the natural habitat for man has been greatly reduced. We have completely lost contact with Africa, South America, as well as Australia. Our next-door neighbor, Japan, has been completely submerged underwater caused by both the earthquake and the tsunami. We are now only in contact with Russia, America and Europe. These three regions and their total population may not even reach 300 million people. Moreover, with most of the population being old and weak, humankind is at the brink of extinction."

The old man continued with a heavy voice, "However, if human beings are to be eventually extinct, it must happen without regrets, as we would have done our best and exhausted all potential of the human race."

Luo Yuan's expression exuded enlightenment. Although the old man's voice was soft and his tone was gentle as a fawn, it showed him a new perspective and left a deep impact in his heart.

Perhaps the old man was aware of this unsettling conversation, as he changed the topic and said, "The evolved people are our hope for overcoming this apocalypse. The reason for the rapid advancement of technology is a mass gathering of men sharing their skills and knowledge, as well as contributions by the evolved

humans. Their abilities were often non-replicable by any present technology. Of course, there were also some evolved people who were highly trained for combat, and are fighting on the battle front, making a huge contribution to mankind."

The old man looked at Luo Yuan, with his now piercing eyes. Without knowing why, Luo Yuan felt slightly nervous when facing this ordinary old man. "I know young people, especially those that had undergone evolution, enjoy their freedom. However, with the current situation, the luxury of freedom has become unacceptable," muttered the mayor.

The reasons for summoning you here, is to first listen to your opinions, on which position you would like to assume. Secondly, is to meet you, to see what kind of person you are, who had survived the fallen area, traveled all the way here, and at the same time bringing a group of ordinary men. Why, you must be blessed with superpowers!"

"I am afraid I have let you down!" said Luo Yuan respectfully.

"No, there is no disappointment. From your eyes, I know you are not a selfish person, and this is more than enough," the elder was pleased. He continued, "I heard that you are a martial arts practitioner... Are you interested in becoming an instructor?"

Seeing that Luo Yuan was confused, the old man chuckled, "Do not feel awkward. For an evolved person as formidable as you are, how could we possibly let you go without first getting to know you?"

Luo Yuan politely rejected and said, "I do not like the military atmosphere. What if I recommended two people – Deng Chao and Zhong Chuqiang? They have trained with me for some time now, and have at the moment, migrated here with the rest of the people."

The elder was not surprised by his refusal. After all, this was just a test and he was probably affected by the mass purge. Evolved people that were not trained in the military had a certain degree of ostracism against the army. After hearing Luo Yuan recommending others for the instructor position, his expression changed rapidly as he asked, "Are they ordinary people? If so, how strong are their abilities?"

Luo Yuan nodded and replied, "Basically, they can kill any level two or three mutated beasts!"

The mayor's expression turned into one of all seriousness, as he quickly whipped out a notebook, and jotted down their names.

The information from Desert City seemed to be slightly different. Indeed, companions who had received training from him were actually stronger than what had been reported in the paper.

An ordinary person who could kill a level two or three beasts after learning martial arts was no ordinary feat. In fact, the strength of most evolved people was also within this range.

Martial arts had become popular in the Reconstruction Area, yet

in reality, its outcome was unfavorable, and completely failed to meet their expectations. He had not expected that Luo Yuan could be the bearer of such a big surprise.

It was also true that the ones who could walk out of the fallen area and travel all the way here, would have gone through numerous risky and dangerous situations. Even if he was an ordinary man, he would have become very skilled in battle by now. Despite all that, he has yet to fully believe everything Luo Yuan said, as everything must be tested for the truth.

He closed the notebook and smiled, "Since you do not want to join the army, I'd recommend you another special department, which I think you would enjoy."



# Chapter 314: Humbleness (I)

---

As Luo Yuan walked out of the city council, he gently exhaled.

Though he had been kind, soft-spoken and was never compelling, the old man had put relatively strong pressure on him. Thus, Luo Yuan was nervous and dared not relax just yet.

He had to say that the old man was a very respectable man indeed. Though he might not be physically strong, and would probably pale in comparison to an average man, he had a strong heart.

He took a look at the time; it was already half past ten at night, but the factories along the road were still brightly lit. As the public servant who sent him to the old man had already left, he could only walk back to the guest house.

Fortunately, his memory had not failed him, and the location of the guest house was not too far away.

While he was strolling back, he calibrated his thoughts. The Special Force recommended by the old man towards the end of the conversation was directly under the management of the central government, with a branch located in Hope City. Generally, the force took in some extraordinarily strong evolved people.

Luo Yuan guessed that the Special Force was made available not only to win over their hearts, which could potentially be a safety risk to the government and for easier centralized management, but

also to carry out special missions that the military troops were not able to undertake.

For him, it was simply tailored.

It had been half a year since his last level up. Particularly after he entered the Reconstruction Area, he barely had any missions to aid his progression. The most he managed to earn was only a few EXP, from his two recent missions.

Without realizing, the D-level mission had placed him in quite a dilemma – whether or not to omit them because they could no longer give him adequate experience points but felt it was a waste if he did so.

Unfortunately, D+ level missions or dark green creatures were difficult to run into, even in the wild, let alone in the Reconstruction Area. At least for Luo Yuan, as he was yet to meet any.

Apart from being lucky, it was also because of the lack of information. What he managed to see and meet was only the condition happening around him, and it was purely by luck. Nevertheless, it should not be rare to witness dark green creatures or even stronger creatures within the vicinity of the Reconstruction Area.

...

The next morning, someone approached Luo Yuan as soon as he had finished his breakfast.

"Hello Mr. Luo, you may not know me, but I'm the Vice Minister of the Organization Department, Ren Hongyuan, and I'll be accompanying you for your installation," he sized up Luo Yuan and said in awe.

"Sorry for troubling you, Minister Ren," said Luo Yuan, while shaking his hand.

"My pleasure!"

They walked out of the guest house and got into the car. Minister Ren introduced, "Li Jian Department is a special rapid force established by the Republic and has a troop of Logistic Units, which includes the air force. Nonetheless, we have only 51 formal members, distributed throughout the Reconstruction Area, and we have eight people here in Hope City."

"So, I'm the ninth person?" Luo Yuan said with a smile, but he gradually grew more serious inside.

Only 51 people out of hundreds of thousands of evolved people in the Reconstruction Area, with more than one hundred million residents, has proved that they were the best among the best. Perhaps he could be confident to believe that nobody can compete with him, especially with the assistance of the system. Nonetheless, the rebellion at Desert City where many strong evolved people showed up, had made him genuinely understand

the meaning of hidden talent. Of course, if the base number was large, it was definitely possible to have some strong evolved people.

Minister Ren replied bashfully, "To be honest, you are still a member of the Logistic Unit, and under probation, no less. Though Mayor Hu has recommended you, we don't have the power to immediately appoint a member of the Special Force in Hope City. It's certainly not a big deal for Mr. Luo nonetheless."

Luo Yuan looked stunned, and bantered, "Oh, so I'm still deemed a temporary worker?"

"Err... this is the normal procedure of the organization's department. Even Mayor Hu cannot violate this," Minister Ren replied nervously. He was relieved when he realized that Luo Yuan was only joking around, but had already broken out in cold sweat.

Being a mere commoner, everyone in the Mysterious Department was regarded as a superhero. Even if he were to sit beside one of them, he would already feel nervous and insecure. This was because it would never be safe, even if he were to be protected by a troop of soldiers, in the event that they suddenly lose their minds.

...

Luo Yuan initially thought that the department comprising only eight people, was just a small office, but it turned out to be the complete opposite.

After the car drove on for about half an hour, they passed through a warning signboard which read 'Military Base, No Trespassing' and saw a huge thorn bush enclosure. They even had to show their pass at the gate before their car could drive in slowly to the Mysterious Department.

The whole region had more than a hundred acres of land with two runways for planes, five helicopter landing sites and three blocks of large buildings up to three floors in height.

The car stopped in front of the lobby of the building in the middle. Minister Ren hobbled as he was obviously slightly nervous, as though there was danger lurking behind the large building.

The two of them walked into the large building. It was not lonely at all, as many people were seen hustling and bustling. These people were apparently the logistical workers and middle-aged women seemed to make up the majority of the workers. Everyone looked very skilled.

Luo Yuan scanned through the crowd and suddenly his pupils contracted, as someone had suddenly appeared in front of him. The person appeared so fast, that he was not able to even see how or where he came from.

"Yo, looks like we have a newcomer." He grinned, with his face twitching slightly, making him look rather nervous.

He looked a tad shaggy, as he was wearing a singlet with black

short pants, and a pair of slippers. Besides, his hair was messy and scruffy, almost like that of a beggar's.

"Yes, Mr. Wang. Is your team leader around?" Minister Ren asked with a smile.

"Well... unfortunately, our team leader has gone to New Capital City," he replied casually while sizing up Luo Yuan. This made Luo Yuan felt uncomfortable as if he was being stared at by a venomous snake.

"What about your Assistant Team Leader?"

"Why do you wish to see him? He's been out on a mission. You can approach me too. It's really the same unless you're looking down on me," he said casually, while walking around Minister Ren and sniffled, as though expecting sympathy. Meanwhile, the logisticians nearby were retreating fearfully.

Minister Ren could barely smile, and wanted to lash out a few times but did not bring himself to.

Luo Yuan was aware of how uneasy Minister Ren felt. Hence, he pulled him away while glaring at Mr. Wang, "Don't push it!"

He quickly retreated a few meters backward in fear, and exaggerated while looking at Luo Yuan's expression, "Yo, little white face, unless you want to rush to the forefront, not everyone can get away that easily here. Come, let me see what you've got."

The commotion apparently attracted everyone's attention. Two people were seen going down the staircase when it piqued their interest. When they saw the scene, they started to look on.

Luo Yuan shifted his sight and suddenly smiled, "Oh, are you trying to put me in your position? You should have told me earlier. I'd love this."

## Chapter 315: Humbleness (II)

---

Minister Ren glanced at Luo Yuan in appreciation. Being a Vice Minister of Hope City's Organizational Department, he would not be so useless under different circumstances or if he were to be facing another person.

The key point was because this man was indeed insane. It was said that he suffered a mental illness even prior to the apocalypse. He did not only have a weird character but also acted unscrupulously and even enjoyed abnormal hobbies. Even the mayor felt troubled when seeing him. However, because of his strong ability and as long as he had not killed anyone or committed any serious crimes, the superiors had let him be.

Nonetheless, he did hope that somebody could teach him a lesson, but as a public servant, he could not let such things happen. Therefore, he tried to advise, "Calm down and don't fight, don't fight! We are colleagues after all!"

"Minister Ren, you have sent me here and my task is now completed. Now, it's the internal conflict that we have in our department, so please do stay away from us." Luo Yuan said, as he clearly knew that it was useless to keep a low profile. If he did not unveil his abilities, he will be despised.

Minister Ren felt thankful, as what Luo Yuan said was insinuating that he wanted him to out of the picture.

"Yo, who does he think he is, showing off like that? Is he our



team member? Why do I not know him?" exaggerated the crazy Mr. Wang, while he fiddled with his ear. Then, he turned to look at two people watching nearby and shouted loudly, "Hey, stupid Li, do you know this guy? And you, do you know him? Ah, none of you know him!"

"Then, who the hell are you?" Crazy Mr. Wang turned over and lashed out at Luo Yuan.

Other than the two onlookers, nobody laughed but fearfully retreated. To the normal logisticians, they would offend no one, even if this person was yet to be an official member, under probation.

The foul language of crazy Mr. Wang had finally turned Luo Yuan's face rather glum. He threw his Zhanmadao aside and said, "Hopefully you can be as mean as you are, later!"

The crazy Mr. Wang pursed his mouth as though wanting to start mocking again, but Luo Yuan had immediately disappeared. Before he could realize what was happening, a strong wind blew against him and with a sharp pain in his chest, his body was thrown into the air.

Luo Yuan held onto his collar and smashed him directly onto the floor.

With his 15 points of Strength – which was 7.5 times higher than a normal person's – and with the strong and thick cemented floor, he would be in searing pain and overcome by dizziness if he were

to be smashed onto the floor, regardless of how tough he was.

However, to Luo Yuan surprise, he had disappeared just before his body hit the ground. Only a torn singlet was left in his hand.

At almost the same time, Luo Yuan's sensory perception caught a silhouette of Mr. Wang's body appearing from thin air some ten meters away, as he crouched on the ground miserably.

"You almost caught me, almost!" he laughed insanely while gradually turning ferocious and emitting an aura of insanity. As time passed by, his body began blurring up, as if numerous illusory shadows were irregularly changing.

The two onlookers looked at each other and their face became glum too. A middle-aged man shouted, "Everyone, leave now!"

The logisticians and Minister Ren was shocked, and quickly left the lobby of the first floor.

The two of them were not attacking in a hurry but were staring at each other instead.

The eyes of crazy Mr. Wang looked as ferocious as an injured lonely wolf, but Luo Yuan looked calm, with his emotions remaining intact.

The ability of the opponent was indeed very mysterious and similar to an imaginary teleportation. Nonetheless, Luo Yuan had

seen a lot recently, including those four-dimensional creatures as well as special abilities related to time and space. Hence, he no longer felt amazed by such mysterious powers.

It did not mean that these abilities were not strong enough, but it was proportionated to the person who possessed the ability, and how powerful they were.

If he could only teleport too, Mr. Wang would be no threat to Luo Yuan.

The crazy Mr. Wang seemed rather impatient. He made his move quickly by disappearing in a flash and appearing behind Luo Yuan's back, intending to punch him right in the back of his skull.

Luo Yuan seemed to have eyes at the back of his head, as he ducked slightly to avoid the punch by a hair's breadth. Then, he twisted and kicked Mr. Wang's head like a whip. Though he did not use his full energy, his kick had thrown his victim into the air, causing him to tumble onto the floor, some five to six meters away.

"Hu! Hu!"

The crazy Mr. Wang quickly stood up after a roll, and spat out two bloody front teeth, with the left side of his face immediately swelling up. "Hey little white face, were you having too much fun till you became this weak now? Come on, hit me harder!" he shouted deliriously, albeit sounding strange due to his now-swollen face.

"Then, let's do it again," Luo Yuan smiled coldly. After all, he had to make a person like him admit defeat and surrender, lest he continued his barking mad attitude, being such a nuisance.

The crazy Mr. Wang began to circle him. His shuffling footsteps had annoyed Luo Yuan. Then, his body had disappeared again. As soon as he reappeared behind Luo Yuan's back, he was kicked and thrown into the air again.

This time, Luo Yuan had clearly kicked harder, because the crazy Mr. Wang laid on the floor for a few seconds, before he could recover and struggle to stand up. Two sides of his face had become swollen now, making him look rather bloated.

"Was it not strong enough? I haven't used much of my energy yet, so let's do this again!" Luo Yuan was beckoning the crazy Mr. Wang, while rebuking simultaneously.

The two onlookers began to look glum. Though the crazy Mr. Wang suffered mental issues and wasn't exactly the strongest, his ability to appear and disappear swiftly was definitely the most annoying skill he had. Furthermore, he could easily handle level six mutated beasts and together with highly-explosive bombs, his record in the team was indeed amazing.

Nonetheless, the crazy Mr. Wang's mind seemed to be completely obsessed with this newbie, as if he was under a spell, akin to a kid being taken for a ride.

"Why must I go to you? Come and get me if you think you're all

that," jeered the crazy Mr. Wang, refusing to surrender, as he was confident with his ability to teleport away for no one to be able to get hold of him.

"Well, you asked for it!" Luo Yuan suddenly smiled, exposing his perfectly neat and fine white teeth, which sent a chill down Mr. Wang's spine.

His rows of teeth were neatly in line without a single gap. Each tooth was long and narrow. Therefore, he had almost one-third the number extra of teeth compared to an ordinary person.

It was a symbol of rebirth, and he saw it only once on his team leader. He glanced at Luo Yuan's skin, and discovered that it was not only very smooth and fine, but had a glowing complexion with hardly any visible pores.

After being reborn, Luo Yuan grew completely new rows of teeth, not realizing that his teeth had now looked very odd.

As Luo Yuan was got closer, he quickly requested, "Hold on!"

Despite being mentally unsound, he was yet to lose his mind. He knew that he should not be provoking someone like Luo Yuan, but before he could finish his sentence, Luo Yuan had launched himself towards him and was trying to reach for his hair.

The crazy Mr. Wang trembled, and teleported at that critical moment. With a few continuous flashes as fast as lightning, he had

escaped before the rest could react.

He turned and a ripping sound was heard from his hair.

A blurry silhouette sped over and in a second, it had come very near.

He could teleport to a distance of about twenty to thirty meters each, before launching another teleportation, with no downtime. Ergo, he had escaped to a distance of more than hundreds of meters after a few teleports, but he seemed to have failed.

"How can he be this fast?!" He exclaimed frantically within his heart and launched another teleport.

...

While looking at his back-to-back series of teleportation, Luo Yuan discovered a very weird occurrence, where he would conjure an illusion on his brows, each time he teleported. Could it be possible that teleportation was related to a four-dimensional realm as well? Could it be that he was entering the four-dimension space temporarily, when he disappeared from the original space, only to return not long after?

As he coincidentally possessed a four-dimensional vision, Luo Yuan discovered that he had more abilities related to higher dimensions of space. Therefore, Luo Yuan doubted that the creatures were evolving towards four-dimensional ones.

He allowed the idea to just flash by, and then quickly adjourned to the location where the crazy Mr. Wang had reappeared. Little did he know that the latter had actually shown some signs during teleportation. When he was about to reappear, the air within the vicinity would suddenly be vacuumed and the location where he disappeared would be filled with air.

Both the air and the Mr. Wang were having a cross-dimensional space exchange, which happened as fast as lightning and occurred almost simultaneously. Therefore, such a feat would not be able to be witnessed by the naked eye. It was only possible if it were to be 7.5 times slower.

The whole disappearing and reappearing process took only 0.1 seconds. Nevertheless, Luo Yuan could estimate the location of his reappearance by looking at the air flow direction and the changes in light refraction.

Even though he kept teleporting to various unpredictable locations, what was strange was that the distance between the two spots was not getting any further; they were, in fact, getting nearer instead.

"Please stop, brother, I surrender!" After a minute, Luo Yuan finally caught the crazy Mr. Wang's hair. Before he could beat him up, his victim had raised his hands and shouted with an ingratiating smile.

## Chapter 316: Super Underground Space

---

Luo Yuan was panting as he had been running for almost four to five kilometers in less than a minute, which covered almost every part of the manor. The strenuous exercise had made his skin feel burning hot, his body scorching and his head fog up, which made him look like he had been set ablaze.

He held tightly onto the crazy Mr. Wang's hair and looked at him in the eye, coldly, before he released his grip, turned around and walked back. In the beginning, he was still gasping for air but after only a few steps, he had recovered and could breathe normally again. His flushed skin had turned back to its original color.

The crazy Mr. Wang was paralyzed on the floor, not recovering for a while. A flicker of fear flashed through his eyes when he was looked at Luo Yuan, as he walked away. The two onlookers stepped aside when they saw Luo Yuan coming over.

The godlike speed that he showed when he went after crazy Mr. Wang had impressed them thoroughly. Therefore, no matter how confident they were, they would be afraid to face such an opponent as skilled as Luo Yuan was.

He walked into the lobby of the first floor to pick up his Zhanmadao. Minister Ren and the other two members of the sword unit tagged along.

"I'm going to report this matter to the superior," Minister Ren said coldly. Even in all seriousness, anyone could see rather



plainly, that he was in a good mood. This incident had brought him great satisfaction, because these sword unit team members had been lavishly utilizing all the resources of Hope City, but never took their responsibilities seriously. They had been coming up with all sorts of excuses, and expressed dissatisfaction whenever they were asked to help, or to recommend a few people.

As he was the Deputy Minister of the organization, he was forced to come but each visit felt like it zapped a few years of his life away. Now, somebody was able to teach them a lesson, so that they would acknowledge that there was someone out there far more superior than they were, and will be more inclined to be humble. Particularly when he saw the formal look on their faces when the other two ran into Luo Yuan, he felt refreshed and relieved, as if he had drunk a glass of ice cold water on a hot Summer's day.

Of course, Luo Yuan would be a member of the sword unit soon, but for now, he was yet to be!

The other two did not care, and completely disregarded the superficial threats of Minister Ren.

"Hello, I am Li Dong. Pleased to be your colleague and teammate," a middle-aged man mimicked a welcome gesture, with outstretched hands.

He was short, only about 1.65 meters tall, but he had a big round head. In addition to his homophonous name, no wonder the crazy Mr. Wang called him [shorty Li](#).

Li Dong (李东) was also known as "shorty Li" because his name is

homophonous with Li Donggua (李冬瓜) Likewise, when someone is called Donggua (冬瓜), it means the person is short and plump. Li or 李, refers to the person's family name.

"I'm Xie Junbang. Welcome to our team," another member said. He looked about the same age as Luo Yuan, about 25 years old, but he appeared to be rather uneasy and shy when facing him.

"I'm Luo Yuan. Pleasure to be part of team," Luo Yuan politely shook the two people's hands.

As a saying goes, keep a low profile but let your work speak for itself. After humbling the members by showing off his abilities, Luo Yuan would have to keep a lower profile to quickly fit in. After all, the team members were not ordinary evolved people but were super evolved people selected from a large group of evolved people in the Reconstruction Area.

Even the crazy Mr. Wang who was beaten by Luo Yuan could easily kill any opponent that had slow reflexes, such as large-sized mutated beasts with low Agility, provided he had a strong attack power. Ergo, the crazy Mr. Wang could not get Luo Yuan because of his fast reflexes.

Being in power and holding a special position had caused many evolved people to be arrogant and vain. Having too high a profile would, in fact, cause others to feel slightly ostracized. When both Li Dong and Xie Junbang saw that Luo Yuan was friendly, they felt slightly relieved.

"Our team leader is currently not around, while our assistant team leader had brought Wu Qianru out for a mission. The only ones who stayed behind, apart from us, are Xu Qianshen and Fang Peobing," said Li Dong with a smile, as he introduced the team members to Luo Yuan. He then turned to Xie Junhui and asked, "Oh yes, do you know where they are?"

"They should be in the training room!" Xie Junhui replied, after a thought.

"Would you like to check it out? The training facilities are the best in the whole Reconstruction Area, after the headquarters at New Capital City. I'm not boasting, but you may not have heard of it," Li Dong kept Luo Yuan guessing.

"Now I'm curious. Is it nearby?" Luo Yuan laughed.

"It's located in another building, very close by," Xie Junhui summed up.

In just a short span of time, with the casual demeanor they had built, their relationship had improved. The three of them went out of the lobby together, towards another building. As poor Minister Ren was completely ignored, he had no choice but to tag along.

"Where were you previously? At the front line or the mining area?" Li Dong asked curiously. The evolved people of their department were mostly from these two areas. The front line had the highest number of evolved people, and so it was common to have one or two strong and powerful evolved people. On the other

hand, the mining area located outside the Reconstruction Area, had a large number of troops at the station, as their battles were more cruel and harsh. Therefore, the abilities of the evolved people were much stronger than those stationed at the front line.

"I just came here not too long ago!" Luo Yuan replied.

Luo Yuan response was rather unexpected to Li Dong. He stopped walking, and asked as if he had heard it correctly, "Just came? Just came to Hope City?"

"Just came to the Reconstruction Area; I was outside in the wilderness all this while." As the two of them seemed to be shocked, he explained, "Not the wanderer that you may think of. During the large migration, my city had been destroyed. Hence, we have been traveling this entire time, and only got here two months ago."

Li Dong opened his mouth in shock and was lost for words for a brief moment. As a member of the sword unit, their missions covered most parts of the area that were reachable by humans. He had certainly been in the wilderness a few times, but most of the time, he could only manage a peep from the plane.

The large world today, apart from human habitat, was covered by a large area of greenery. Traces of humankind, such as the high-density road network and the high-rise buildings in cities had already disappeared. Apart from parts which are no longer green, the ones left in green had remained a healthy green.

He could not imagine that someone could survive under such living conditions.

"Are there still any survivors in the area that was destroyed?" Li Dong asked.

"Probably not, we did not see anyone towards the end," Luo Yuan replied in a low voice.

The atmosphere suddenly became gloomy. After all, every one of them had lost contact with their family and friends. They were fortunate to be able to catch the last train, while many others were left behind, at the destruction.

...

Soon, the three of them had entered the building and went directly into the elevator. They pressed on the button to the fifteenth underground floor.

Luo Yuan realized that there were many buttons in the elevator. Nonetheless, it differed from the normal elevator, because it did not have any positive numbers at all. The negative numbers which began from negative one to negative fifteen, had shown that the underground space was very deep into the earth.

"Negative one to negative five are the warehouses; negative six to negative ten are the residential areas and the slightly polluted industrial area; while negative 11 to 12 are the agricultural areas.

The last three floors are currently still empty, in preparation for the increase in population and industrial expansion. Those factories you have seen along the road are the heavily polluted industrial areas," explained Minister Ren, as he knew Luo Yuan had just arrived and knew nothing much.

Luo Yuan gasped in shock. No wonder he saw only factories along the way, as the residents lived underground! The factories were only just a small part of Hope City.

Even it was just a small part of the city, Luo Yuan was amazed as it was many times larger than any industrial area he had ever seen. It was, after all, a giant-sized industrial area, of about 300 square kilometers.

For a city with a population of more than three million prior to the apocalypse, the workers involved in industrial factories usually made up about one-third of the population, while the other two-thirds were mostly from the service line. Nonetheless, there was almost nobody involved in the service line during the apocalypse. The ratio of the population of industrial workers was higher than 90%, comparable to a large city with ten million people.

It was an insane generation. If it were to be compared to the underground world of Hope City, the underground refuge was still simply a work in progress.

# Chapter 317: Models

---

After waiting for about a minute, the lift door pinged open.

Compared to Desert City which was layered with soil, Hope City had a rock stratum instead. Nonetheless, when Luo Yuan walked out of the lift and looked around, he was shocked to see that the rock stratum had been emptied, leaving a very large room with about a 10.56-meter-high ceiling supported by numerous huge stone pillars of five to six meters each.

The pillars were arranged in an orderly fashion like an army of soldiers, where its ends could not be seen.

Those stone pillars were coarse, unpolished, with pointed corners, which made it rather rough and sharp. Besides, each stone pillar was in a shape of a square, with a length of about forty to fifty meters on each side. At that moment, Luo Yuan felt that he was walking in an area occupied by the giants.

Although it was yet to be utilized, the water and electricity supplies had been laid out completely. With a dim light above his head, he saw a huge barrack nearby. It was conspicuous because it was the only building in the basement.

The barrack was built according to the location of the stone pillars and covered an area of more than ten thousand square meters. As the group walked rather quickly, they soon entered through the door, which had been set ablaze with light. Lou Yuan was surprised to see that it did not look like a training room, but a

playground with dinosaurs, except for a small corner where machines that seemed to be used for training were placed. This was because models of dinosaurs could be seen everywhere.

Some models were roughly carved, with only a recognizable silhouette, while some were lifelike and vivid. Nevertheless, all the models were extremely huge, as if they were an exact 1:1 replica of the real thing.

Before Luo Yuan could inquire, Li Dong had started to explain, "These models aren't just toys, but were made by our logisticians from the data regarding the target of each mission we received. They come in the form of images, pictures, and even satellite footage. With these, we can not only simulate its natural environment but also analyze its weaknesses, for us to better replicate a battle in formulating a plan."

This was the advantage of having sufficient information about the opponent, as it helped them gain the upper hand in their battles. Seeing that the whole area was full of fifty to sixty models, Luo Yuan asked with curiosity, "Have those missions been accomplished?"

"Well, these models were actually the missions that we are yet to finish. Amidst these models, as most are not located within the reconstruction Area, and despite carrying a certain degree of threat, it had no urgency to be completed.

Furthermore, some had appeared only once and then disappeared without a trace," Li Dong replied.



Luo Yuan nodded. At the same time, he was attracted by a large mutated beast's model. The model was unique and mysteriously aesthetic, as it was meticulously sculptured.

It was extraordinary and stood out from the rest even though it was found amongst the models of other mutated beasts.

It was put on jagged rocks of grotesque shapes, and its long and beautiful S-shaped neck looked down at Luo Yuan.

Its pointy mouth had slightly exposed buck teeth, while its sharp and narrow cheeks were covered with warts and bone spurs, like daggers, grown out from its lower jaw. This made it looked extremely ferocious and violent, hence, terrifying, although it was only a model. What surprised Luo Yuan was that it even had a pair of bat-like wings.

"What kind of beast is it?" Luo Yuan asked.

Li Dong stayed silent before he replied in a low voice, "It is the only highly dangerous beast we have here, and it is called a 'Giant Dragon', with about a level seven in strength. Four months ago, our team estimated its strength incorrectly, and sieged once but lost terribly. Six members of our team went but only two came back. One was the crazy Mr. Wang, and the other was our current team leader. That mission almost wiped out the whole team of Li Jian at Hope City. Xie Junhui and I then joined the team after that.

"This mission had been taken over by the headquarters at New

Capital City, but the model is still being placed here to teach the team a lesson, and also as a source of motivation."

"Has this mission been completed?" asked Luo Yuan.

"Maybe not, because the location of the beast remains uncertain. Normally, it will loiter around the forest near to Wei Guo City, without a fixed territory. However, we'd have to contact New Capital City for more details."

Luo Yuan was looking at the powerful model, which was suitable for him to level up. Since he now had one point added to his Will, he could no longer predict how strong he was, but he knew that level 6 beasts were not able to harm him.

If he could meet the beetle that emitted microwaves once again in Desert City's train station, they would not have to deal with this dire and fatal situation. He could manipulate his Will to perfectly combat its microwave radiation.

Furthermore, the stronger Will did not directly enhance his defense, but also his attack and speed. Besides, it had an immediate effect on his aura too. Previously, he could only harm light blue creatures, but now, even blue level creatures could not escape his wrath.

In addition, with the ability to fly now, his battles had changed from one fought in two dimensions to one fought in three dimensions. In other words, his battles would become more diverse and he would definitely have the upper hand over the beasts

which were incapable of flying.

...

As both of them were talking and walking, they soon reached the training area. Although there were more models available, there were also many machines of various sizes arranged in an orderly manner. With just a glance, Luo Yuan already knew the number of machines available.

There were 15 machines. Taking account of the number of people in the team - eight people, now nine, including Luo Yuan - it was definitely more than enough.

Comparing to the ordinary training machines prior to the apocalypse, these machines appeared to be strange and rugged. Luo Yuan did not even know what some of the machines were for, until he listened to Li Dong's introductions.

For example, there was a machine which looked like an industrial free forging hammer, which was actually used to train physical strength. There was also a machine that could automatically launch low-speed bullets for dodging training, a huge rolling ball to train the stabilization of the body and other odd things. Nonetheless, the machine that caught Luo Yuan's eye was the robot-like weight training machine.

Seeing that Luo Yuan turned to glance at that machine from time to time, Minister Ren said with humor, "The introduction of this machine that Mr. Li made was rather inaccurate. I am quite

familiar with this machine, to be honest. It is the latest product of our Military Research Institute, called the exoskeleton body armor. It is two meters high and about one ton heavy. Through the Total-Contact Photoelectric Sensing Device, muscular movements of the operator could be immediately sensed and reacted to. However, it is temporarily not usable as the study of its high-performance batteries were unsuccessful. Moreover, this product is currently only semi-finished."

Luo Yuan was shocked that technology in the Reconstruction Area was being developed at a tremendous speed over the past few years, under the pressure of human extinction. Various disruptive innovations and technologies had boomed.

If the exoskeleton body armor could be used by every soldier, humans would turn the tables and stand firm even if men could not carry out effective counter attacks. Meanwhile, the Reconstruction Area would no longer rely heavily on evolved people.

Anyway, both Li Dong and Xie Junhui had no reaction towards Minister Ren's disclosure. After all, the popularization of this thing would not affect these strong evolved people at all.

"They are at the gymnasium in front!" Li Dong said.

...

The two of them were seen fighting against each other, one was holding a saber while the other was holding a sword.

The saber was thick and heavy, while the sword was wide and big. Light weaponry and even long rifles were useless against large sized mutated beasts.

Luo Yuan realized that these evolved people who could stand out among the other evolved people consisting of about 100,000 were definitely outstanding. Regardless of their evolved abilities, their physical constitution was as good as Luo Yuan's, half a year ago.

From the fight, the Physique of the two were at about 14 points and one of their Strength could be stronger than Luo Yuan's.

With each moment the saber and sword hit against each other, it would produce an ear-piercing sound. As it was a practice amongst the team members, they used only wooden weapons. Nonetheless, the unknown level of wood appeared to be very strong as they were not broken, no matter how hard they collided into each other.

Luo Yuan found the fight boring and uninteresting, though it was considered exciting and capable of shocking ordinary men.

The reason why was not due to Luo Yuan's high Agility that made their actions seem slow in his eyes. Instead, it was because of their obvious flaws, that the rhythm of the fight seemed to be awkward and lagging behind.

"I want to stop, I want to stop already!" As they saw what was happening, Fang Peibing jumped out of the circle and walked over, after he wiped away his sweat with a towel.

Xu Qianshen was rather indifferent, as he simply nodded towards the crowd, and walked into the nearby bathroom.

Though Fang Peibing appeared to be relatively tanned and thin, he was not weak at all. His stripes of muscles were entangled together like a steel cable, squirming like a snake while he was walking, giving off a capable and vigorous vibe. He scanned through them and jokingly said, "All of you are here, my, my... it's so rare to see Minister Ren here too. Eh, who's this?"

"He is Luo Yuan, our new team member, and this is Fang Peibing, who we have spoken of before," Ling Dong immediately introduced.

Fang Peibing was slightly surprised to see the politeness of Ling Dong and Xie Junhui. He neither expressed a welcoming nor unwelcoming look, but sized up Luo Yuan. When he saw Luo Yuan holding onto his Zhanmadao, he expressed a wry smile and said, "Oh, you are using a saber too, mind giving it a shot on me?"

## Chapter 318: Apprenticeship

---

Luo Yuan paused, and burst into laughter out of nowhere. He was sick of people who were as stubborn and self-righteous as they were. First was the crazy Mr. Wang, and now there's another one. He would not be surprised if he were to meet more of their kind, in the future.

Seeing Luo Yuan's sarcastic smile, Fang Peibin felt an imminent sense of danger. He had goosebumps, and his muscles were stiff. Suddenly, his arms shook and when he looked, the wooden saber in his hand had vanished.

He was shocked. He tried his best not to take a step back and stared at Luo Yuan in all seriousness. Luo Yuan gripped the wooden saber, lifted it and touched the surface softly.

A dimmed glow sparked, and clouds of sawdust were falling like flour. He touched it with his palm again, and it was now a layer thinner, in a split of a second. He also played with the saber, it was now lighter and handier.

The people who were watching were not surprised at Luo Yuan's thinning of the saber using his bare hands. After all, besides Minister Ren, they were all evolved people, who were used to such abilities. What caught their attention was how Luo Yuan played with the saber, especially Fang Peibin, as he was watching Luo Yuan's every move without so much as a blink.

As compared to the other evolved people who were ordinary

people before the apocalypse, he was a master in a traditional martial arts school. Being an expert in all sabers, guns, sticks, and even boxing, he paid the most attention to the art more than anyone else did. From holding the saber to the position of the stance, Luo Yuan seemed to have mastered them all. He did it so naturally, exuding a strong elegance in his might.

"I'll just show you what I've got. There's no need for battling. I want us to be at peace with each other." Luo Yuan said in a relaxed tone. The people who were watching were relieved, as the tense atmosphere had simmered down immediately. Fang Peibin was confused. At the time, he did not know that Luo Yuan was giving him an out. Considering his ability to steal the saber from his hands without his knowledge, it showed how powerful Luo Yuan was. It was a sure loss for Fang Peibin, or, it was simply an oppression. Things would not look good on his side if they were to battle.

Luo Yuan then walked towards the gym and soon arrived in the middle of it. He then stood there. People were observing every move he made without blinking, as they did not want to miss a thing. Luo Yuan took a breath, his body became blurry for a second, and a sharp whistle sounded at the same time. A white line flew by indistinctly, before vanishing in a blink of an eye. Luo Yuan then appeared back at the spot he was before as if he did not move a muscle at all.

Everybody looked at each other in shock. Although Li Dong and Xie Junhui had witnessed how fast Luo Yuan was, they had not seen one as fast as that, as it was unable to be traced by the naked eye.



However, when Luo Yuan attacked just now, all they could see was a blurry shadow moving with the saber, like lightning, and the next second, he was back at his original spot. Everything was done in one go, rather smoothly. From silence to movement, the attack was over in a blink of an eye. It was akin to a cobra that was ready to catch its prey.

The speed when one ran and attacked were of a stark difference. Before the apocalypse, there was a trained boxer whose punching speed was 20 meters per second; it was almost twice the speed of his running. Through the realization of the system, Luo Yuan could move 80 percent of his body muscles, while his speed of attack could go up to four times the speed of his running. His attack speed was approximately 200 meters per second, which was 720 kilometers per hour.

The rest could still see Luo Yuan during his attack if they tried very hard, but to Minister Ren who was an ordinary person, he saw nothing. He could only hear the sound of something moving. Next, Luo Yuan performed some basic movements with the saber. There was a distinct pause to every move, and strokes of white Qi were created by the stimulation of airflow. The Chi was different from the glow made by the gathering of Will power. It was due to the fast-moving tip of the saber, which broke the high-speed airflow.

It was the first time Luo Yuan witnessed the saber's Chi. As his Zhanmadao was extraordinarily sharp, there was little air resistance when in use. It would only happen for sabers that were as blunt as this one. The saber's Chi did not only affect the speed of swinging, but its power was limited too. The best it could do was to leave a scratch on a rock. It paled in comparison with the saber

glow, and might not even be effective for mutated beasts that were blue-level and above.

After the first round, Luo Yuan's movement became coherent. The air nearby started to tremble, and dust was all over the place. Clear strokes of white lines were dancing in the gym, coming and going. More and more of them appeared; they were getting dense. Eventually, a web was formed.

The people kept moving back, and the intense pressure slowly disappeared when they were 40 meters away.

As Xu Qianshen came out of his shower, a strong wind blew towards him when he was at the door. His cheeks were hurting. He was stunned and used his hand to perform a wave. The wind then disappeared immediately. Soon, he was attracted by what was happening at the gym. He was impressed with what he saw and did not blink while watching the shadow.

Luo Yuan's movements were astonishing. Each and every move he made was swift and natural, with a touch of elegance. It was addictive to watch. Soon, Luo Yuan suddenly stopped in his tracks. The performance went on for a full three minutes, but to the audience, it seemed like only a short moment had passed. Some of them were disappointed with such a brief performance. Fang Peibin slapped his own thigh and said, "I should've recorded it!"

"A normal camera is useless here. You might need to use a high-speed camera." Li Dong mumbled, still stunned. The team had welcomed someone extraordinary, so much so that they were even wondering whether or not their captain was stronger.

"We can always request for a high-speed camera, but I don't think we need to go through that trouble. Since we are a team, we can consult you anytime, we can even be your apprentice." Xie Junhui said in excitement while walking over to Luo Yuan with admiration. Fang Peibin was embarrassed for provoking Luo Yuan earlier. Even if he had unleashed all his powers, with such a breakneck speed, he was better off digging his own grave.

As Luo Yuan walked towards his direction, he felt slightly awkward. "I didn't introduce myself, so let's do it now. I'm Luo Yuan," he said with a smile. "I saw both of you training earlier, there's something wrong with your technique. It seemed like you picked up some bad habits in your initial training, which has hindered your ability to unleash your full potential."

Although Fang Peibin always had a smile on his face, his temper was bad. If those words were said by someone else, he would have been furious and rolled up his sleeves in anger. However, after seeing Luo Yuan's amazing performance, the man who he tried to provoke, he was excited.

"Brother... Brother Luo, I realize it now, is it too late to change?"

"Just call me Luo Yuan, that will do. You can change, but it would be even harder than a beginner level, as you'll have to train from the very start." Luo Yuan said with a wave. Fang Peibin was much older than him, being called Brother Luo gave him goosebumps.

"As long as Brother Luo is willing to teach, I will be willing to learn, no matter how hard it may be. Or maybe, I could be your apprentice." Fang Peibin looked at Luo Yuan with a burning desire. He was impulsive, he wanted to kneel down but was stopped by Luo Yuan.

Then, his body started to tremble, and he managed to break free from Luo Yuan's grip. His strength was extraordinarily mighty, despite his skinny body. He managed to kneel on the ground and gave Luo Yuan three loud and hard kowtows.

He was a traditional martial artist. As a veteran, he knew the rules of apprenticeship. "Please accept my kowtow to you, master." Luo Yuan felt helpless. This time, he could not run away. Since Fang Peibin had already kowtow-ed to him, he hesitated and said, "Alright, you can get up now!"

"Yes, master!" Fang Peibin said with respect. "The ceremony was simple, I hope you won't mind, master. We will do a proper one when the captain and vice-captain are back."

Xie Junhui was pouting at the side, clearly not happy that his suggestion was snatched by someone who was reluctant. But to a young man who received a modern education, he could not bring himself to kowtow to anybody like how Fang Peibin did.

"Let's skip the trouble, we don't have to be so serious." Luo Yuan looked at the respectful Fang Peibin, who was twice his age. It felt like he was establishing his own clan.

## Chapter 319: Mishap

---

Not long later, Minister Ren received a phone call. He left immediately after saying goodbye apologetically to Luo Yuan. As Hope City Organization's deputy minister, he was usually stuck at work with very little spare time. It was impossible for him to spend his time there. Although Luo Yuan's administration filling would have to wait, it was just a matter of formality, not a necessity. It would not affect Luo Yuan in any manner at all.

The Firearms Bureau became the concentration camp for the super evolved people, while the influence of Hope City remained limited. Luo Yuan who had a strong pair of fists was naturally a member of the department. Furthermore, the dynamics he had brought to the team within half a day had cultivated a force without his knowledge m. Besides Fang Peibin who became his apprentice voluntarily, his relationship with the rest of them was still weak. At least he had made his mark there, where nobody could isolate nor exclude him.

As Luo Yuan was trying all the training facilities in the underground gym, the Exo-suit surprised him.

The interior of the armor was made with a layer of soft, translucent silica gel while the surface was equipped with a great number of sensors. It looked normal from the outside, just like how an ordinary silica gel would look, which was elastic and extremely tough to touch.

It covered his entire body including his head. There was a filtered gas mask on the mouth and nose for breathing purposes. Apart

from tightness in the chest, there was no problem in breathing at all. It was like putting on a thick sweater. The position for eyes on the armor was rings of oval, transparent crystals. Through the refraction of light, Luo Yuan noticed that his horizons had widened. Without turning his head, his field of vision was already almost 180 degrees. That was something new for him.

Unfortunately, the suit was incomplete. There was no battery, nor was there any ports for any power supply. He could not witness how powerful this suit really was. However, he was still able to move inside the suit and tried lifting his legs to move forward. Before his attempt, he was not aware how heavy the suit was. He then realized that it weighed no lesser than 200 kilograms to even take a step.

"Bang!" A loud thud was heard with his first step. It was an uphill task at first, but after a few steps, he picked up the momentum and was able to walk faster. The heavy footsteps were like a pile driver hitting the floor rhythmically, echoing in the spacious gym. Naturally, Luo Yuan's energy was lesser than a ton. As carrying and lifting a ton was completely different, while having his other leg to support him while he walked, the effort that was put into it was lesser than he had imagined. With his +15 Strength, as long as he did not jump, it was plausible for him to walk comfortably.

Next, he experimented with the arms. The structure was the same as that of human arms. They were very flexible and allowed him to grab almost everything in sight. Luo Yuan could imagine that as long as one had the suit on, even a slightly trained person with a cold weapon would be able to fight mutated beasts of a light-green level and below.

Just when Luo Yuan was enjoying himself, a message from the system burst his bubble.

"Grade D+ mission: Rescue Wu Qianru, Wu Qianru has fallen. Mission failed"

"Time limit: 8 hours"

"Accept / Decline"

"A Grade D+ mission!?" He was ecstatic to hear that such a level's mission had finally emerged!

Luo Yuan closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He realized that taking on a mission of such a level will not be as easy as he had imagined it to be. Since the apocalypse, he had never seen any dark-green level creatures before. He knew nothing about the attributes and abilities of creatures of that level.

"But, who is this Wu Qianru?" Luo Yuan then recalled the introduction that was given by Li Dong. Wu Qianru was also a member of the sword unit, who was on a mission with the vice-captain.

Luo Yuan rejected to take on the mission, as he did not want to be hasty. Everything was unpredictable. He did not even know where Wu Qianru was and had no idea what was going on. Furthermore,

the time was insufficient. With only eight hours given, a tiny mistake could hold up the whole plan. If one failed a Grade D+ mission, the deduction of experience points would be just a small number. That would mean that the effort he had put in would have gone to waste.

"What do you think, master?" Fang Peibin asked respectfully. "Not bad, but it's a little stuffy in here. Oh right, where did the vice-captain go? Why is he not back yet?" Luo Yuan asked. "They should be back soon, I think. They took the helicopter at 7 o' clock this morning," Li Dong said with an odd feeling. "It's just a small mission, intending mainly to train Wu Qianru, as she had just arrived here not long ago too."

Looking at Li Dong's expression, Luo Yuan knew what was happening. There were more males than females in the group, ergo, the ratio was imbalanced. Naturally, the female members would be doted by the rest. It should have been a relaxing mission but unfortunately, a mishap had occurred. The vice-captain was predicted to be dead, and if he did not take any action, Wu Qianru would be dead in eight hours. From past records, Luo Yuan had never doubted the system's accuracy.

He looked at the time and realized that it was almost noon. It was good news to him, as that meant that his destination was not too far away.

"It's time for lunch, let's go." Xie Junhui said, after looking at the time. A logistics staff ran towards them from the door. She was in a state of panic and was panting. "We have received an S.O.S from Ms. Wu!"



"What?" Everybody was shocked. Luo Yuan immediately asked, "What time and which location exactly?"

"It was five minutes ago. Here are the coordinates, 83.57773E, 40.08503N!"

Apparently, the staff was trained well, as she could report the numbers fluently.

"It's where the mission is!" Li Dong was worried, "But isn't that a common mission? The mutated beasts that they encountered were only of a level five. Oh yea, did you receive any signals from vice-captain?"

"No!" The staff shook her head. She looked upset.

"We have sent them a message, but have yet to receive a response."

"Maybe they haven't seen it yet!" Xie Junhui tried to comfort himself.

To avoid any disturbance during the mission, mobile phones were prohibited for all members. The signals would be sent through their watches, and there would be no notifications, for neither outgoing nor incoming messages.

"What's the use of talking so much now? Damn it, we only have two helicopters, but since the last crash, we are only left with one. Unfortunately, it has been taken by the captain. We'll need another one." Fang Peibin said loudly while walking around in frustration.

It was scary when Fang Peibin was furious. Although he was not blaming the staff, her face turned pale, "I will inform the military immediately!"

"There's no need to trouble the military, I'll go." Luo Yuan said suddenly. Everybody looked at Luo Yuan with curiosity.

"Mas... Master, it's 400 kilometers from here in a straight-line distance. No matter how fast you run, you will need one to two days. By then, it would be too late." Fang Peibin explained to Luo Yuan, thinking that he did not know how far it was. "Actually, any distance is a straight line to me!" Luo Yuan said with confidence.

Before he could finish his sentence, an invisible force field spread out from his body. His body started to levitate. Everyone's jaw dropped while looking at Luo Yuan levitating higher and higher defying gravity. The surroundings turned silent; they were shocked and did not move a muscle, akin to a solitary piece of rock.

# Chapter 320: Sinkhole

---

"Do you need any weapons?" Li Dong asked Luo Yuan.

"I don't need any!" Luo Yuan landed on the ground and swung the sabre in his hand to indicate that he already has the most powerful weapon around. "The only thing I need is to find the right location."

The destination was 400 kilometers away and there were no obvious signs anywhere of how to get there. Without directions, it was impossible to find it. Everybody was stunned as they did not know how to respond to that. Although they were all evolved humans, their powers merely served them during battles. They were basically upgraded super soldiers.

Furthermore, most of them did not possess the same terrifying lethality as Luo Yuan. Their powers could barely inflict damage on mutated beasts classified as super creatures. To be fair, if Luo Yuan did not have the ability to synthesize high-level weapons or gather his will, he was hardly any different compared to them.

"Master, you can use mine." Fang Peibin unstrapped the watch around his wrist.

There were no buttons on the watch as it was a touch screen! Fang Peibin carefully explained to Luo Yuan how to use his high-tech gadget. The watch could receive messages and locations from your close friends as well as isolate electromagnetic pulse.

Such gadgets were very common even before the apocalypse and almost every kid would own one. The difference between those owned by kids and Fang Peibin's was the ability to shield electromagnetic pulses which made it slightly heavier.

Luo Yuan accepted the watch and wore it on his wrist. As time was running out, he did not want to delay any longer and walked hastily to the elevator. The rest followed.

"If I don't make it back by evening, please go to the hostel and inform Huang Jiahui or Zhao Yali so that they won't worry about me." Luo Yuan said to Fang Peibin before he left.

"Don't worry, master. It won't take that long. We have a helicopter which will be here soon." Fang Peibin guaranteed him while wondering if the two women that Luo Yuan mentioned were his wives.

Luo Yuan looked at Fang Peibin, nodded, and then looked at everybody else. Next, he positioned his feet and stomped on the ground which rocketed his body forward like an arrow. Within seconds, he was already a few hundred meters away. When he landed, he stomped hard again and could no longer be seen by the rest.

Luo Yuan was basically just gliding through the air. With the help of his powerful stomps and levitation using his Will, he could maintain levitated in the air for a long time. Such a technique allowed him to conserve his physical strength and made him many times faster. It also minimized the usage of the power of his Will as the main factor that was affecting his speed was air pressure.

With the aid of his stomps every time he landed on the ground, his speed did not slow down at all. In fact, every time he stomped, a little more speed was added. Within a few jumps, he was traveling at more than 100 meters per second! The scenery around him was going by so quickly that his vision on both sides looked like one blurry long line. However, the sacrifice for such a technique was the lowering of Luo Yuan's Agility. This made it only suitable for traveling long distances and not for battling. When he is in the air, he loses his Agility completely. This would be deadly when facing an attack by mutated beasts'.

"What do you guys think that power was?" Li Dong was curious after seeing Luo Yuan travel so quickly before disappearing. He also felt relieved now as just standing near to Luo Yuan gave him immense pressure.

"I don't think that power is related to the wind as there wasn't any wind around him when he was flying. It seemed more like a magnetic power. It should be in the file. Too bad Minister Ren took it back." Xie Junhui gave his quick analysis on what they had just witnessed.

"What's the point of guessing? Let me just ask my master when he's back." Fang Peibin said proudly.

"Lao Fang, are you really his apprentice now?" Xu Qianshen could not help but ask. They were on the same team so he could not understand why Fang Peibin would say such things as it meant he offered himself to Luo Yuan.

"I'm a man of my words. I have already kowtowed to him, why would you still think I'm lying? If you mention this again, don't blame me if I flip out at you." Fang Peibin stared at him and said resentfully.

"Alright, alright. He's just asking." Li Dong tried to break the awkward situation.

Xu Qianshen had a very calm personality so he just offered a smile to Fang Peibin's remark as it did not bother him at all.

"You guys are amateurs that's why you don't know. My master's power is at the level of a grandmaster. I have never seen anyone who has such astonishing saber skills. Even legendary mythical characters would not even be on par with him right now. It's possible that he's even reached the level of a God!" Fang Peibin exclaimed.

"What kind of level are you talking about?" Xie Junhui wanted to know more.

"Um, I've never had such powers before so how would I know? It probably feels like you're stepping into a mysterious kingdom with unpredictable powers." Fang Peibin said while feeling slightly embarrassed for bragging.

"Unpredictable powers? We have that too! That means we are on the same level!" Xie Junhui bickered on purpose.

"It's impossible to explain this to people like you." Fang Peibin said with disdain. "We are all very lucky. My master is the real strong one. Haven't you wondered why my master has always been a lone ranger in missions?" Everyone was stunned and slipped into deep thoughts.

...

To save time, Luo Yuan would leap over buildings so that he could stay on the quickest route. As his speed was too fast, there were no other noticeable movements along the journey aside from a few workers who saw a flash which disappeared so soon, they thought they were seeing things.

Within five minutes, he had left the city and entered the wilderness. The scenery on both sides of his vision was flying by. Luo Yuan was as fast as an F1 race car going full speed. After passing plenty of electromagnetic towers on the barren land, he was soon in an area engulfed by lush plants.

50 minutes later, Luo Yuan checked his coordinates and finally stopped. There was a sinkhole nearby and the coordinates he was looking for were right there. While gliding through the air, he was already observing the situation. The sinkhole was massive!

Luo Yuan walked over to the sinkhole to have a closer look. He scraped some moss off the wall and noticed that this was not a sign of weathering the passage of time. Apparently, it was formed from the recent earthquake. The sinkhole was practically a bottomless abyss when viewed from atop. A cold and damp gust of wind would blow out of it on occasion and it made it feel like one was standing

at the gates of hell.



# Chapter 321: Strange Life

---

What Luo Yuan could not understand was why there were no traces of his teammates in the vicinity. If not for the directions on the watch clearly showing that his destination was located near the sinkhole, he would have suspected that it was a mistake.

He paused and frowned for a bit while thoroughly exploring the massive sinkhole. Soon, he found a slope at the corner. It was a rather unusual slope as it was so steep that it was almost vertical. From Luo Yuan's estimation, the steepness was around 70 degrees. The surface of the slope was wet with moss grown on strange-looking rocks surrounding it. It looked awfully slippery and dangerous and one would surely slip if they were not paying attention.

But to Luo Yuan, who could fly, the steep slope was nothing. What he needed was merely a place where he could land. Of course, he could choose to fly directly into the sinkhole but because it was dark and he had no clue of the terrain or mysteries that laid down there, he opted not to. If it were a common mission or even a Grade D mission, Luo Yuan would not be this cautious. However, this mission was extremely dangerous as it was the first ever grade D+ mission he had received which meant he might encounter a dark-green level super creature.

To enter rashly was to risk dying tragically if he was noticed by any super creatures. It was not unreasonable for Luo Yuan to be cautious under such circumstance with unpredictable enemies in the area.

Luo Yuan walked to the corner quickly. He focused his attention to the sinkhole, took a deep breath, and jumped into it. The path was very clear which allowed gravity to pull his body downwards very quickly. Three seconds later, he adjusted his body to help him slow down as he was traveling tremendously fast. In half a minute, he was in complete darkness.

It was a bottomless abyss which almost devoured all the light source. Even with Luo Yuan's low-light vision, he could hardly see anything in there. If not for his 'senses', perhaps he could not go on.

Luo Yuan suddenly stopped. There was no clear way forward anymore but he could sense that there was massive space beneath his feet. The sinkhole resembled of a giant gourd made of one big and one small ball.

Luo Yuan did not jump right in. Instead, he closed his eyes to listen quietly. The silence was eerie, and he could hear flowing water coming from below. It seemed that the end of the sinkhole was not too far away. However, he did not hear anything else.

Around a minute later, he opened his eyes slowly. He noticed that the mosses on the rocks were gone. Also, the usual creepy crawlies were nowhere to be seen. It seemed like there was no sign of life at all which meant that there was no danger too. But this was just on the surface. Luo Yuan reminded himself that it was extremely dangerous here!

He thought for a long time and finally decided to proceed deeper into the sinkhole. He inhaled a deep breath of air and jumped right

in! To his surprise, he landed lightly on the ground 10 seconds later. Strangely, it was not as dark as before when he had arrived at the bottom of the sinkhole. There were glowing rocks lighting up the place and they looked like fallen shining stars; it felt like he landed in the night sky.

Through the dim lights that lit the place, Luo Yuan realized that he seemed to be in a jungle. There were countless strange and crooked gray pillars standing high. They were so dense that the border was almost nowhere to be seen. It was inaccurate to call them pillars as they were more like fossils in the jungle. One of those fossils caught Luo Yuan's attention as it was broken. Luo Yuan could see that there were rings glowing in a jade-green color. Perhaps this place was a jungle hundreds of million years ago. Through the years, the jungle probably drowned in flood and sank to become a stone forest made of silicified wood.

Luo Yuan continued to move forward. He could see fossils from the Carboniferous period—a dragonfly that was six meters long and a giant centipede that was more than 10 meters long. Suddenly, Luo Yuan realized that the Carboniferous period closely reflected his current reality in that they were encountering a plant outbreak that occupied 50 percent of the world's reserve of coal as well as the gigantism of living creatures.

Luo Yuan gave it more thoughts but then scrapped off the idea as he realized they were incomparable in more ways than they were comparable. It did not matter if you were comparing the awfulness of living creatures or the prosperity of plants, the Carboniferous could never be compared to what was happening now. To say that Carboniferous was the era where different life forms were blooming was common but during the apocalypse, it was a

transition period for many life forms. A common life form could be evolved to a super-evolved life form within a few years. It was a mysterious phenomenon that could not be explained by existing theories.

Luo Yuan then heard flowing water coming from ahead of him. The strange thing was that Luo Yuan did not see any rivers nearby. Perhaps he did not notice any or maybe it was further ahead. Luo Yuan noticed that Wu Qianru's location was less than three kilometers away from him. He sent her a message but there was no response. It was totally understandable as the damn watch had no response or vibration when a message was received. If one did not look at it from time to time, it was impossible to notice any messages received. Though one thing was for sure, Wu Qianru was still alive as the mission had not been canceled yet.

The three kilometers distance was nothing to Luo Yuan and the super creatures. It was considered 'nearby' for them. Although Wu Qianru was 'near', Luo Yuan dared not put down his guard. According to the crappy system, there would never be any missions that could be completed by cheating. A Grade D+ mission would naturally have its own difficulty.

As time went by, the sound of flowing water was getting clearer. Suddenly, Luo Yuan stopped walking. Something shocking flashed in front of him that looked like mercury flowing towards him. It seemed to have a life of its own and slithered fast like a snake within the stone forest. Occasionally, it would hold up its head and move from left to right as if it was aware of what was happening in the surrounding.

It was enormous-around 15 meters long and half a meter wide. Wave-like ripples could be seen flowing on its skin. There was no clear anatomy to its body as it was not clear which was its head and tail; maybe it had none. If not for its lively appearance, Luo Yuan would not have suspected that it was a living creature.

Looking at the headless creature approaching him at a fast speed, Luo Yuan hid quickly. After the strange 'snake' passed by Luo Yuan, it did not stop and instead disappeared far away. Luo Yuan was stressed by what he had just encountered. This kind of creature was beyond his wildest imaginations. With its liquid-form body, a saber would prove useless against it. What stressed him more was the sound of water flowing. The closer he got to the 'snake', the louder the sound got. He climbed up on a giant silicified wood 10 minutes later and was slightly relieved.

A massive lake of a mercury-like-substance appeared 100 meters away! The lake was boiling like a pot of thick porridge and there were countless strange snake-like creatures that were detaching themselves from the border of the lake. There were also many more of those creatures that were coming back from all over the place and back into the lake. It seemed to be quite hectic there.

What gave Luo Yuan Goosebumps was a young lady that appeared to be sitting in the middle of the mercury lake. Perhaps the word 'sitting' was not accurate as in fact, apart from her chest and head, the rest of her body was submerged inside the mercury-like substance. What was even more unbelievable was the fact that she was still alive despite the look of numbness and despair on her face. Her skin was pale but she did not show any sign of pain on her face. Countless beads of mercury were seen spreading slowly from her chest and with that speed, her entire body would be

devoured by the mercury within a few hours.

## Chapter 322: Tricky

---

Behind the silicified wood branches, Luo Yuan saw a unique creature that he had never seen before. It was different from other common mutated creatures. Although the morphological form and capabilities of living things have changed tremendously since the apocalypse, most creatures could still be identified by human beings. For instance, a beast would remain a beast, a bird would remain a bird, and an insect would remain an insect even after they were mutated. This was especially true on the surface.

This mysterious life form was completely new and terrifying to Luo Yuan. Just as he thought about it, there was something happening to the lake of mercury. There was a two-meter-wide swirl forming just beyond the border of the lake. From afar it looked like it was five meters deep but the bottom was nowhere to be seen. Considering that the swirl was happening outside of the border, it showed that the lake was incredibly deep. Looking at its one square kilometer radius, this mysterious object was unimaginably massive.

A few seconds later, a ball-like object appeared on top of the surface. As time went by, the object turned out to be a human head and it looked just as if it was 3D-printed. Then, a torso, arms, legs and clothes were coming out gradually. The human body was so detailed and real that there was even a scar on its face. If not for its pale color, it would be no different than a real human.

Suddenly, Wu Qianru who was numbed by the mercury that was devouring her upwards from her chest, started struggling out of fear when she saw the appearance of the human body. However, the substance seemed to be extremely sticky. No matter how much

she struggled, her body was stuck and she could not move.

"That seems like the deputy team leader!" Luo Yuan thought to himself while watching from afar. This mercury lake did not seem to have an exact form. From the looks of it, its main ability should be cloning every living thing that it captured. Apart from the creatures that looked like a snake or earthworm, he did not encounter any other life forms. That was the reason why the lake was only able to transform into a snake or earthworm. Now that it had captured its second life form, a human being, it started cloning human beings.

The clone of the deputy team leader had no facial expression. Once it landed on the ground, it started moving like the mercury earthworm did. Luo Yuan had a clue of what the creature was up to.

It seemed that the purpose of the mysterious life form was to find ways of getting out of its cage. However, Luo Yuan had mixed feelings about his guesses. Given that this place was in the reconstruction area, Luo Yuan could not imagine the situation if it succeeded in getting out of this place. With sufficient time, it could produce a military of troops. And with more and more lives being captured, its size might expand and become deadlier. If it was not stopped immediately, the situation will get worse and the human who was already suffering would face even bigger challenges.

Looking at the cloning situation that was happening in the lake of mercury, Luo Yuan frowned. Facing such a massive yet mysterious life form, the saber that he had always been proud of was useless. Even if he could manage to kill one or two, or maybe



even a thousand of its clones, the lake itself was just too massive.

His head was telling him to return to Hope City immediately to report this matter to his superior. Furthermore, he had not accepted the mission so leaving would not bring him any trouble. As for Wu Qianru, they were just acquaintances. Prior to this, he did not even know about her. Even if she died, he would not feel guilty at all!

To be fair, Luo Yuan was never a loving person even though he often extended his help to others. He did whatever he could within his abilities but he would never risk his life to save someone. He looked at Wu Qianru with sympathy and proceeded to go into flight. As he began to fly, there were three 'human' clones that started running frantically.

Half a minute later, he stopped and looked to his left. There was a human clone climbing up the wall. Its speed was extremely fast like an agile ape. When its body touched the wall, there was a force that allowed it to stick on the wall. The shackles that the snake-like creatures had binding it to this place was now possible with this human form.

"I can't let this thing leave this place!" Luo Yuan's facial expression changed immediately. If the lake found out where the entrance was and escaped, the consequences were unimaginable. He was not sure if the clones were an independent lifeform, but he could not risk the possibility.

He leaned nearer to the wall quietly and then stomped on the ground with his feet. His body leaped forward the clones like an

arrow. The human-clones seemed to notice his movements and it jolted slightly. Perhaps it had been living underground for too long that it had lost its basic senses. Luo Yuan pulled out his saber and chopped off its head. However, it did not give any response.

However, his effort was futile. As the mercury was immensely dense and sticky, right after Luo Yuan's saber slashed it, its wound healed immediately. Luo Yuan had predicted that, so he did not panic at all. Before it could do anything else, numerous swings of Luo Yuan's saber produced a glowing blurred light which shone upon them.

The light flashed like a rainstorm and in almost no time at all, the human clone had received 70 slashes. It would be certain death for a common creature or beast but unfortunately, it had limited effects on the clone and it looked as though it was completely untouched. Its wounds had completely healed.

"I don't believe that I can't even handle one clone." Luo Yuan was stunned but most of his heart was occupied by anger. Ever since he arrived at the reconstruction area, his life was generally peaceful but his attributes did not stop increasing. Due to the changes that happened, his attributes were growing even faster than before. Compared to the time when he was facing certain death if he went up against green-level creatures, now he was eager to fight a dark-green creature. His attributes had grown more than ten-fold. Feeling powerless while facing this creature which could uniquely heal itself was extremely frustrating. After taking the brunt of so many slashes, the human clone finally noticed him. It attempted an attack but was slashed continuously by Luo Yuan once again.

He took a deep breath to try to calm himself down. The clone could hardly be considered as a strong enemy as it was merely between a dark-blue or light-green level ranking. That was nothing to Luo Yuan and all he wanted to know was how to kill it. Luo Yuan decided to ditch his plan to go back and started his experiments on how to solve this problem.

First, he utilized his will which was slightly effective. He chopped off the clone's head which fell and rolled on the ground. There was neither blood nor liquid coming out of the wound; it was a clean cut. The clone had now lost its mobility and it looked like a piece of metal. Its wound did not seem to be healing at this stage and it seemed to be completely damaged and lifeless.

But the clone's head was just an accessory. It could still move around without a head. Luo Yuan continued using his Will and sliced it into thin layers. Within seconds, the clone was only half-a-meter tall. What shocked Luo Yuan was that the creature was still alive! Only when it was left with a body the size of a palm did it suddenly roll into a ball and stop moving completely.

Luo Yuan stood there to analyze the situation. After confirming that there was no longer any danger, he picked up the object and put it on his palm. It was cold and heavy and had a 10-centimeter radius. It was a perfect ball weighing around five kilograms. As compared to when it flowed in the lake, it was now more solid. But if he were to grab it firmly, there was a flexibility to it which was unique.

The ground was filled with a whole bunch of tiny gray balls. Luo Yuan looked around and soon he found the head he chopped off.

To his surprise, it was transformed into a 40-centimeter tall mini human attempting to run back to the lake! However, it was a futile attempt as a swing of Luo Yuan's saber transformed it into two silver balls that were of similar sizes. He then used his identification technique on one of the tiny silver balls.

# Chapter 323: Weakness

---

"Bio-Metal (Remains of a mutated monster)"

"Rarity: Dark green"

"Weight: 6kg"

"Additional Ability: Energy absorption"

"Remarks: The mutated monster is a great imitator and a tough creature. The bio-metal that is flowing in its body is immune to general attacks as well as certain energy-based attacks. Its massive size can be easily broken down which improves its survival skills. It can be terrifying and there is nothing anyone can do about it!"

The message came from the system. Luo Yuan was stunned as he picked up a silver ball in doubt and gathered his Will. Suddenly, there was a fire burning on his palm. It was caused by his Will! The temperature was not high but it was at least 500 degree Celsius which would kill most living things.

However, no matter how the fire burned, there were no changes to the temperature of the silver ball on his band. After 10 seconds, the flame turned into an intense chill. It was so cold that the surrounding air turned into ice crystals - releasing a chilly white gas. 10 seconds later, he stopped what he was doing and his heart

sank.

He realized that the creature was so much more terrifying than he initially thought as it was immune to both physical and energy based attacks. It seemed that the majority of weapons would not be effective on it. Not only that, its cloning ability also showed that if any of the clones managed to escape, it could still live and grow bigger. That would be an endless nightmare for both the reconstruction area and the world.

Perhaps the only solution is to attack using a nuclear bomb. When a nuclear bomb explodes, the temperature from the core could go up to 10 million degree Celsius, which could make anything evaporate. No matter how stubborn this creature was, it would be evaporated as well. But this area was 400 kilometers away from Hope City and the nearest city was at most 20 kilometers away. The radiation from the nuclear bomb aside, the explosion in such an enclosed environment would affect the stratigraphy plates here that had just stabilized. It would cause yet another earthquake. The number of casualties would be uncertain given that there was no time for migration as the mutated monster was eager to leave this place as soon as possible.

With its cloning speed of one per minute, even Luo Yuan would not be able to handle it. After all, his Will was limited. With the speed that he had available to him and the rate of cloning, the most he could handle would be a hundred before he retreated.

Luo Yuan frowned as he squeezed the silver ball. At that moment, there were more than 10 mutated clones that were coming his way. Luo Yuan was getting more and more anxious. Looking at the

watch on his wrist, he still could not decide what his best plan of action was going to be. He had just joined the sword unit today but had yet to officially enrol. Therefore, there was nothing on his file. Although he wished to acquire a prestige in the team at Hope City, what he said carried very little weight. No matter how seriously he described the situation, the superior might not take it seriously. This was nothing to brush off as it could cause many casualties. It was not something that could be decided with a snap of a finger.

Moreover, even if they were to act now, there was not enough time. The mutated monster was cloning itself every minute and by the time the nuclear bomb was launched, there would be more than 10 thousand mutated monsters who would have escaped then sinkhole - spreading all over the reconstruction area. Cold sweat was dripping from Luo Yuan's forehead when he thought about the possibility.

Although he managed to kill a clone easily, to a common soldier or even most evolved humans, it was difficult for one to not be afraid when killing a creature. Something of this magnitude would be a brutal catastrophe and China would fall into a severe winter.

"It's impossible that the mutated monster is so strong! It must have its weakness!" Luo Yuan gritted his teeth and tried to calm himself down to think of the move he would make.

"The mutated monster exists in a fluid state... What are fluids most afraid of?"

"High temperatures or ice-cold ones." Luo Yuan thought to himself but soon he dismissed the thought as he did not possess the

ability to create super high or low-temperature environments.

The clones were arriving. Before they could come close to him, they were slashed by the anxious Luo Yuan at the speed of light. Looking at the silver balls that were rolling on the floor, Luo Yuan's eyes lit up.

"No, this is not really a liquid. It has a modular structure. Although it could flow and change at will, once its body unit is smaller than a certain threshold, it would cease any activity and die completely."

"The most important question is how do I separate them perfectly? The bio-metal of the mutated monster has a strong adhesion, which makes any attack from common objects or weapons futile."

Suddenly, a brilliant idea flashed in his mind!

"Earth Stomp! What could be more suitable to kill such fluid creatures than Earth Stomp!"

Although this theory still required some testing, most of the gloom in Luo Yuan's heart had subsided. Day by day he used his Will to train his physical body to the extent that every inch of his body to even every cell was imprinted with his Will. The complicated message in his cells had been organized by his conscious mind to the level where he could almost control them with his mind.



With just a thought, Luo Yuan's heartbeat synchronized with the earth's wave. In less than a second, he was completely in the Earth Pulse mode. A heavy yet majestic force was coming from the bottom of his feet and it spread throughout his body. The emotions in his eyes disappeared as he turned indifferent and cold.

At the same time, there was an indescribable force that spread in the air and made the atmosphere restless. He lifted his head and looked far away in front of him. Perhaps the mutated monsters finally sensed danger. Countless clones were coming from every direction at a terrifying speed! There were easily more than a thousand of them.

Luo Yuan started his attack by leaping a hundred meters away. Although there were many clones that almost filled up every inch of the space, at such a speed, they would never catch up to Luo Yuan. He arrived at the edge of the mercury lake after 10 seconds.

Suddenly, there was an uproar in the mercury lake! Waves were splashing and numerous whirlpools were appearing out of nowhere. A massive amount of cloning was happening at the bottom of the whirlpool. Despite facing such a reaction from the mutated monster, Luo Yuan did not break a sweat. He was waiting quietly even though there were clones coming near him. All he did was avoid instead of attacking.

The clones that he left behind were now coming back to him. There were more of them that lingered around at the lake. As time went by, the place became crowded with the clones. The scene looked like troops from an army that was coming for his life and there was barely enough space for anyone to stand a round.

Luo Yuan had to fly to avoid the attacks from the clones that were jumping beneath him. Although he was in a calm state, he could not help but feel lucky. The mutated monster had been waiting for life to come to it, which was the reason why it could not unleash its potential. High level mutated beasts aside, even if it only managed to capture low-level birds or insects, he could not let his guard down just yet.

"Run now! Leave this place! This is not something that you can handle.' The uproar had made Wu Qianru finally notice Luo Yuan. She looked at him in despair while shouting, "Report what is happening here, I hope there's still time."

Luo Yuan looked at Wu Qianru, but quickly got back to his own business. She was pissed that he ignored her and said, "You have no idea what you are dealing with. Not only are you harming yourself, you will harm the reconstruction area as well."

Wu Qianru saw the watch on Luo Yuan's wrist and knew who he was immediately. As powerful as he was, she did not think he could not handle such terrifying creature. It was too strong and was beyond human understanding about life. It almost had the power to rule the world.

"Shut up!" Luo Yuan said softly.

He found a gap and landed. The clones were coming towards him like stray dogs sniffing for food. Luo Yuan took out his Zhanmadao and struck them. The clones were cut in half with ease. While he

still had time, Luo Yuan lifted his right foot. His face was flushing red and the veins on his neck were bulging. There was a fearsome force boiling within him when... he stomped his foot on the ground.

"Bang!"

Ever since his Sense and Strength had gained +1 respectively, his Earth Stomp was upgraded to level-5. The force was more astounding than ever.

A loud thud was made and the earth shook immensely. Countless mutated clones nearby vanished the moment he unleashed the Earth Stomp and the lake looked like water that was being poured into a hot wok! Numerous silver balls were shooting out of the flowing lake. They fell from the air and rolled on the floor. They were not as active as they were before.

# Chapter 324: Rescue

---

With just an Earth Stomp, the clones that were within a hundred meters of Luo Yuan were wiped out instantly. Countless silvery-balls the size of green beans scattered all over the ground - making it a silver field. However, that was just the beginning for both Luo Yuan and the mutated monster.

The attack was nothing to the mutated monster which was almost a kilometer tall but it was enough to infuriate it. The mercury lake operated on its own and random vigorous whirlpools were appearing out of nowhere. Its density was as strong as steel. However, loud thuds were suddenly heard which sounded like rumbling thunder.

The creature's massive, liquid-form body had no way to fight back. The tens of millions or even billion tons of body weight made it hard to even move. Apart from accelerating the speed of cloning, there was nothing else that it could do.

To Luo Yuan who had basically won the battle, the lake was like a fish on the chopping board. The only thing left for it was to await certain death. Meanwhile, Wu Quanru who was watching from aside had lost her mood to be impressed by what had happened. The lake's waves were hitting her again and again. It felt like endless punches that were punching hard on her chest. In less than a second, she turned pale and there was blood coming out from her mouth.

She clenched her teeth and tried hard to hold on. The desperation had faded and there was finally a glimmer of hope that

rose inside of her. She tried her very best to lift her head in an attempt to prevent it from being buried in the wave of mercury-like liquid.

With every step Luo Yuan took, he would unleash an Earth Stomp. The continuous shock was causing an earthquake with a magnitude of 4 on the Richter Scale in the district. Countless gravel fell from the top which could make the sinkhole collapse. However, Luo Yuan could not care less.

Fortunately, the fluid was very dense and had a strong adhesive property which made its fluidity very poor. With every attack by Luo Yuan, the lake shrank, fast. Eventually, it turned into piles of inactive bio-metal. Imagine if it were like water... it would be impossible to destroy this monster even if Luo Yuan died of exhaustion from his attempts to kill it.

The force that was coming from the ground gradually decreased and the coverage of Luo Yuan's Earth Stomp became smaller. A sense of helplessness was rising in his heart.

There was a limit to the usage of Earth Stomp as it consumed both his Sense and Strength. By then, he had unleashed his power at least 50 times. He was nearing his limit, but there was still half of the mercury lake remaining. He attacked a few more times but then his heart jolted and he was detached from the Earth Pulse mode.

Luo Yuan's body was boiling hot and his skin was red while exuding a terrifyingly high temperature. He was breathing so hard that it was as loud as a bellow. He looked in exhaustion at the lake

that was still massive and then glanced at Wu Qianru who was a hundred meters away. He shook his head and was apologetic.

Perhaps the mission could not be completed after all. It would take seven hours for his Sense and Strength to recover, and by then, Wu Qianru would be dead. Noticing Luo Yuan's expression, she was stunned. Tears were rolling down her face and she had lost her will to live. Luo Yuan noticed that and immediately said, "Wu Qianru, never give up. Please hold on, I will be back to rescue you once I recover."

Wu Qianru was hopeful again and asked, "Will you be back?"

"I will be back, there's hope as long as you keep holding on. I forgot to tell you, I'm your new colleague. I would love to work with you!" Her hopes lit up upon hearing those words.

Although the fluidity of the lake was poor, it was in fluid form after all. It was possible that seven hours later, the lake would be restored to its original size. By then, there was nothing that he could do.

"Maybe you should do it quickly... I don't think I can take it any longer." Wu Qianru said while trying her best to smile.

"I will be fast, much more than you can imagine." Luo Yuan said. He continued, "Let me recover first... I will be somewhere nearby where you can see me."

Wu Qianru nodded though she could not stop crying. Luo Yuan flew up into the air slowly until he was 400 meters above the ground. He picked a pothole that he could fit in on the wall and sat down. Looking at the lake beneath, he sighed. He emptied his mind, closed his eyes and started to meditate.

...

Time passed quickly and Luo Yuan woke up not knowing how long he had been meditating for. Looking at the time, he was shocked! Five hours had passed and there was only half an hour left to complete the mission. He stood up immediately and flew down at the speed of light.

The lake was in a calm state by then. Although the radius of the lake did not restore to its original size, it was at least three-quarters from it. Wu Qianru who was previously already at the edge of the lake was brought back to the middle. Her eyes were half closed and it seemed like she had fallen asleep. Her face was as pale as a piece of white paper, and the level of liquid in the lake was almost at her chest. Countless silver granules were seen on her wounds.

At that moment, Luo Yuan had accepted the mission. If it were not for the mission status that did not say anything about failure, he would think that Wu Qianru had died. Sadly, she was nowhere better and could hardly hold on any longer. He was stressed because although his Strength had been fully restored, his Sense had only recovered by two-thirds. Under such conditions, it was impossible that he could rescue Wu Qianru.

"There must be other ways!" Luo Yuan thought to himself while

looking at the lake across him. Suddenly, he realized something. Although this creature was different from common creatures, they had one thing in common where they possessed a 'soul' of sorts. Although its level was high, Luo Yuan's observations of its pattern and intelligence suggested that it was still primitive like a mutated bug. After all, it was evaluated as a dark-green life form by the system. There must be a fatal weakness and Luo Yuan guessed that it was its low sub-attributes. If that was the case, things would be simple. A primitive life would not be able to withstand mind control.

He subconsciously eliminated this technique as he had a love-hate relationship with it. What he loved about it was its power which was unimaginably strong where creatures without sufficient Will would not be able to handle it. What he hated about it was that the consequences were severe. The migraine that comes after it was nothing, what worried him the most was that something would happen to his four-dimensional vision. The endless, overwhelming messages in the fourth-dimensional world was nothing fun. If it was serious, it would destroy your soul or at the very least, clog your brain.

Then again, he could not care anymore. Perhaps there would not be any serious consequences if he only did it once. He rubbed his cheeks hard and took a deep breath. The sense around him was pressing against his mind at full force. Soon, there was a bulging feeling in his mind. He clenched his teeth and walked quickly to the lake while the pressing continued.

Suddenly, something happened... As the sense around him was flooding his mind like flowing water, his eyes were filled with colorful illusions. The plasma headband that was tied onto his



forehead lost its effect. Out of nowhere, his mind went blank and he even lost his senses for a moment.

When he snapped out of it, he stumbled and almost fell on the ground. He was exhausted and felt like he could not fight anymore. Something mysterious seemed to happen when he lost his senses but he did not have the mood to consider that now and quickly looked back at the silver lake.

He was stunned to see that the lake was solidifying at an alarming rate. Within a few seconds, the lake had completely stopped its activity and turned into a massive piece of silver metal. There were solidified folds of waves on top of it. At last, joy was present on Luo Yuan's face. Carrying his Zhanmadao, he staggered to Wu Qianru.

# Chapter 325: Peculiar Evolved Ability

---

"Wake up! Wake up!" Luo Yuan patted her cheeks softly while saying loudly.

Wu Qianru had no response, her face was pale. He checked on her breathing but it was barely there. Her skin was as cold as a dead body, she was dying.

He did not hesitate and used his Will to heal her immediately. His palms which were placed on her back lit up dimly. As if she was given an intracardiac injection, there was color on her face again. However, there was no sign of relief on Luo Yuan's face.

Her condition was terrible. With what little remaining Sense he had, major parts of her body had been destroyed. The lower body region was totally destroyed as the mercury lake affected her body up to her chest. It had been eight hours since the incident happened. It was a miracle that she was still alive.

As she was slowly recovering, Luo Yuan quickly used his Zhanmadao to remove the metal that had just been solidified in her body. Although Luo Yuan had sensed it earlier, it was still painful to watch.

It was as if she was being sawed in half, her wounds were gray in color and there was no blood coming out of them. Numerous metal granules that were attached on her wounds, giving Luo Yuan goosebumps.

There was nothing Luo Yuan could do to such horrifying injuries. The only thing he could do was to apply his Will onto the wounds while he hoped for a miracle. It was not just a life as it would also be the deciding factor on whether the mission was successful or not.

A few minutes later, Wu Qianru opened her eyes slowly. Perhaps she had lost a large amount of blood so her eyes looked dead and dry. She looked like a corpse. Turning to look at Luo Yuan, Wu Qianru was feeling emotional as she was trying to speak.

"Easy there, slow down." Luo Yuan said to her immediately. Under such conditions, she should not get excited any further.

Wu Qianru nodded as she struggled but she still managed to force a smile. However, her expression was stiff as she tried to lift the corner of her mouth slightly.

Finally, she managed to speak, "You... finally...came back."

"Sorry that I was late." Luo Yuan was sad, "Do you have any last words, or family

members who need to be taken care of?"

Wu Qianru shook her head softly and said in difficulties, "Can you... carry me outside?"

Luo Yuan nodded and said softly, "Of course I can."

She was dying, it was her last wish. Luo Yuan had to accomplish it no matter what happened. He did not hesitate at all, he lifted Wu Qianru who lost her lower body and most of the blood in her body. She was so light that it felt like nothing but she seemed to be losing it, her eyelids were closing. Luo Yuan transferred more Will into her the moment he noticed.

"Hold on, don't fall asleep." He said while she fell into a daze. Once her eyes closed, that would mean that she was passing. Perhaps her life was coming to an end as Wu Qianru began to lose contact to the outside world. Even the healing had no effect on her any further as her eyelids seemed to get heavier and seemed like they were going to be closed soon.

Then, Luo Yuan used his fingernails on the right hand and scratched at his wrist in lightning speed. A bloodstain appeared and he placed his wrist near her mouth immediately. Thick, bright blood flowed into her mouth like water. Luo Yuan's life force was no different than that of a light-green level creature. His flesh was filled with life and within minutes, there was color on her face again.

Seeing that his method was working, Luo Yuan was relieved. However, he was very clear that it was just delaying her inevitable death and it would not last much longer. Half a minute later, he was feeling weak so he stopped feeding her his blood. The blood on his wound stopped flowing and soon, the wound was automatically healed. Besides a little blood, there seemed to be no scar at all.

"Wake up, we will be out very soon," Luo Yuan said as he patted

her cheeks. Wu Qianru did not say anything, she was just staring at him. It seemed like she had a lot of emotions that she was not able to express.

...

The difference between carrying a person and being a lone ranger was like heaven and hell. Especially when he had 60 kilograms more on him, he could not fly using his Will anymore. He could only walk step by step on the steep on the wet cliff which was challenging. Many times, he almost fell off the cliff.

Despite all that, his speed was stunning. He was like an agile ape leaping on the wall. His speed was a few times faster than an ordinary person with the limit of 100 meters. Within a few minutes, he made it to the entrance of the cliff that was thousands of meters high.

With the help of his Will, he leaped lightly and landed slowly on the ground.

"We're outside now." Luo Yuan said solemnly. It was night time where the moon was bright and insects were buzzing.

Suddenly, from her idle state, Wu Qianru struggled and said weakly, "Put... me... on the bushes.

Luo Yuan could not decline her request. He exuded his aura to chase away the insects around and placed her softly on the bushes.

Although the place belonged to the reconstruction area, during the apocalypse, plants were the most stubborn organisms. They were everywhere, lush, green and lively. Luo Yuan took a quick look at the mission panel as well as through his four-dimensional vision. His head ached as he forced out a smile. The mission had him suffer big time. Not only was the mission incomplete, the deepening of his four-dimensional vision changed from 1% to 2%. Fortunately, the plasma headband was still functioning though he may have to rely on the band forever.

At this point, regrets were of no use. He sighed and looked at Wu Qianru. Luo Yuan was stunned.

Unsure of when it happened, Wu Qianru's body was red, it was as if she was on fire. Her condition seemed strange as she looked exuberant. Her dry eyes were now watery and her skin was soft and shiny.

On the contrary, the plants of the surrounding were turning yellowish and withered from their initial, lush green. The withering did not stop.

Luo Yuan took few steps back, he was shocked, "I didn't know there's an ability where one could absorb and convert the lives of plants!"

Time was passing by, the withering effects she seemed to have on the plants spread more than 10 meters away. The metal granules attached on Wu Qianru's wound was slowly falling off as her

wounds began to slowly show color.

It was just the beginning as something even more shocking happened.

Her wounds were healing at a tremendous speed. Countless pieces of flesh came together and formed pieces of new flesh. Even her bones were growing, though it was much slower than the growth of her flesh.

Unfortunately, that did not last too long. The healing slowed down and eventually stopped.

"I need to feed, a massive amount of food." Wu Qianru said with a shaky voice. Her forehead was filled with sweat as it seemed that such healing effects were not enjoyable. The pain would be unbearable to ordinary people.

"Okay, give me a minute." Luo Yuan said as he snapped out of staring at her blankly.

Being able to heal herself did not appear out of thin air especially since her lower body was already gone. It consumed a tremendous amount of substance and energy. It was insufficient to rely on the amount of nutrients she had in her body at that time.

Luo Yuan was quick as within minutes, he brought two low-level mutated beasts back with their necks snapped.

Looking at Luo Yuan, Wu Qianru blushed as she felt uncomfortable. She said, "Could you turn around?"

Luo Yuan nodded and turned around. Apparently, it was shameful for a lady to chomp down on a beast in front of somebody.

...

The night was getting dark but the helicopter had yet to arrive. The message on the watch showed that Fang Peibin and the rest were still arranging. With the vibrations of the Zhanmadao, fire burned and sparks flew with a cracking sound. A low-level mutated beast was baked to a crisp golden brown and its fats dripped onto the flame.

Wu Qianru was sitting in the bushes and she seemed shy. A dress made of leaves were tied on her waist but it did not cover everything on her body. Her round and plump buttocks, fair and long legs as well as her looming private part were seductive. The situation was awkward, Luo Yuan was uncomfortable.

Before this, he did not think that Wu Qianru was beautiful. After all, who would look pretty if she had lost blood and her skin was dull. Moreover, she was dying and there was no beauty in it. However, the fully recovered Wu Qianru was delicate and glowing. With her messy outfit and revealing body, it was hard to resist. She looked young, perhaps she was only 18. But as a super evolved person, one's appearance was often deceiving where one often seemed much older or younger than one looked.



# Chapter 326: Returning

---

"Current Mission: Grade D+ mission: Rescue Wu Qianru.

Wu Qianru has fallen. <Mission failed; Time limit: 8 hours; Accept / Decline;"

"Mission status: Completed; Evaluation: Perfect."

"Character: Luo Yuan"

"Completion: 100%"

"Basic experience reward + 19200\*100%!"

"Evaluation: Perfect - Experience value + 19200\*100%!"

"Experience: 82320/153600!"

A message from the system popped up in his mind. Luo Yuan took a glanced and broke the silence, "I haven't introduced myself, I'm Luo Yuan, your new colleague."

"Hi Brother Luo, my name is Wu Qianru. Everybody calls me Qianqian." Before Wu Qianru started talking, she was blushing. She said shyly while running fingers through her hair. The

condition she was currently in was slightly embarrassing. She was ashamed of her naked body.

Luo Yuan did not look at her while he was engrossed in preparing the food for her.

"Now we know each other. Oh, would you like more food?" Wu Qianru's cheeks flushed a shade of red. She shook her head immediately and said with embarrassment, "You go ahead and eat, I'm alright!"

If there was a hole on the ground, she would totally get into it. She was worried that Luo Yuan might misunderstand her, so she explained her actions, "Actually... I don't usually eat much."

"There's no need to be formal with me. You should eat more since you've just recovered and are still weak. We have a long journey ahead of us." Luo Yuan said.

"Oh!" Wu Qianru bowed down her head and said obediently. She was actually hungry as the food she ate earlier had been completely digested to make up for the loss of nutrients when she healed herself. Moreover, as there was insufficient food, the newly grown limbs were soft and strengthless. It was not comparable to the strength that she used to have.

Luo Yuan tore off a thigh of the mutated beast that was baked to a golden brown and gave it to her.

Wu Qianru ate it politely while stealing looks at Luo Yuan. He was tall and from the look of it, he was at least 183 centimeters. His skin was fair and smooth like that of a baby. Under those straight and thick eyebrows were a pair of beautiful eyes. He was gentle when he smiled, giving out a comfortable vibe but when he was serious, there was an intense power that brought fear to people who stood against him.

"If he was to come at me, I guess I wouldn't dare push him away." Wu Qianru had a random thought before she got disgusted by herself as her face flushed red, "What's wrong with me today? Have I been possessed?"

"How long have you been with the sword unit?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Around three months!" Luo Yuan's question interrupted her internal embarrassment. Wu Qianru added immediately, "I was the reserve member of the Headquarters in New Capital City."

Luo Yuan was slightly surprised, "You joined the department that early?"

"I was the second batch of the reserve member in the department!" Seeing Luo Yuan surprise, Wu Qianru could not help herself but be proud of herself. She then sighed and said, "Unfortunately I wasn't improving and couldn't get into the headquarters, so I was sent here."

Realizing that what she said could be offensive, she added, "Please don't take it the wrong way, I... I don't mean that the team

in Hope City was bad. Our captain was actually really strong, and then of course, there's you."

"You don't have to explain, I'm not that petty!" Luo Yuan thought that she was funny. He looked at Wu Qianru, he lowered down his estimate of her actual age. She should be the same age with Wang Shishi.

"From what you said, are there many strong ones in New Capital City?" Luo Yuan asked in curiosity.

"Of course. It was the headquarter after all where they keep watch of the security. Especially the deputy minister, his ability had reached a level where it became bizarre. According to a captain who told us privately, the deputy minister is humanity's hope!" Wu Qianru talked about the deputy minister in admiration.

"Then how about the minister?" Luo Yuan was surprised and proceeded to ask more.

"The minister is not an evolved person, he was sent by the superiors." Wu Qianru said in a neutral tone that seemed to have no additional respect nor disdain.

Now Luo Yuan understood what was happening. It was impossible that the strongest evolved person organization that owned the entire reconstruction area would allow an evolved person to take control. The supervision by the superior as well as his intervention were understandable.

As they talked, Luo Yuan found out from Wu Qianru that there were not coming for the mutated monster that he battled, but for another mutated creature instead. It was just their luck that when they arrived here, the mutated beast was gone. They looked around and found this sinkhole; it was the vice-captain's decision to explore the sinkhole.

Being a harmless beauty and taking advantage of the fact that the girl was naturally afraid of the dark, it was the perfect chance to hit Wu Qianru up. Of course, all of it was made up by Luo Yuan.

From what Wu Qianru described, the vice-captain's ability was similar to Luo Yuan. The both of them belonged to the earth based evolved humans where they excelled in ground battles. The vice-captain even had the ability to escape underground; an ability that existed only in myths but it was even better, he could bring a person with him.

Such evolved people had strong survivability. No matter what happened, he could defeat a common creature without breaking a sweat but unfortunately, when he and Wu Qianru had just met, he was attacked by one of the mutated monster's clone. Its flowing body and adhesive properties, as well as its immunity to both physical and energy based attacks, made no way for the vice-captain to run despite his strength.

Although Wu Qianru tried to save him, it was futile. While her ability was plant-related, there was nothing that she could do as she was stuck underground where there were no signs of life. As more and more clones surrounded her, she was captured too.

The sound of helicopter blades approaching from far away was getting louder and louder. Wu Qianru was relieved but at the same time, she felt lost. She was not sure what she was feeling.

The helicopter landed slowly, but the bushes were still blown into chaos. Before it even landed, a person leaped down from it.

"Master, sorry that I'm late." Fang Peibin said embarrassedly, "The military has been shifting the helicopters. We have been talking to them for half a day but they were not willing to lend it to us. We borrowed this one from the municipal government."

Fang Peibin looked a little beaten up from the experience. Although the Firearms Bureau was a big deal and the municipal government dared not decline them, they were nothing compared to the military. Luo Yuan asked, "Is there anything happening in the military area?"

"Just some duties. It's pretty common over there." Fang Peibin said in disagreement.

Looking at Luo Yuan and Fang Peibin, Wu Qianru was stunned. What was happening? Brother Luo had just joined the team, how could he be Fang Peibin's master?

She was surprised to see the rebellious Fang Peibin being so respectful.

"Oh, by the way, Master, where is the vice-captain?" Fang Peibin

noticed that only Luo Yuan and Wu Qianru was there but not the vice-captain, he knew something was wrong.

Luo Yuan shook his head, "When I arrived, he was dead."

Fang Peibin was shocked. He kept quiet for awhile and said, "How can he just leave like that, what about the money that he owes me?"

...

Before they left, Luo Yuan picked up some of the metal granules that were detached from Wu Qianru's wounds and put them in his pocket.

# Chapter 327: Wait No More

---

The journey took more than an hour. It was 9 p.m., the helicopter landed on a helipad at the Firearm Bureau's courtyard. Many people were there; basically, all the members of the department were there. Even the crazy Mr. Wang came, but he was avoiding eye contact with Luo Yuan, apparently afraid since the last fight he had with Luo Yuan.

"Luckily Brother Luo went for the mission! are you okay Qianqian?" Li Dong asked Wu Qianru while smiling.

"It was Brother Luo who saved me." Wu Qianru said while blushing, she had Luo Yuan's sweater tied around her waist.

A few of them came forward to talk to Wu Qianru, they scared her to the extent that she hid behind Luo Yuan. Only then they stopped.

"Eh, Lao Fang, where is our vice-captain?" Finally, someone noticed that the vice-captain did not make it back.

"He's dead." Fang Peibin said while sighing, "Li Dong, remember to inform the staff and his family members, there'll be a wake for him!"

Everybody was quiet at looked at each other.

Li Dong was panicked. He looked at the rest and said, "Why me?"



The captain isn't here, how can I go beyond his authority. Let's wait for the captain to come back. As for the family members, maybe we can delay it a little?"

"You guys can decide, I don't bother with all these formalities anyway." Fang Peibin said.

Luo Yuan was watching from aside. It seemed like this vice-captain that he had never met was not that close with anybody here. Apart from the shock they had from his death, there was no sadness around. It felt like a stranger's death.

Li Dong looked at Luo Yuan with more respect than he did with Fang Peibin," Brother... Luo, what happened there, how did it end up like this?"

"About that, you should ask Qianqian. It's late, I'll make a move first!" Luo Yuan refused to talk as he looked at his watch because explaining the whole situation would take a long time. That aside, he was not sure what time he could finally get some rest when he got home. As Luo Yuan was leaving, he recalled something. He took out a metal granule that was a size of a thumb and tossed it to Li Dong, "Oh, please help me look for a professional to run tests on this, it could be useful."

Such material was by far the highest level material that he had ever encountered. Unfortunately, it was useless to him as the texture was soft and could not be added onto his Zhanmadao. Besides that, it was also too heavy to be added onto clothes.

However, that did not mean that there was no use for such material. As it was evaluated as a dark-green level material by the system, its features would definitely exceed the limits of all common metal materials. Its ability to absorb energy and ability to maintain room temperature under severe levels of heat had already beaten all other metal. Instead of being just a soft metal, its texture was elastic with a shocking amount of tenacity. Besides, it had other characteristics of organic materials and it could only be cut using a green level Zhanmadao with the help of Will.

Moreover, its density was between that of iron and aluminum, but was much lighter than iron. Using it on tank armor alone would give a several-fold increase in acceleration as well as better defense. Of course, such things would never happen. Most importantly, there was sufficient amount of such metals as there were ten of millions of these granules in the sinkhole. In a day where the speed of industrial progress depended on materials, as soon as this metal was exploited, it had the power to change the world.

Li Dong took over the metal and laugh, "Don't worry about it, I'll look for some metallurgical related corporation to look at it tomorrow."

Luo Yuan was not concerned whether Li Dong and the rest would value the material. As soon as they got to know from Wu Qianru, they would definitely understand how valuable it was.

"You guys go ahead, I'm making a move," Luo Yuan said.

"Master, let me drop you back!" Fang Peibin said immediately.

Luo Yuan waved and leaped more than a hundred meters away. After a few leaps, he disappeared.

Looking at Luo Yuan's departure, Wu Qianru's eyes were watery.

...

Into the night, Luo Yuan was rolling on his bed as he had trouble falling asleep. He recalled the time when he was using mind control and no matter how hard he tried, there were no memories he could recall from that time. From what he remembered, he tried to recall the difference between the first and second time he use mind control. He realized that one of the differences was that his mind went blank as well on the first time but only for a short period of time. However, during the second time, although he could not tell how long it was exactly, it felt like a long time went by. When he woke up, he was light-headed and his mind was empty.

He was a little concerned. Ever since he attained his four-dimensional vision, things were slowly getting out of control. The 'third eye' between his eyebrows could not reverse his transformation to be able to peer through the four-dimensional veil. He would not mind if it did not affect his body but unfortunately, having four-dimensional vision was akin to poison for three-dimensional creatures. It was an unbearable burden.

This time, he only used it once and the depth of his four-dimensional vision went from 1% to 2%. Although it looked like it

was nothing, but it was multiplying. He was lucky that the plasma headband still shielded him at 2%, but he was not sure that it would in the future. If he had to wait until his abilities could no longer be shielded, death would be certain.

Of course, he could try not to use the power. But being in the savage apocalypse, not everything was smooth sailing. When there was nothing else that worked, he had to use it to escape from danger despite the consequences.

As he thought, Luo Yuan's expression was serious and it was as if a giant rock pressing against his heart.

"What's wrong?" Huang Jiahui who was sleeping next to him asked.

"Nothing, just thinking about the past." Luo Yuan tried to hide his thoughts. It was better to not tell anyone about it so they would not be worried.

"Don't think about the past anymore, at least you still have me... I mean us." Huang Jiahui showed her maternal instinct and hugged Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan patted her smooth back, but soon he was getting naughty. He slipped his hand downwards to her plump buttocks and squeezed it hard. He laughed and said, "I'm not as weak as you think, the girls should be sleeping I guess."

With just a few touches, Huang Jiahui had started blushing. Her red lips slightly opened while she was being obedient and without noticing it, she was already wet. Ever since they moved into the refuge in Desert City, they have not been having sex for more than a month. It felt like she was left in a barren desert for a long time. She quivered, "It's late, they must be sleeping already."

Luo Yuan looked at the time, it was only 10 o'clock and said, "It's still a little early, let's wait for awhile. I noticed that the soundproofing here isn't...!"

Before Luo Yuan could even finish talking, Huang Jiahui turned around and pressed Luo Yuan under her body. She leaned towards him and kissed him with her red, wet lips.

## Chapter 328: Superconductor

---

Fang Qianru opened the door, and just as she had finished changing her shoes, the door of the guest room opened.

"Cousin, you have returned from the mission!" A girl said. She looked young, maybe around eighteen or nineteen. She was wearing a thin night gown and her face was flushed with a tired look but had an expression of a sweet innocent girl.

If Luo Yuan was there, he will surely recognize this lady, not as a stranger but as Wen Yujie that got lost in Desert city.

She was lucky as she just had a close encounter with death. Just as the last train arrived in Hope city, there was a strong earthquake in Desert city that flattened the surrounding area. Just as luck would have it, her cousin sister lived here and she did not need to go to the refugee camp that was set up by the government.

"It's already late, why aren't you sleeping yet?" said Fang Qianru, her face showed signs of being tired.

"I couldn't sleep without you coming back!" said Wen Yujie.

"Are you still thinking of what happened in Desert City?" Fang Qianru asked with a worried expression.

"No. It was a natural disaster and was also fated. At least some people are still alive," Wen Yujie sighed and was reluctant to talk

about it. Living in the post-apocalyptic era, one would have to be strong or they would not be able to survive the apocalypse.

"Who is the owner of the clothes you're holding?" At this moment, she noticed the clothes that her cousin was holding. The clothes seemed to be a set of combat uniform. However, what surprised her was that this uniform belonged to a man.

After seeing Wen Yujie's looking at the clothes she had in her hand, Fang Qianru began to panic and pretended to pay no attention to it, throwing it on the couch, "I found it by the road. I'm not sure who's the owner but it would be a waste to throw it away so I took it back."

Wen Yujie looked at Fang Qianru suspiciously. She knew her cousin well, and she was from a family that was well to do. Furthermore, her aunt was a doctor, so typically her cousin would also be obsessed with cleanliness. Even though it was the apocalypse, her living conditions were still above average because of her strong evolved abilities. Based on her character, she would not just simply pick up old, worn clothes. This was just too strange. Nonetheless, she turned her gaze onto the garment, "This is just nice, the rags are getting dirtier. I will cut up the clothes."

Before she could make it to the couch, the garment was back in Fang Qianru's hands and with an unnatural expression, she said, "Oh gosh, to cut such clothes that are still in a good condition when a set of army uniform would cost 20 catties of food coupons! If you need new rags, you can take any of the old clothes from my wardrobe."

"Well if you don't want to use it for rags cloth, don't tell me you want to wear it?" Wen Yujie said, "Or do you plan to wash the clothes and return them to its owner?"

"Wen Yujie, are you done yet?" Fang Qianru flushed and knew that she was teasing her. From being embarrassed, she turned angry and said, "Are you being mischievous? Let me see what I can do with you!"

Just then, she leaped towards Wen Yujie and the two of them started a game of tag until Wen Yujie finally begged for mercy, ending the game.

Wen Yujie continued to pester her for a while and saw that her cousin was tight-lipped. No matter how she asked or prodded her cousin, she would not say who the clothes belonged to. She soon grew tired and returned to her bedroom. However, Fang Qianru followed her closely, quietly entering the room before she went under the covers and asked softly, saying, "Do you really want to know? Stay up with me and tonight we sisters will have pillow talk."

Wen Yujie secretly smiled to herself and muttered, "I am dead tired, spit it out if you want to talk."

Seeing that Wen Yujie did not object and was nonchalant about it, she slightly covered her flushing hot face and asked, "Do you believe in love at first sight?"

"Did you meet a handsome guy? These type of people are the



most unreliable. Be careful and don't get cheated," Wen Yujie said but found that her cousin had already fallen for this man and was worried.

"He is not like those handsome guys with pale faces, though his skin is also a milky white!" Fang Qianru quickly retorted, and went silent for a while before softly saying, "Originally I had not wanted to say this but if it wasn't because for him today, you may not be able to see me now."

As she mentioned about this, she could not help but feel traumatized. The situation then was too fearsome, and Luo Yuan had saved her from hell.

"Ah!" Wen Yujie was surprised, "What happened, was it that dangerous?"

"There were mistakes in the information given. In the beginning, it was thought to be just an average mission and we did not expect to encounter a vicious creature that was way beyond our capabilities. The vice-captain was killed and I was trapped, only being able to await death. It was he who saved me."

Wen Yujie could feel Fang Qianru's body tremble slightly. Obviously the situation that she was describing was an understatement of what actually happened.

"So the uniform belongs to him?" Wen Yujie asked.

"Yes!" In the dark, Fang Qianru gently nodded her head as her face flushed red. She had a giddy expression and said, "Oh what do you think I should do, I think I have fallen for him. He's just so handsome and gentle when he speaks. His eyes are just like magic, crystal clear and bright. Just one look at him makes my heart feel like jumping out of my body."

Wen Yujie was secretly worried. With her cousin's current condition it seemed like she was ready to throw herself into the arms of that man. If this stranger had ill intentions, she could foresee that Fang Qianru would be willing to do anything, even to the point that she could be sold. She quickly asked, "Do you know of his background? What if he already had a family, what would you do?"

"That I am not sure, he is a new colleague and we just met today," said Fang Qianru, slightly distressed. Suddenly as if she remembered something, she excitedly exclaimed, "Oh yes, I had asked about him, and it seemed that he was also from Desert City. Perhaps you might know him."

Wen Yujie was stunned for a moment, her expression turned stiff as she had a bad feeling about this, "The guy ... .. what is his name?"

"Luo Yuan, his name is Luo Yuan. Do you know him?" said Fang Qianru in anticipation.

"Luo Yuan!" Wen Yujie repeatedly mulled over the word, her mind was distracted.

"Do you know him? Desert City is so small, you must have heard of him!" Fang Qianru kept asking.

"I know him!" Wen Yujie grunted a reply.

Fang Qianru squealed and sat up immediately. In her excitement, she did not realize her cousin's tone had changed to a whisper, "If you really do know him, please tell me quickly. What kind of person is he?"

"I only saw him only a few times from afar. I am not familiar with him and I have nothing to say about it. I have to sleep now," Wen Yujie turned around and said.

"Oh, please tell me! You're not doing anything these days anyway," Fang Qianru kept urging.

But no matter how hard Fang Qianru urged her, Wen Yujie stayed still and did not utter a single word.

...

The next morning, after Luo Yuan finished his breakfast, he walked all the way to the headquarters of the Firearm Bureau's headquarter.

Once the security guards at the door spotted him, they

immediately saluted him. They did not even bother to check his documents and quickly let him in.

Yesterday, Luo Yuan's godlike, flight into the air was both a shock and a wonder to the two guards.

Luo Yuan nodded his head gently, welcoming the guards' excited gaze and leisurely walked into the manor.

Because Luo Yuan woke up much earlier than the rest, there was only a small number staff in the hall. After having a sip of tea handed to him by an office personnel, he then picked up a roll of newspaper and scanned through the news.

At this moment, the time was not even 6 a.m. The dawn had a cool, peaceful atmosphere that calmed the mind. The changes of his four-dimensional vision yesterday had caused some unease to his emotions but with this atmosphere, his unease gradually faded and his heart regained its composure.

During the apocalypse, the ability to have a blissful and carefree day like this, and to sit in a peaceful manor like this while quietly sipping tea is a blessing. As for the matter of life and death, everything was up to fate.

Besides, the changes in his vision was not without a solution. The reason why four-dimensional images affected him boiled down to his brain being unable to receive messages with four-dimensional characteristics. If he tackled the problem from this angle, he had already thought of a number of solutions such as enhancing his

Wisdom. This will in turn strengthen his Intelligence and weaken the effects of the four-dimensional messages substantially.

Another solution would be to enhance his Will as it could, to some extent prevent the adverse effects of the four-dimensional vision. Ever since his Will was enhanced, the effects of the four-dimensional vision on him weakened significantly. Even if the depth of his four-dimensional vision was 1%, it reduced the effect significantly even if he took off the headband. However, as for the choice between enhancing his Wisdom or Will, these solutions were only temporary. It was like stopping a river to build a dam, he was unable to get rid of the problem from its root.

To solve the problem from its root, Luo Yuan thought that his entire brain should be able to enter the fourth dimension and even his whole body should be reborn into that of a four-dimensional organism. Nonetheless, this was just thoughts that came to him in delusion. Apart from some people who were as gifted and as talented as Xu Zhiqiang, becoming a four-dimensional being was as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

The process was a transition of life. With the nature of such a transition, unless there was a miracle, success would be impossible.

But it was better to be more of a realist. Compared his delusional solution of being reborn as an organism in the fourth dimension, his solution of increasing Will and Wisdom was more feasible. His 16 points Will was already sufficient and could temporarily slow down the effects. On the other hand, his current attributes were already above 15 points. Only Wisdom had 14 points which was

indeed slightly lower than his average attributes. This had a major impact on him being able to utilize the full potential of his abilities.

Thinking of this, Luo Yuan could not help but regret his decision to destroy the Tree of Wisdom. One fruit from the blue-level Tree of Wisdom could increase his Wisdom beyond 14 points, what more for a green ranked tree. The increment would be more significant.

Although the system could also enhance these attributes, having such invaluable items that helped him in this journey was a boon. No one would complain about having extra help.

Fortunately, the tree was not the only one out there as the tree was closely related to the birth of an intelligent race. Behind the back of every intelligent race, there was a huge chance that they also had a Tree of Wisdom that was similar to this. It also meant that if an intelligent race was discovered, they would also find this magical tree.

Luo Yuan eyes lit up. At this moment, he could not help but feel fortunate to have joined the sword unit.

Compare to him previously operating alone, like a headless fly blindly searching in the wild; he now had the help of government resources with the system in his brain, everything was relatively simpler.

An intelligent race did not refer to a solitary mutated beast. Since it was a race, it would have to be of a huge population and have a

certain degree of social organization. Provided its population advanced to a certain size, it would grow outwards and if its expansion led to conflicts with the Reconstruction Area, it would certainly leave a distinct trace of their race.

Just as he had finished the cup of tea, members of the sword unit started to come in one after another.

"Brother Luo, the item you gave me last night had caused me so much misery. In the middle of the night, I was woken up and summoned to the military office for an interrogation. I only came back at two or three in the morning." Before Li Dong even entered the hall, his loud voice could be heard from far while he had a miserable expression.

Luo Yuan chuckled as he had expected this reaction, "Who asked you to be in such a hurry, you could even do it in the day."

"How would I dare ignore the things that you've instructed me to do. Nonetheless, it is really good stuff. This is the real deal, a homoeothermic superconductor that could conduct more than 300 volts. It is beyond my imagination. However, it is still in its preliminary testing period and they have alerted the superiors that even the senior officer personally came by to ask about it. I figure that there will still be some people dropping by and ask about the situation." Li Dong looked excited.

"Homoeothermic superconductor!" Luo Yuan was slightly surprised as well.

The concept of a homoeothermic superconductor had been well known in the time prior to the apocalypse. Even for an illiterate person, they would be able to know a thing or two. To give an idea of what it is about, homoeothermic superconductors have always captured the fascination of people studying material science. Until the present day, these types of superconductivity was still unattainable. Prior to the apocalypse, even the most resourceful laboratories that were conducting tests on superconductor was unable to produce these levels of conductivity at temperatures that was way beyond -50 Celsius, let alone such a level conductivity at room temperature. There was still a long way to go.

However the temperature at which the corpse of the mutated beast's was conductive actually went beyond 300 degrees. This meant that the range of the superconductivity was below 300 degrees. It was simply a miracle and almost revolutionized the whole energy industry. It was not surprising that this news had piqued the interest of top leaders.



## Chapter 329: Pair Training

---

In the 15th floor of the underground base where the training area was located, a vague silhouette was sprinting back and forth continuously. The amazing speed had a strong wind that was blowing in the open hall.

Other than the captain who had yet to return and the vice-captain who had passed away, the rest of the team were watching nearby. Such speed was unheard before, even Xu Qianshen who had the fastest speed and was known internally as the "God of Wind", could compare to such speeds.

However, Xu Qianshen knew clearly that he could not run at high speed as smooth and lightly as Luo Yuan. If they were to compare the both of them, he was like a rampaging rhinoceros while Luo Yuan was as light as a leopard pouncing on its prey. He was definitely lagging behind.

What was more terrifying was that his speed seemed to have increased slowly along with each sprint.

"It's only been 3.6 seconds or 0.9 seconds per 100 meters," Li Dong said gloomily while looking at his stopwatch.

"When Luo Yuan started running, I recall that Brother Luo was going at a speed of 1.1 second per 100 meters and he actually broke his own record, bringing it down to less than a second! Don't tell me he is still able to run faster!" Xie Junhui said unbelievably.

"Don't you see that my master keeps adjusting his posture? He's looking for better way to unleash his energy efficiently," Fang Peibin was staring at the blurry silhouette and said slowly.

The group was shocked and began to look at Luo Yuan silhouette. They realized that his running posture was extremely weird as his body was almost flat on the ground with his head almost touching the ground, only leaving a gap of 50 centimeters.

It took him about ten steps and a few breaths to reach the end of a runway of 400 meters. Each step he took brought him thirty to forty ahead.

With each step he took, it actually smashed the granite floor into powder, which raised a cloud of dust along with the strong wind he was causing.

"Stop looking, it's after all useless for us since we won't be able to learn!" the crazy Mr. Wang said laughingly while a flicker of fear flashed through his eyes when he was looking at Luo Yuan from afar, "He can fly. Though it looked like he's running on the ground, his body was kind of weightless. In fact, he was looking for just the right amount of Strength exerted to balance his body."

Even though the crazy Mr. Wang was mad, he was smart. Especially during the last chase whereby he experienced much hardship, he had been deeply impressed by Luo Yuan's speed.

In fact, he was right. When Luo Yuan was running and using his Will simultaneously, a chemical reaction occurred had allowed

him to go beyond his speed limit. Yesterday was just the first trial, which is why it was not perfect and was very ragged. Nonetheless, with more practice and adjustments, his speed was gradually approaching its maximum limit.

After running back and forth, his speed had finally reached a bottleneck of 0.8 seconds per 100 meters. He then continued to run for about five minutes so that muscle memory would register the strength he used to balance his body. It was then when he gradually reduced his speed and stopped.

Surely it was insufficient for him to practice for only a day. He needed another five to six days of continuous practice so that the skill could become muscle memory in his body and become an instinct to him. The strenuous exercise had turned his body red, water vapor evaporating from his skin while his body gave off extreme heat.

Fang Qianru who had been shy and silent, took out a towel and jogged towards Luo Yuan, "Brother Luo, let me help you wipe your sweat!"

She sized Luo Yuan daringly. He was a head taller. His tall and thin body appeared to be dashing while his well-developed muscles appeared to be glistening. Along with the movement of his hands, the muscles moved like waves in an ocean. Under his dense eyebrows were a pair of dark eyes, shiny like jade as if it was a deep bottomless spring.

Meanwhile, he was sweating profusely. The sweat had been dripping from his face and his singlet was even soaked in sweat but

she could not smell any foul odors. In fact, she got a whiff of a unique odor instead of a bad body odor.

Luo Yuan was shocked and glanced at her.

Her face turned red because of her shyness; even her thin, snow-white neck flushed a shade of red. Her watery eyes were staring at him and her supple breasts went up and down. These showed that she was very nervous.

Luo Yuan quickly rejected her and took the towel troubled feelings, "Oh, thanks. No, I can do it myself, thanks!"

"You are welcome!" Fang Qianru lowered her head soon after she handed over the towel as if what she did earlier had completely consumed all of her courage. She turned sideways and blushed before she said softly, "I'm sorry, I tore the clothes yesterday when I washed it but I'll get you a new one."

Fang Qianru scolded her cousin internally as she washed their clothes early in the morning for the first time. To top it off, she did not only wash her own but also Fang Qianru's together with the uniform. Their clothes were alright but the uniform was surprisingly torn. She was so angry that she did not have a proper breakfast when she saw the hole as big as a bowl at the back of the uniform.

The uniform was actually made of the plant fibers that Luo Yuan obtained after the apocalypse and was stronger than the jeans, which made it very difficult to be torn when washed.

Hng!

She apparently did it on purpose. It looked like something was up with her yesterday evening and yet she said she did not know Luo Yuan.

Both Fang Qianru and Wen Yujie were cousins of the same age. Since Fang Qianru was just a month older than Wen Yujie, they went to kindergarten all the way to high school together before they went their own ways during high school for a year before the apocalypse began.

They should have a good relationship but that was not the case. Since they were young, they had been fighting each other for toys and snacks and later over academic result as they grew older. Besides, their parents kept comparing their results by saying that your cousin was this and that while you were this and that. With all these things that happened, how could they be as close as sisters? It was only when the apocalypse began that their relationship got better.

Luo Yuan definitely did not understand her complicated feelings as he was not concerned about his shirt. So, he waved his hand while saying, "It's alright since it was torn. It's nothing much. How's your injury by the way?"

Fang Qianru expressed her excitement but shyly, she replied, "Thank you for your concern, I'm almost recovered now but I need another month to recover completely. For the time being, I can

only do some adaptive training."

"This is also good. If you didn't already know, after your injury, your teammates were so worried. Please don't be so careless next time," Luo Yuan said patronizingly because he felt that she was not that old, probably just a bit older than Wang Shishi.

Fang Qianru responded with a sweet sound.

Seeing that she was still dawdling, not wanting to leave, Luo Yuan scanned through the group and found out that the others had a weird expression on their faces, obviously enjoying themselves while they looked at them. He could not help but to beckon to Fang Peibin.

Fang Peibin ran over and with a chuckle said, "Master, what would you like me to do?"

Luo Yuan glanced at his face and said with an indifferent tone, "Since you call me Master, I'll have to teach you something. Let's start today, come with me to the training area."

Fang Peibing seriously said, "Yes, Master!"

Luo Yuan felt satisfied. If his apprentice kept grinning mischievously and was acting impolite, he would be uncomfortable even if he did not say anything. Though he did not give a good first impression, his performance later was acceptable for Luo Yuan to recognize him as his apprentice.

The two walked briskly in tandem towards the training area. Fang Qianru wanted to follow but she was stopped by Li Dong and the rest who went over.

Though they did not experience personally, they should have heard that learning martial arts in secrecy from others without their knowledge is taboo. Though unpalatable to many, it was after all, impolite to look at Luo Yuan's teaching without his approval.

As they walked very quickly, they reached the training area in just a moment.

Luo Yuan threw his Zhanmadao aside as his hands drew a circle, getting into a Tai Chi post, "I don't know your exact strength yet. Come... come attack me with your full strength."

His actions were slow and heavy, both his hands seemed to be stirring up in the air like his surroundings were not air but instead, sticky glue. This action attracted Fang Peibin because he looked like he was standing idly but he was actually standing as firmly as a mountain was rooted to the ground. It was like he was connected to the earth.

"Master, I'm sorry," Fang Peibin apologized in advance and he stepped on the ground and launched himself quickly and flexibly towards Luo Yuan. His was strong and had immense Strength that had reached 16 points. The instantaneous outbreak of energy within a short distance were like shotgun shells being shot.

Nonetheless, as he got closer a hand appeared on his arm with a slow-motion. Along with his strength, he felt a push and was thrown into the air before he had a chance to react; slumped on the ground four to five meters away.

When Fang Peibing stood up, Luo Yuan was still standing at the same place but with his eyes closed. He drew a circle with both hands and said, "Come again!"

Fang Peibin's face became serious and dared not attack hastily anymore. Instead, he went around Luo Yuan and when he saw his Master was completely immobile with his eyes tightly closed, he thought it was his chance. He then lightened his steps and quickly went near Luo Yuan.

Nevertheless, he failed as soon as he threw a punch because the history repeated itself. Dazed, he found out that he was lying on the ground when he recovered.

Though Luo Yuan's bare-handed fighting skills were not as good as his knife skills, it was already 19 points and was about to upgrade, becoming a professional skill. In reality, he had become a great master. Since Luo Yuan was practicing Tai Chi, he knew how to manipulate the strength from his opponents to maximize the impacts of his attacks. In addition, since he had clear knowledge on the structure of a human body, he could judge the force his opponent were exerting very precisely. Provided he put his hand on the opponent's body, he would be able to know the direction his opponent was exerting their strength as well as the muscles that were involved. This made it easy for him to defeat his opponent even if the opponent was much stronger.



In fact, in this sparring session, he merely used half of his speed and energy to defeat Fang Peibin.

"Again. This time, use your abilities," Luo Yuan said.

Luo Yuan nodded and retreated twenty to thirty meters away. He stood firmly and dared not be careless. It was because he was used to the strength some super evolved humans that even he was afraid of many abilities.

After all, no matter how strong he was, he was not immortal. If he was hit by a powerful attack ability, he would die too.

Fang Peibin took a deep breath and growled. Then, all muscles of his body suddenly expanded with numerous veins that wriggled around like worms. Accompanied sounds of joints exploding, his original body of merely 1.69 meters had grown immensely.

In just about 30 seconds, Fang Peibin was already 1.8 meters high and because of his expanded body. His skin got thinner and his body fat seemed to have completely disappeared. It made his body muscles look so red, it was as if his skin had been peeled off. What was more surprising was that his nostrils kept oozing out a heavy breath with faint sparks that sputtered as he breathed. His dark, white eye balls had turned completely red as well. At the same time, a brutal and ferocious feeling gradually permeated the atmosphere.

"Mutation?" Luo Yuan was surprised to see this happen as this

type feeling, was that of chaos, brutality, and evil, like a person who failed to evolve. Yet, it was not similar because Fang Peibin was at least normal when he was not in his mutated form. Luo Yuan was uneasy with this type of ability as he felt that he would lose all control.

Luo Yuan had his thought flashed through but Fang Peibin had already growled and came towards him.

His voice was as loud as a thunder, echoing in the 15th floor!

# Chapter 330: Conquest

---

After using his evolved ability, the Fang Peibin's speed became a few times faster. His strong and ferocious body seemed to have unlimited energy, making him similar to a rampaging tank. Each step he took produced a rumbling sound like that of an exploding dynamite.

Nonetheless, it was nothing to Luo Yuan because his speed was much slower than his, let alone his speed when it was supported by Will.

Before he could reach Luo Yuan, he was already punching continuously and rapidly like heavy artillery that screamed through the air, creating a sonic boom. An ordinary man would get severe muscle injuries and have their bones crushed if they were to even get brushed by the wind, let alone get punched in the face. Such strong punches, even Luo Yuan was slightly afraid.

The strong wind pulled his hair and the wind coming from the punches were like knives, cutting his face. Though the speed at which he ran was slow to Luo Yuan, his sudden explosive attack speed was sufficient to be a threat to him.

Facing such a ferocious attack, he focused as his head slightly leaned backward while his right leg drew an arc, his waist bent like a bow.

Then, Luo Yuan's right hand turned into the shape of a claw before it quickly entered the strong wind and held the opponent's

arm. Nonetheless, as soon as he touched him, Fang Peibin's hand shook violently, as if Luo Yuan's body had a strange repulsive force that made him unreachable.

Judging the opponent's force precisely was an essential part of Tai Chi. Regardless of his technique or ability to transform oncoming force, it would all be in futility if he could not touch his opponent.

Nonetheless, Luo Yuan stayed very calm and moved quickly to avoid the punches from his opponent. Simultaneously, he struck his opponent's armpit the best he could. The air instantly exploded and his punch that weighed several tons broke through the opponent's amazing amount of force. However, the full swing strike was not strong enough as his punch only managed to hit his body.

He then quickly approached his opponent without giving him any chance to rest. He stomped the ground, exerted his strength and struck his opponent's waist and rib with his fists that were as fast as lightning. Then, with the energy that he drew from his feet to his waist, he launched himself into the air to make a 180-degree turn before his left toe kicked right his opponent's temple. All these happened quickly, it was like a flash of lightning.

His leg was a few times stronger than his arm. His last kick weighed at least 10 to 20 tons

Such a frightening display of strength had caused a strong wind that exploded on Fang Peibin's body. Nonetheless, he seemed to have an unbelievable amount of fighting instinct as he seemed to

have felt the danger and blocked the kick quickly with his right hand at the critical moment!

"Bang!" The air exploded with a strong wave of air.

Then, Luo Yuan jumped away because of the strong anti-shock wave.

At the same time, Fang Peibin also stepped a few steps backward. Nonetheless, when compared, Luo Yuan retreated more swiftly, like a floating immortal while Fang Peibin was like a ferocious giant beast. Each step he took backward was accompanied by numerous cracks on the ground of the training area.

Luckily it was the last floor or the training place would have collapsed.

Stimulated by the danger, Fang Peibin growled at Luo Yuan in an extremely angry manner. His red eyes became fiery red and his body muscles further expanded. Since he used his ability, he seemed to have lost his ability to speak, his character became what was like an extraordinary maniac and he had apparently lost almost all senses.

When Luo Yuan saw Fang Peibin coming over at such a frantic speed, he felt an ache on the tip of his toe and thought, "What the f\*ck is this? Is he a mutated beast or is he a human being?" The strength Fang Peibin had was at least 17 points, two points higher than Luo Yuan. If he took into account the limitations Fang Peibin had when unleashing his energy, it would already be 18 points.

If it was a mutated beast, Luo Yuan would have solved the problem quickly with his Zhanmadao. After all, if compared to the power of his physical body, he was much better in utilizing technique and speed, along with his sharp Zhanmadao. Therefore, it would be easy for him to kill any extraordinarily strong creature, both in power and defense. It was as easy as hacking away at wood.

Nonetheless, it would be difficult if he had to kill a light green creature with only his physical body. Fang Peibin, who was in front of him had a combination of various attributes, which made him as strong as a light green creature.

Luo Yuan smiled bitterly and they started attacking each other at the very next moment. The strong force they exerted caused a strong wind to blow at the training area. From time to time, loud noises could be heard and a lot of pebbles would shoot at all direction like bullets.

The fight was almost one-sided because although Fang Peibin was strong, his Agility was not as high Luo Yuan. He was hit continuously by Luo Yuan and kept retreating. There were about ten punches every second and was like a flurry of wind showered him with punches. Luo Yuan's punches had been too much for him to handle and he could only be on the receiving end of all the punches. Each time he wanted to throw a punch, Luo Yuan's heavy punches prevented him from doing so; when he wanted to defend himself, Luo Yuan changed the direction of his attack. He had absolutely no chance in defending himself against Luo Yuan.

His battle suit was also torn to pieces, fluttering in the wind

caused by the punches.

The punches hit his body directly and such a great battle excited Luo Yuan gradually. After all, it has been awhile since he has had a good target that he could freely attack. In his previous fights, he was always trying to avoid the enemy's main attack and strike its weak points so the mutated beasts could be killed in a single strike. Also, it was because the mutated beasts were usually larger in size and had immense power. If he attempted what he did with Fang Peibin with a mutated beast, it would be far beyond his ability.

This strategy had also cultivated Luo Yuan's fighting style, which was more like an assassin. He wanted a fight where he was able to punch the enemy directly but he could not afford to. He did not expect to meet such a person that he could train with. Such an opponent also allowed him to throw punches until his blood was stirred, satisfying him.

Nonetheless, Luo Yuan was surprised with the ability of Fang Peibin. Each punch Luo Yuan threw weighed about a few tons, would definitely turn a regular person into ground meat, even an evolved person would not be able to take such a hit. Besides, the number of punches that landed on his body within a span of ten seconds was in the hundreds. All of that and he was not even injured due to the force his body exuded, which became stronger as the fighting raged on.

What was more surprising was that this mysterious force would regenerate after each time it was broken. Such a defensive system was inconceivable indeed!

...

After about ten minutes, both of them had started gasping for air. Because of the intense fight, both of them had almost used up their energy. After they sprinted for less than 100 meters, both Luo Yuan and Fang Peibin was surrounded by water vapor and gasped for air.

Luo Yuan decided to end the fight. By using his Will, his body was glowing with waves that seemed like waves. It could be seen clearly even it was under a light. His Will of 17 points caused the radiance from his body to flow like liquid. Then, a dimly radiant fist broke through Fang Peibin's defense. The glow appeared weak for a moment before it grew larger, imprinting itself on his opponent's chest.

Immediately, the body of Fang Peibin trembled and he was in a daze as if he was paralyzed and was no longer able to move.

Soon, his mutated body disappeared as he seemed to have gotten thinner. He then slumped on the floor weakly.

After about ten seconds, Fang Peibin woke up rather weakly and staggered as he felt a severe headache as if his spirit had been shaken by Luo Yuan's attacks. He looked at Luo Yuan who was sitting with his cross-legged nearby and he was in awe.

After he used his abilities, he could barely control his emotion and was not able to speak. He was filled with an inexplicable violent rage but still had his memory. The last strike had caused his mind to go blank and he thought that he died.



Fang Peibin was convinced wholeheartedly and lost his last flicker of pride. As he saw Luo Yuan opened his eyes, he let out a sigh and stood up, shouting "Master!"

"Sit!" Luo Yuan said.

"Yes, Master!"

Luo Yuan glanced at him and said, "Don't restrict yourself. I once told you that your abilities have turned into a habit. However, If you want to change the way you practice your abilities, it would be very difficult and you must start from the very beginning. Nevertheless, these are just techniques and improper use can be corrected, provided you train hard."

As a saying goes, it is easier to practice one's skill than to cultivate one's mind. To practice your skill is to control your body but to cultivate your mind, is to control your own emotion. For an ordinary person, he can do it slowly by practicing his skill before he cultivates his mind. But you are different, I found out that your evolved ability is problematic.

Do you have difficulty in controlling your ability?"

Fang Peibin replied quickly, "Yes. For unknown reasons, as soon as I use the ability, I'll be filled with a violent rage and my heart fills up with the desire to destroy. Unless I'm tired, it'd be difficult for me to withdraw from my power. Therefore, unless it's a very dangerous situation, I'll definitely not use it unless that I knew

that Master was strong.

"Then what about when you're not using the ability? Does it affect you?" Luo Yuan asked while looking into Fang Peibin's eyes. He acutely observed that his pupils seemed to be still radiate a glimmer of red light.

Facing the sharp eyesight of Luo Yuan, Fang Peibin subconsciously lowered his head and replied frankly, "It still affects me but I can still manage to control it. After using the ability, I'll feel tempted but I'll be alright after some time has passed."

Luo Yuan knitted his brows tightly and pondered, other than a mutated person, it was the first time he found out that an ability could affect one's characters. After a thought, he said, "For the time being, it isn't a big issue to you, yet. Nonetheless, if it is left unresolved, it would still spell trouble. Have you tried meditation before?"

"I used to learn the meditation practicing yoga's while I practiced martial arts. I also learned some other forms of meditation as well, but it seemed to be useless," Fang Peibin said frankly.

"Is it really useless?" Luo Yuan grumbled.

At the next moment, Fang Peibin found himself staring at a strong aura that Luo Yuan's body was emitting and the force field had suspended the surrounding pebbles in mid air and made the air around him denser, which prevented him from breathing. He

tried his best to retreat but his body was rooted to the ground while his inner heart was filled with endless disappointment and fear.

He looked with staring eyes as Luo Yuan pointed his snow-white finger which then emitted a radiance and shot out a thin ray of light of about a meter long. Though he was about three to four meters away, he could feel pins on his skin. Then, Luo Yuan was seen striking on the rock that made up the training area and a thin crack four to five meters wide formed immediately.

As Luo Yuan's Will had reached 17 points, the glow of his Will had reached a stage where it could be used to fight even without Zhanmadao. Within a short period of time, the level of Luo Yuan's battle effectiveness would not be affected. The drawback was that it consumed much of his Will and was less efficient than using Zhanmadao.

While Fang Peibin was in a trance, the terrifying aura quickly disappeared as if it was a hallucination. If the pebbles had not fallen back on the ground and the thin crack that was visible in the middle of the rock, he would have thought that these were just hallucinations.

He gasped for air, his face as pale as a white sheet of paper before he asked with a terrified voice, "Master, what...what's this? Your super power?"

"Super power? No, it's what I want to teach you!"

# Chapter 331: Captain

---

After that, he patiently guided Fang Peibin with various techniques to use force and assigned him some homework which was to meditate every night. After Fang Peibin witnessed the power of Luo Yuan, he no longer dared to be frivolous anymore.

Luo Yuan was not the like old school martial artists who would hold back when they taught martial arts. As long as someone was willing to learn, he would teach that person whole heartedly.

After that he let Fang Peibin go somewhere farther to practice before he sat down in his original spot and immediately started meditating. As he meditated, his Will and body became one to replenish the minor bleeding and other injuries he sustained. After the intense bout of exercise, it was difficult to avoid vascular deposition. Many of his veins expanded until they broke down and started bleeding internally. Some of the muscle tissues had even ruptured. All these could not be seen by the naked eye but he could glance at it through with his abilities.

These minor injuries seemed to be a small problem and would be able to heal by themselves. Even muscles could become sturdier and stronger but the price to pay was swollen blood vessels for bigger muscles. Although it was a small issue, if it were to accumulate, it would eventually become a big issue. This was the reason why most athletes did not have a long life to live.

Under the effects of his Will, all his minor injuries healed quickly. The blood started to flow smoothly again. The muscles that had expanded due to intense exercise went back to its regular

state and he felt his whole body was lighter than before.

He opened his eyes and felt as if his body was in harmony and was easier to control. He suddenly had a thought. He raised up his hand and the Zhanmadao that had been put aside immediately flew towards his hand.

Fang Peibin who was practicing somewhere not far away was stunned when he peeped and saw what had happened with Luo Yuan. When he sobered up, he could help but feel the excitement in his heart as he thought, "This is awesome! It's a trick used by sword experts, seems like I have followed the right master!"

If he had not witnessed such abilities from Luo Yuan previously, he would have thought that this was one of the skills of an evolved human. Such a way of thinking was unusual but for a traditional martial artist such as himself, he felt that it was not out of the ordinary when Luo Yuan used a legendary ability such as this. From Fang Peibin's perspective, since he was an evolved human and was in touch with a different evolved human on a daily basis, he had seen it all. Of course, though he has seen evolved humans with similar skill and abilities, Luo Yuan's ability to summon his Zhanmadao with his Will was one that was told in myths, he was both impressed and shocked.

Luo Yuan did not care about the fuss of Fang Peibin. He grabbed the Zhanmadao and when he turned the knife the blade slightly cut his arm. The Zhanmadao, as a green level weapon was extremely sharp and could easily cut through his tough skin, leaving a five to six centimeters gash. The blood slowly flowed out from the wound. He had no idea when was the last time he got

hurt. This was the first time he has seen his blood flow in six months.

The blood glowed lightly under the sunlight, the color was bright and it was so thick, it flowed much slower than the blood of regular people. After 10 seconds it finally dripped down from his arm. Luo Yuan had an idea after he saw it and the magic happened. The blood that was dripping slowly was actually suspended in the air.

There was the first drop, a second drop and a third drop... within a few moments, there were more than 10 drops of blood that floated in the air, surrounding Luo Yuan. Soon he smiled, and the blood suddenly flew back into the wound like time had just turned backward. When the blood returned to the wound, the wound slowly healed and closed. After a few second there were no longer any sign of injuries on his arm and he could barely feel the pain anymore.

Luo Yuan was happy. He had been practicing his Will for so long before he finally saw results in his body. It seemed like his previous speculation was right. Since the Zhanmadao could be controlled like an extension of his arm, he could definitely control his own body. With his condition now, he could probably heal himself quickly even if his head had been cut off. He could even probably reconnect his head back to his body all by himself.

If he continued to practice, he might be able to continue using the rest of his body to fight even if his head was missing. He was excited when he thought about it and disregarded the shocked Fang Peibin beside him. He even imagined that he might not die so

easily even if he attempted suicide in the future. However, when he thought about the four-dimensional vision that felt like a mental disease for him, he felt worried. It seemed like he needed to find the Wisdom Fruit as soon as possible.

...

"Master, let's go for lunch now." Fang Peibin said respectfully. He was never so respectful before. Nowadays, he had lost his confidence after he faced a series of failure and in his mind, Luo Yuan had become like an immortal god who lived on the mountain.

"I did not realize that it is lunch time now. How's your practice?" Luo Yuan looked at his watch, it was already 12 p.m. There should be nobody on the fifteenth floor and only two of them were left. Luo Yuan kept his Zhanmadao and dressed in preparation for lunch.

"There are still some moves that I am still not used to. For example, I have forgotten how to utilize this stance." Fang Peibin quickly posed while he walked toward Luo Yuan.

"Your stance is not wide enough, and your toes are too tensed. You have to be gentle and remember the point of using force. You have to be agile and strong at the same time so that when you exert your strength, you can utilize more of the muscle groups in your body." Luo Yuan used the scabbard to point toward Fang Peibin's toes, calves, and waist to guide him through the steps.

The next moment, Fang Peibin automatically moved forward by one step and it took him a distance of eight to nine meters forward. Fang Peibin was not surprised as he had seen something even more surprising before. He stood still and quickly recalled the steps. When he was done, he found that his master had walked far away. He immediately walked at a brisk pace to keep up and continued asking, "This action also seems to be a bit jerky."

Luo Yuan stopped and guided him on using the right steps. Fang Peibin was indeed someone who was very interested in martial arts. People he taught before were in comparison, harder to be trained. Huang Jiahui and Zhao Yali were even worse. Since they left the wilderness, they just neglected their martial arts. It would be great if they had trained more than once a week. Of course, Luo Yuan did not want to push them as long as everyone was in a good condition. As for Deng Chao and Zhong Chuqiang, they were better off because they were at least more serious in practicing their martial arts.

...

When they reached the restaurant especially assigned for the sword unit, it was already 12.30 p.m. Fortunately, the members of the sword unit had an uncertain lunch hours so the food in the restaurant was kept warm all the time.

"All the chefs here are top master chefs. I heard that Chef Hu once cooked dinner for government officials before they said it was very good." Fang Peibin introduced to Luo Yuan.

"Colonel Fang, is this gentleman a newcomer?" A middle-aged



man who wore a white apron said as he stood behind the window.

Although the sword unit was directly under the Central of Special Departments, they had a military title as well. The only difference was that they were not grouped together with the army. Besides this, the team had a higher rank than the ordinary members. The lowest rank was the colonel and as for the captain as well as vice-captain positions, they were considered to be a major general. Of course, all these were just titles in the system.

"He is my master." Fang Peibin said, "Tell us what is good today, don't hide the food and bring it back home."

"Don't try to accuse me! If others hear of your accusations it would cause great trouble to me." Chef Hu had a fat face full of wrinkles and tried to exaggerate. It was a lucrative deal to be a chef here, as the ingredients were extremely rare and were of high class. Some of the ordinary people may never ever see the ingredients being here in their lifetime. Even if the chef was not corrupted, selling a few of the ingredients available here could earn them a big amount of money. In addition, it was comfortable to work here as there was no other place that was safer than the place where the sword unit stayed. All the team members were basically superheroes with powerful skills.

"You are in luck today, the new Beijing has just sent a box of level six mutated beast powder. Other than this we have chalky bonefish and level five mutated beast organs, especially the visceral parts that requires two days of processing. With my latest research, cooking by frying it with devil mushroom makes it is very crispy and delicate. I assure you, you'll definitely go for seconds. As for

vegetables, we have green jade vegetable stewed with bone broth together with some spicy, sour yet crispy nuts... We also have some fruit..."

In fact, it was not an easy career to be a chef after the apocalypse. Not only were the ingredients totally different, it was also hard to find spices needed to cook as well. In order to make a delicious meal, they had to put in a lot of effort to study and research.

"Well, well... I want one large portion for each dish. Master, do you want any liquor?" Fang Peibin interrupted and asked Luo Yuan.

"No, I am fine." Luo Yuan waved his hand. Before the apocalypse, he was not a drinker and only drank when there were gatherings. After the apocalypse he had not had a drink for almost two years, so he just rejected the offer politely.

They sat back in their seats and the dishes would be sent to them afterward by the crew.

There were ten plates of exquisite dishes served, especially the big plates of fruits that were served at the very end. Even Luo Yuan who had already gotten used to eating high quality food felt that it was too luxurious. After the apocalypse, plants hardly spread their seeds. During half a year of wandering in the wilderness, he could only find two or three seeded plants, which meant that it was very precious. Although the redevelopment area was more developed, seeded plants should not be a common sight here as well.

With what he had seen and heard these two days, it had a beautiful environment and the workplace was full of freedom. The crew were pretty and all the food served was very luxurious. It seemed like the redevelopment area had put a lot of effort in order to entice the super-evolved humans to work for them.

Certainly, it was also because these super-evolved humans were too powerful. Apart from having them help the redevelopment area, the top management were also taking precautions to keep these people aligned. Regular evolved humans had limited power. Even if they tried to create chaos, the army could quickly suppress them and the damage would be minimized. However, if the super-evolved humans tried to create turmoil, it would be absolutely disastrous. Take Luo Yuan as an example, a siege by a regular army had no impact on him. As long as his brain was intact, no one would be able to arrest him even they were an organized team.

After Luo Yuan took a few bites, he looked at the big plate of fruits and thought of sending it to Wang Shishi and the rest, so he said, "I don't want to eat the fruits now. I want to bring it back home."

"Do you want to give it to your wife? I'll ask Chef Hu to give you more when you pack the dish back home," said Fang Peibin.

The person who practiced martial arts had a larger appetite. As for Luo Yuan, his appetite was even bigger. No matter how many dishes he was given, he could finish them all quickly. In just 10 minutes he had already finished all the dishes on the table. Before Luo Yuan even took the fruit platter, Fang Peibin had already carried the plate and ran to the window as he forced Chef Hu to

refill at least half a plate and wrapped everything so he could bring it back.

When they walked out from the restaurant there was a man and woman who walked towards the restaurant.

"Eh?" Luo Yuan whispered in surprise.

The man was nearly middle-aged with an old look. He looked like a regular public servant. What attracted Luo Yuan's attention was the woman. When the woman walked into range of his senses, he seemed to "see" a light that was no different than that of a shining sun.

"Captain is back!" Fang Peibin who stood next to him suddenly whispered.

## Chapter 332: Honorable Award

---

What Luo Yuan perceived was a vision of the soul. As his ability could not detect light, all the objects were presented in grayscale. In general, life forms contained energy and thus the color tended to be white whilst inanimate objects were gray in color unless they contained radiation. The stronger the creature was the more white it would look. However, Luo Yuan had yet to see a creature as powerful as this woman that had a light so bright.

"Is she the captain who always has meetings in New Beijing?" Luo Yuan was able to hear them talking even when Fang Peibin whispered in a very low tone. He was slightly surprised because there was nobody who specifically mentioned the gender of the captain before so he naturally assumed that the captain would be a man.

It was not sexism, but by nature, women tended to keep a distance from fighting. Wu Qianru was one of the rare cases in this small team. He never expected that the captain was a woman and seemed like she had a very powerful skill.

She was petite in size, even shorter than Chen Jiayi and probably only at the height of Luo Yuan's chest. She had a rosy fair skin and he could not estimate the age by looking at her outlook. She was wearing a bigger size of khaki combat uniforms and the uniform was obviously one size bigger so it looked baggy on her body; it was as if the uniform was going to fall from her shoulders. Besides, her trousers were also very large in size. Since the fabric was rough, when she walked it made a rustling sound which made her look a little funny.

As their distance got closer, Luo Yuan felt a slight chill. The surrounding air temperature seemed to suddenly reduce by several Celsius. As she walked closer, Luo Yuan subconscious became intense, but soon he felt relieved as she took up her hand and said, "You are Luo Yuan, right? I have heard your name for so long. Hello, my name is Lin Feiyan. I welcome to you join us on behalf of the sword unit of Hope City. Hope that we can work together happily." Lin Feiyan smiled, giving Luo Yuan a very good first impression.

"This is my honor." Luo Yuan shook her hand. It was extremely soft but felt like it was burning as if he was holding a mass of fired coals. It was not as cold as the surrounding temperature due to her skill but instead, was very high in temperature at almost 50 to 60 degrees Celsius. At this temperature, regular people would have already burned to death but she looked alright and calm.

Fang Peibin who stood next to them looked back and forth from time to time. Both of them had a fine, crystal like sets of teeth and even their skin was equally smooth and delicate with invisible pores, so he kind of sensed that both of them were from the same category of people.

"Let me introduce you, this is Commissioner Yu from the Political Headquarters of the sword unit. He is here today specifically to understand the actual situation of yesterday's mission. When are you available to have a conversation with him? "

"Hi, Commissioner Yu. I have nothing to do today so I am available anytime."

"Hi, Mr. Luo. I am sorry to disturb you, I just need a little bit of your time," said Commissioner Yu in a very humble way.

Lin Feiyan looked at the time, "Both of you please go ahead with the conversation. Is one hour sufficient for you, Commissioner Yu?"

Without getting the answer from Commissioner Yu, she talked to Fang Peibin, "Fang, please go and inform the other members and the crews to come for a meeting after one and a half hour. Please do not be late."

"Noted, captain," answered Fang Peibin seriously.

"Luo Yuan and Commissioner Yu, you guys proceed, I will need to leave first. There are a lot of backlogs to handle. Let's meet at the conference room later."

...

There were many vacant offices in the building, Luo Yuan randomly chose one and went inside. Although it was vacant, it was very clean inside. Apparently, it was cleaned every day. After the crew sent in tea, Commissioner Yu took out a file, recording pen from the briefcase and began the formal conversation. He asked in a detailed manner that even Luo Yuan had ignored some of the details. Fortunately, Luo Yuan had a superior memory otherwise he would not be able to answer most of the questions.

After half an hour the conversation had ended and he finally felt a little relieved.

"Thank you very much for your cooperation, Mr. Luo. This is my most relaxing conversation ever." Commissioner Yu stood up and shook Luo Yuan's hand, in his heart he had a very good impression on Luo Yuan. He had done more than 10 similar conversations and this time was undoubtedly the most relaxing one.

"I admire your dedication to your job too." Luo Yuan replied with courtesy.

"It would be the best if every evolved human was so highly principled like you." Exclaimed Commissioner Yu with his words full of resentment, before he then continued, "The finding of the new alloys was very significant for the redevelopment area as well. Its value was immeasurable. Other than to understand the situation from you, I am coming to recognize your outstanding contributions to the redevelopment area. Hereby, I would like to congratulate you in advance, General Luo."

Luo Yuan smiled.

...

At 1:30 pm, everyone except for Xie Junhui who went out to execute task was in the conference room. Luo Yuan was officially awarded as a Major General and directly appointed as vice-captain, with the two rewards of first-class credit.



The ceremony was very simple and not solemn at all. Except for two sets of uniforms and an official military certificate that served as proof of his rank, everything was like child's play. In fact, it did not have actual power at all. After all, he was still a member of the sword unit so being a vice captain was actually better than being a general.

As for the two first class credit rewards, he had totally no idea what they were used for. It seemed like it had a special purpose as he could see the envious expression of everyone which included Lin Feiyan.

The appointment process was very smooth and no one had any objections. Stronger personnel were destined to be respected in this special team. Nothing was important except strength and powerful skills that was able to convince and subjugate these bunch of evolved humans.

Next up was the memorial session for Vice-Captain Yuan. It was more crowded and grand as more people joined into the conference rooms in just a short while.

On the podium, there used to be a flower pot but it was now replaced with a black casket. However, the black casket was actually empty as the Vice-Captain Yuan was dead without a complete corpse so it was just symbolic.

All the members looked serious. It was only now that they felt slightly sad about the death. They never expected to see such a

powerful vice-captain die in such a cruel way. Only Wu Qianru slightly teared up as she was the partner of Vice-Captain Yuan back then when they executed the task together.

Before the eulogy was read, the family members were already arguing with each other, especially the seven pretty ladies who were the ones that argued most fiercely. They were crying whilst they fought and quarrelled with one another. Behind them, there were also friends and relatives that supported one of both sides while they had a dispute among themselves.

After the explanation of Fang Peibin, Luo Yuan finally knew that these seven ladies were the wives of Vice-Captain Yuan. Usually, after a member of the sword unit passes due to a mission, the government would grant a generous pension which was a large lump sum of money for ordinary people. Apparently, they were arguing for this.

After the ceremony was affected by this farce, the sad atmosphere had completely disappeared. Lin Feiyan had a headache when she saw the situation so she decided to skip the final process of eulogy in order to end the session as soon as possible. When she tried to walk out from the room she was pulled back in by a few ladies. It was all because of her petite size and the childlike of Lin Feiyan that made her looked harmless. Because of that, the ladies requested Captain Lin to help them to bbe the presiding judge since she was the leader here.

Luo Yuan was already bored with the ceremony and mourning so when he saw this scene he quickly winked at the gang and took the opportunity to go outside. When Luo Yuan tried to ask Fang Peibin

what was the function of the first class credits that he received, a beautiful young woman with a graceful posture held a pile of papers and walked straight to him. Obviously, she wanted to approach him so he had to wait for another time to ask about it.

"Hello, vice-captain. I am the manager of the Office Management, Chen Xinjie. I'll bring you along so you can pick your office. Do you have any specific requirements?" The young woman asked with a smiling face.

"No, I will just take the office of former vice-captain. I am not picky at all." Said Luo Yuan.

"This would be great, it saved us a lot of effort. That office is really the best here, I was worried that you'd feel that it was taboo to use that office." Chen Xinjie covered her mouth and chuckled. She had a pair of charming, teary eyes and she looked attractive when she laughed making Luo Yuan subconsciously take a look at her.

Both of them walked into the room of the former vice-captain which was at the end of the corridor. When he opened the door, Luo Yuan was surprised to see that the room had been cleaned and tidied up. The windows and desks were wiped until they were as shiny as new ones. The room was about 200 square feet which were equivalent to the size of a living room.

Indeed it was more like a living room. Other than the large desk which looked odd, it was almost no different than a living room. There was a refrigerator, full-color TV, air conditioning and all the fixtures. All of them were considered to be high-end products

before the apocalypse.

Vice-Captain Yuan had good taste, at least there was nothing that Luo Yuan felt uncomfortable with. When he opened the door on the left wall, it was a bedroom with a bathroom attached. It seemed like he could live inside permanently. In addition, there was a balcony outside the living room that made the room barely look like an office.

"If you're unsure or unsatisfied with the layout and decoration, we can modify the room according to your requests immediately."

Luo Yuan placed his major general uniform and the certificate on the desk as he went over to sit on the massage chair. He was hardly dissatisfied with the office which would be considered to be very luxurious even before the apocalypse. "No, I'm fine."

"Then do you need anything from your secretary?" Chen Xinjie continued.

"Secretary?!" Luo Yuan was stunned for a moment. It was a small department in the sword unit with only a few members. Was it necessary for him to have a secretary?

# Chapter 333: Level Eight Life

---

"Based on your rank, you're entitled to two assistants. One for general administration and one for your personal affairs," Chen Xinjie said seriously.

"I think I'm good." Luo Yuan felt helpless. He found this completely unnecessary.

"Vice Captain, you probably haven't gotten familiar with our department yet. We might not look busy, but there are several trivial matters that need to be attended to. For example, weapon customization and model manufacturing. We have to contact the respective departments. Besides that, there are also many documents and information that need to be collected and managed. All your personal chores, such as laundry and meal preparation, can be done by the assistants."

Although Chen Xinjie had said it indirectly, she actually had no confidence in the administrative capabilities of a violent super evolved human. It was true that most evolved humans were not well-educated, and they might not be able to handle that kind of work. In the end, Luo Yuan compromised and said, "Fine, but I don't need an assistant for my personal affairs."

He could not imagine what would happen if he brought an assistant back to his house.

Chen Xinjie did not try to persuade him. She just left a stack of documents on his desk and said, "That's up to you. These are the

resumes of the assistants so you can select one. They can report directly to you, anytime."

There were at least 10 sheets of resumes. Luo Yuan lifted his hand and flipped through them. Most of them looked presentable and had graduated with a bachelor degree.

Luo Yuan read fast. He finished reading in less than one minute thanks to his amazing memory. Then he picked one and told Chen Yujie, "This one."

"Ah!" Shocked, Chen Xinjie looked at Luo Yuan. She'd thought Luo Yuan would pick a pretty one, but the girl he had selected did not look pretty at all. However, she was above average in terms of performance.

"Is there a problem?"

"No, of course not. Should I ask her to come over now?" Chen Xinjie said quickly.

"Sure!"

Luo Yuan leaned back on the chair, closing his eyes to rest. After a while, Chen Xinjie brought the girl over. He opened his eyes and realized the girl was prettier than she looked in her photo. She looked gentle and shy, but she seemed nervous and agitated.

She felt uneasy as she stood to the side, her eyes fixed on the

floor. Luo Yuan smiled and said, "Relax, have a seat. Don't be nervous. Director Chen, could you please help us prepare some tea?"

"Oh, no! No, let me do this!" the girl said in panic.

"Nah, it's just a cup of tea, I'll do it. Take a seat, the Vice Captain wants to talk to you." Chen Xinjie smiled and pulled the girl back to a seat. Then she walked out of the room and closed the door.

Sun Yuting grew more nervous when she saw the door close. She was pinching her shirt, not knowing where to hide her hands. She had heard some rumors before, but she also knew that this was a good opportunity. She had to grab it.

The staff from the back end were all working under the Weapon Department. They all looked great, but their employee benefits were worse than the lowest rank of government servants. However, once she became the secretary of the Vice Captain, her life would change. Her mother would not need to work in the factory anymore, or might be able to get a better position.

She was getting more nervous as she thought about it. Her body started shaking.

"Are you from Donghu City?" Luo Yuan asked with a smile.

"Yes," Sun Yuting replied quickly. She realized her answer had been inappropriate, so she tried again, "I'm from Donghu city,

Jiangnan Province."

"Donghu University, 2010 graduate?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Yes, sir!" Sun Yuting answered hesitantly. She was curious about why he had asked that question. It was written on her resume after all.

"Alright, you'll be my secretary from now on. You know the job description, right?"

"Yes, I think so," Sun Yung said. Then she seemed to realize something and said, "I passed the interview?"

She looked really excited and happy as she saw Luo Yuan nod with a smile. She almost cried.

"Go back and get prepared. You can come to work tomorrow. Is there a problem?" Luo Yuan said.

"No, no problem," Sun Yuting said before leaving the room.

Luo Yuan smiled. The reason he had selected Sun Yuting as his secretary was because both of them were from the same town and had graduated from the same university. Jiangnan Province was located on the coast, so it was probably sinking as they spoke. Donghu City had also sunk.



There had to be less than 1,000,000 survivors from the Jiangnan Province who had migrated to the rehabilitation base. Perhaps, the residents of Donghu City who were still alive were less than 100,000. Luo Yuan sighed as he thought about it.

Right after Sun Yuting left, Chen Xinjie entered the room with tea. "She's gone?"

She put down the tea in front of Luo Yuan and asked, "What did you think of her?"

Luo Yuan believed that she was acting. He did not think Chen Xinjie had not seen Sun Yuting leave the room. All government officials seemed to be social experts. He did not take it seriously though.

"She was good."

"I'm glad you're satisfied. Although her past performance has not been that good, she's very detail-oriented and serious about her work. She's also quite mature and reliable compared to others. Oh right! This is an information terminal and an anti-magnetic satellite phone."

Luo Yuan opened the envelope she gave him and took everything out. He had seen an information terminal before. It looked similar to a pre-apocalypse wrist watch.

He lifted the anti-magnetic satellite phone and realized it was

bigger and heavier than a normal cell phone. There was a metal [Faraday's cage](#) on its surface.

A Faraday's cage is a grounded metal screen that surrounds a piece of equipment and keeps out any electrostatic and electromagnetic influences.

"This is the key for your room. Let me know when you're free to check it out."

"It's not urgent," Luo Yuan said. "Could you tell me about the two badges I received today?"

Based on what had happened that afternoon, there had to be something wrong with those badges. They did not seem like normal badges at all.

"Oh, you didn't know about that?" Chen Xinjie sounded surprised.

"This is just my second day in this department. No one informed me."

"I'm sorry, it's my fault. We have an internal website. Would you mind switching on your computer so I can help you insert the address?" Chen Xinjie said sincerely.

Luo Yuan nodded and switched on his computer. The computer was also anti-magnetic, but it was not as nice as the satellite phone. There was a layer of wires on the screen, which was quite

annoying.

Chen Xinjie bent down and leaned against Luo Yuan's back. He had no idea whether she was rubbing her boobs on his back intentionally as she typed in the website address. Luo Yuan felt uncomfortable, but she luckily got up very fast. He was relieved.

"Now you need to insert your military ID and provide a password. Do remember to change your password. Anyway, it's fine even if you don't. No one dares to login secretly," Chen Xinjie said with a smile.

Luo Yuan remained silent. He opened his military certificate and memorized the 10-plus-digit ID. Then he typed it in and clicked 'login'. The website looked very simple. It must have cost CNY 500 before the end of the world.

It was an e-commerce website, but there were not many items for sale on the platform. Luo Yuan realized there were only a few pages of items, and most of them were from a seller called S17173. After asking Chen Yujie, he found out that this was the official username of the rehabilitation base. Other than the official username, there were also a few other usernames. Compared to the rehabilitation base, which owned all nuclear weapons, the power of evolved humans was relatively weak.

However, although the website was simple, the items sold on the platform were not. Luo Yuan had not even seen most them in his life.

He looked at the items, sorting them from the cheapest to the most expensive. The more he saw, the faster his breathing became.

Most of the sellers had to be super evolved humans, as most of the items were weapons. The best one was a giant sword made of level eight mutated creature finger bones. The giant sword was glowing blue in the picture.

Level eight mutated creatures were beyond green level mutated beasts. Luo Yuan could not even imagine the power of that kind of creature, and he had no idea how they could be killed. Perhaps only a nuclear bomb could kill them.

The second most powerful weapon was a long red spear made of level eight mutated creature ribs.

...

Luo Yuan checked them out one by one. The first five items were all made of level eight mutated creatures. The sixth one was made of level seven mutated creature, and its price was less than 1/10 of the price of the fifth item.

Luo Yuan discovered that the ninth item was made of level eight mutated creature too. It was a semi-transparent crystal made of the heart of a level eight mutated creature. However, there was no explanation as to its function.

Luo Yuan looked at it for a long time and got his answer.

# Chapter 334: Genetic Invasion

---

"Is that the energy body (energy crystal)?"

Luo Yuan could tell as he read the introduction stated that was extracted from a heart.

In fact, the crystal Luo Yuan saw was totally different from the one he used to have. The color and transparency was completely different. That one was taken from a flood-dragon from the green level, it was yellowish red in color and not transparent which looked like those stones we could see everywhere. While the one he saw online was slightly more yellowish and semi-transparent. No one would think it was the same thing even if they put it together.

However, one was from a level six's mutated creature and another one was from level eight's mutated creature. Other than the difference from the outlook but the power was also very different. It would be very strange if it still looked the same.

He opened the page of the crystal and found more details about the introduction and test report. Luo Yuan did not try to avoid Chen Xinjie as the seller was the official rehabilitation base and the recipients were all real name. He would not be able to escape if the rehabilitation base wants to investigate. Hence, it was good to just read it openly.

However, Luo Yuan frowned as he looked at it as the crystal was very dangerous compared to the level six-energy body he had. The rehabilitation base had done a series of the experiment on it before

selling on the website. It was a strong electrolyte which was water soluble and it was also a very strong oxidant. They even conducted a live experiment but it failed due to gene breakdown.

The curious point was the experiment has been terminated since then. The upper management seemed to have given up on the studies and tried to sell it via the platform.

Luo Yuan could not understand and he had limited information to make any speculation.

In fact, the reason they gave up on the experiment was that of the specialty of the level eight mutated creature. It was beyond the human imagination and every single of them was a disaster to the human nation. The normal weapons were completely useless to them. One-fourth of the nuclear bombs were reserved for fighting those creatures. Fortunately, because of the nuclear bombs, the rest of the super mutated creature did not dare to come close to the rehabilitation base.

The life of that kind of creature has been evolved, their carcasses would be mysterious even after they died. It would not be rotten and still possess some scary power even after it died. Normal people would need to wear a protective suit before drawing closer to it.

All the living things died wherever its blood spilled on it. The flesh has a strong power to invade genes as the skin will rot even if it was contacted with a tiny blood stain. It was the scariest poison ever and that was the reason its carcass did not rot as the microorganism could not fight its power.

The power of genetic invasion could not be affected by high temperature and it was not edible. Thus, other than using it for the experiments, it was burnt with high temperature.

The discovery of the energy crystal was an accident. Although it looked unique, they could not do anything as long as the issue of genetic invasion still existed. It was not prioritized by the labs as there were many more experiments with numerous breakthrough they had.

Besides that, they were actually using the crystal body as a lure to attract super evolved humans for the purpose of the human experiment.

...

Luo Yuan frowned and pondered.

However, he decided to buy it first as it was difficult to find. He definitely knew the danger of genetic invasion. That mutated human was the result of evolution failure due to genetic invasion. That was considered good as they still survive, but the scariest thing was a genetic breakdown and they became a puddle of flesh and blood.

However, only the high-quality genes could invade the low-grade genes. There would be no difference for the same level of genes. Although he could not use it now, perhaps he could use it in the future when he upgraded again.

"Oh right, how much I have in my account?" Luo Yuan asked Chen Xinjie. He did not know how much he had when he wanted to purchase.

"A-level achievement can be traded for 10,000, you will get 20,000 as you have two badges. You can actually see it from your account." Chen Xinjie said as she tried to show him the way to check the balance."

Luo Yuan scanned the list and realized it was a huge amount and he could actually buy almost all the items below the fifth item. Even the five snowy white short spears which ranked at fifth was only 28,000.

While the energy crystal was only 1,500, he had more than enough to pay.

Luo Yuan finally completed the purchase. He felt relieved and asked, "When will the good delivered to me?"

"It will take about a day or two. Usually one day."

"That's great! I want to check more about it. Anyway, I know the schedule already, you can go back to work if you're busy. I'll let you know when I want to check on the house." Luo Yuan said to Chen Xinjie. He did not mind she saw what he just bought, but he felt uncomfortable when someone was watching him at the back.



"Alright, I really have something to do. My office is just next door, see you!" Chen Xinjie smiled and said. She then left the office with a nice fragrance left in the room.

Luo Yuan smiled and then continued to explore. There were so many things on the website, such as an eyeball which can trigger hallucinations, tree juice which can make the skin strong and a hood which can make one invisible.

However, he just wanted to check in order to fill his curiosity. Those things had not much use to him now and he did not keen on the weapons. Of course, it was not completely right as he was quite interested in the materials. However, based on Luo Yuan's assumption, those materials which used to make the weapons were not valuable.

Unfortunately, the level eight materials which he wanted was not on sale and the ready made weapon was too expensive. Thus, he could only pick one from the dark green level. He continued to search on the following page and finally, he found something!

It was a spiral shape of a horn which was about 150 cm and thickest part was as wide as a bowl. It was about 65 kg and ranked at level seven. The entire spiral horn was in gold color, it looked amazing!

Even he only saw it from the image, he could feel the power of the horn which was the mysterious energy to destroy something. No one could go close to it and those who touch it would feel the pain of being poked by needles. Their flesh would rot as if they insisted on holding it for long period of time.

That was the reason its price was a lot lower than the other weapons from level seven which was less than one-third of the normal price.

However, those weapons which could not be used by other evolved humans were usable by Luo Yuan. The Zhanmadao has been trained to the point where he could use it expertly and even the complimentary powers were well mastered by him.

He quickly bought it and then continued to explore. He finally clicked on the last page of the website. He switched off the computer as he did not see anything attractive. There must be many more things he has missed as he was just glancing through the website without reading carefully. Anyway, he was not in a hurry to get all the things.

# Chapter 335: Hypocritical

---

Next, Luo Yuan was accompanied by Chen Xinjie to view the house. The house was nearly 600 square feet and the decoration was quite good. There was nothing to be dissatisfied for expect for the house was actually located in the underground that made people subconsciously feel repressed.

After wandered around in Hope City since they came from Desert City, he finally officially settled down in this city.

At night, everyone was joyful and excited after they saw the house. In addition to the fruit that was brought back by Luo Yuan, it certainly raised the cheerful mood to the next level. The depressed feeling they had since the earthquake had now dissipated by half. Even Chen Jiayi, whose plant-based disease was getting serious also occasionally chuckled.

Looked at the crowd laugh, Luo Yuan smiled and did not say anything. After the destruction of civilization and humanity, this heartfelt laughter was undoubtedly precious to see.

"Brother Luo, come and eat some fruit. This is the best fruit to eat." Wang Shishi asked Luo Yuan when she saw him sat quietly at the side.

"I have eaten some in the noon. These are left for you guys." Luo Yuan softly said, "If you guys want to eat these fruit, I can always bring back more." Once Luo Yuan said it, Wang Shishi started asking for more.

"Brother Luo, you are the best! Bring more of the red fruit but bring less of the yellow fruit, it has too many dregs and is hard to bite."

"You still want to pick and choose when you already have fruits to eat." Luo Yuan said and laughed.

"Since I have the nice ones to eat, why would I want to eat the ones that are not so nice?" Wang Shshi said with a straight face, "Brother Luo, tell us more about the Firearms Bureau. Sister Huang said they are all super-evolved humans in the department."

Luo Yuan looked at Huang Jiahui and she suddenly laughed, awkwardly. However, he did not care much, after all there was nothing confidential. Since everyone was interested to know, he told them more about the department briefly.

Even when Luo Yuan spoke in a flat tone, everyone was amazed and felt envious to what he had said.

...

When it was about eight o'clock, the gathering ended and everyone dismissed and returned to their rooms. Luo Yuan was the last one who took a bath. When he wanted to go into the bedroom to sleep, he found that his bedroom was locked. He was about to knock on the door but stopped his hand midway.

He thought of that glance Zhao Yali gave before she left, it was only now that he realized the actual meaning of it. Seemed like both of the ladies had come into consensus about the schedule.

All this while, Luo Yuan and Zhao Yali's relationship was kept secret. Though everyone understood it all, nobody said anything since Zhao Yali did not have thick skin. Usually, when there were more people around them, they hardly spoke as well. Although it made him feel some inconvenience, it was still similar to an affair of some kind and gave him some excitement. On top of that, he enjoyed seeing the way Zhao Yali resisting him and yet she would still, in the end, accept what he had done to her.

When he thought about it, he was excited. He secretly went over to Zhao Yali's room and gently twisted the door handle. It was not locked. She was indeed hinting at something when she glanced at him. He opened the door and sneaked in, quietly closing the door behind him. For someone at his level, darkness was now almost no different than day. He saw that Zhao Yali was wearing pyjamas, covered by thin quilts while her back faced him.

When Luo Yuan gently coughed, Zhao Yali shuddered. He saw that she was trying her best not to move and tried to act serious. He could not help himself and asked, "Why Sister Yali, you're suddenly so brave today?"

Luo Yuan said as he undressed himself and teased, "I wouldn't be in the mood if it wasn't for your glance at me before you left."

It seemed that she was stimulated by the words Luo Yuan uttered. Her skin quickly turned red but still, she did not react.

Seeing her reaction, Luo Yuan was not surprised but was slightly happy with it. As compared to the past, her attitude had improved a lot. This time, she was at least in acquiesce.

He quickly finished undressing and sneaked into the blanket. At the same time, he extended his skilled and flexible hands into her pajamas and his hands went straight to work on her body. Her body was very warm and trembled slightly as her breath grew ragged. Luo Yuan was in doubt when he felt that the thing he was grabbing had grown bigger and more elastic.

If he still remembered correctly, Zhao Yali as a mature lady did not have such a slim waist and such tight skin.

Luo Yuan touched her for a while and felt something was not right. "No, this is not Zhao Yali." He was stunned and cursed in his heart. When he tried to sneak out, the other person seemed to feel his escape plan and quickly turned over to grab him. Luo Yuan wanted to get rid of her but she had sat on his body.

When Luo Yuan saw the face, his body startled, "Shishi you... Why are you sleeping here? It's not..."

"Why can't I sleep here? This is my room," said Wang Shishi shyly as she gasped.

In the dark, her eyes were shiny and charming. Luo Yuan wanted to say it was Zhao Yali's room but he shut his mouth. Apparently, it was not the right time to speak about such things as he quickly said, "Well, I was wrong, Shishi. Come down."

"I don't want to. Are looking for Sister Zhao? Wouldn't it be the same if you looked for me instead? I can do whatever she does." Wang Shishi said bravely. Once she finished the sentence she was scared but also excited.

"Shishi, you are still young and do not understand anything. To be honest, I have always treated you as a daughter or sister." Luo Yuan urged earnestly.

Wang Shishi did not respond but groaned. Her hips gently rocked against Luo Yuan's private parts a few times and made the extremely sensitive Luo Yuan breathe heavily as his privates grew. "Is this how you treat your sister? Brother Luo, you are a hypocrite! Don't even think about forgetting everything you just did to me. Now, I am not pure anymore and an apology is not enough compensation. How am I going to find a boyfriend? How can I live? How would other people look at me? "

At this time Wang Shishi refused to continue being well-behaved. Her barrage of words made Luo Yuan speechless. In his heart, he thought, "Not pure anymore? You are a millennial and not live in the 80's. How can you be more conservative than me?" Though he said that, he knew that his actions were inexcusable and in fact, he did a shameful thing so it was difficult for him to argue.

In the dark, her black hair slowly fell down from the shoulder as she took off her underwear revealing a fair and perfect body. She lowered her body and the pair of bulging breasts gently shook in front of Luo Yuan. It made Luo Yuan feel hot and thirsty. He vaguely heard Wang Shishi ask him, "Brother Luo, am I pretty?"

...

After they were done, Luo Yuan climbed down from Wang Shishi's body. When he looked at the tired and weak Wang Shishi he was happy but felt a tinge of worry in his heart. He never expected that he would have lost control.

He covered his face and regretted that he did not hold back with the temptation and was not able to control his lower body. There was definitely going to be a lot of time spent looking at the floor tomorrow.

While he was deep in thought, delicate arms hugged Luo Yuan from behind, the gentle touch made his mind swing. He secretly cursed, "Fine, if they want to blame me then i'll just let them be. Wang Shishi is part of the family, they should be able to understand it..."

The next day, Luo Yuan did go out early. Wang Shishi slept until she woke up naturally. The brave Wang Shishi last night was now embarrassed and shy. She did not dare to look at him and whispered, "I am a little bit scared."

Luo Yuan understood what she was worried about and softly said, "Don't worry, I am here for you."

He was not a man if he did not dare to bear the responsibility.



Wang Shishi answered lightly and both of them dressed up. When Luo Yuan opened the door and walked out the room together with Wang Shishi, Chen Jiayi just woke up with a bleary-eye and saw the scene. She was stunned and immediately ran back to her room like she was frightened by something.

They entered the living room, the crowd that was originally chatting suddenly became silent. Huang Jiahui sighed secretly and looked sad. At the same time, Zhao Yali was focusing on eating her breakfast. She did not seem to pay attention and acted calmly.

"You guys are having breakfast." Luo Yuan laughed awkwardly and said while he pulled the worried Wang Shishi to join the table. Their action spoke plenty without the need to say anything.

No one answered, only Wang Xianguang snorted a bit.

"Jiahui, you slimed down a lot recently. Eat more. How can you eat so little every day? There is no need for you to lose weight. As for Sister Yali, the weather has been changing a lot you have to wear more to keep warm."

Zhao Yali was angry in her heart. Last night she deliberately left the door unlocked but someone did not come to her. When she opened the door, she heard sounds coming from Wang Shishi's room. After all that had happened, he still had the cheek to purposely strike a conversation? If she was not a timid person she would have thrown the chopstick at his face.

Huang Jiahui glanced at him, "Now you blame me for being too

thin."

Luo Yuan quickly smiled and apologized, "No, of course, I am not blaming."

"I bet you dare not blame me. Come and sit here, Shishi. Accompany me to the market later. I have not visited the market nearby yet." As a mature woman, although Huang Jiahui was uncomfortable and had an unspeakable bitterness in heart, she knew how to hold back and let go. Both of them had been together for so long, she knew his temper too well. Although Luo Yuan had a gracious attitude and also spoke softly, underneath his facade he was a very proud man. It was already his limit to be so humble to her.

After all, they were together just because they needed to stay warm with each other during the apocalypse. No matter her age or experience in matters of marriage they were not considered as a normal couple. This had always been her pain point. She was very clear that Luo Yuan did not have much feelings for her at that point of time. With his status and strength, he could demand any woman that he fancied. There was a period when she could barely sleep during the night and was worried that Luo Yuan would abandon her and be with other women. Up until the time they had lived together for a long period of time did their relationship become more harmonious, like a family did her feeling of unease gradually subside.

But even so, she never thought of owning Luo Yuan exclusively. Although it was a surprise to see Luo Yuan and Wang Shishi together, she already knew that this would happen sooner or later.

Living during the apocalypse, she had learned to let go of things as ensuring that she was alive was more important.

Wang Shishi lowered her head and answered quietly, her mind was finally relieved.

"Sister Yali can go together too! You already stayed in the hostel for so long, it's good to go out to get some fresh air." Luo Yuan looked at Zhao Yali and smiled.

Zhao Yali looked up and saw guilt in his eyes. She was soft hearted and agreed without saying much.

...

"I shouldn't try to hint at people again next time." Luo Yuan thought secretly.

...

Half an hour later, as Luo Yuan pleasantly walked to the weapons unit building, Sun Yuting was already waiting in front of the office.

"Vice-captain." she quickly came to Luo Yuan when she saw him and addressed him respectfully.

Luo Yuan opened the door and smiled, "Come in."

He sat on the massage chair and ordered, "The first task for you is to collect all the data of completed and uncompleted task after the announcement and send them to me."

"Noted. Do you have any other orders?"

"No, complete this first. By the way, get me a cup of tea." Luo Yuan said.

"Okay..."

This tea was not like the tea before the apocalypse but was tea made from mutated tea leaves. After he drank a cup yesterday, not only was fragrance fresh but it also helped him to calm down his mind so he quickly fell in love with this drink.

The tea was soon sent in and Sun Yuting gently closed the door and went out.

Whilst taking a whiff of the tea, Luo Yuan gently tapped his index finger on the table. There were so many tasks that led him to believe he would be able to find clues regarding an intelligent race, which included the discovery of a wisdom tree.

Although the redevelopment area was powerful, it did not mean that they knew of everything. Even if they had found the magical effects of the wisdom tree, they would probably still have missed a few things.

# Chapter 336: Information

---

Luo Yuan went to the basement on level 15 to practice his saber skills for an hour. He also took some time to teach Fang Peibin. All the data was ready when he got back.

After telling Sun Yuting to make him some tea, he began to read the information. There was a total of 12 GB of data which consisted of around 300 missions together with text and images. Most of the missions were C-Level and the level of difficulty was probably less than level five. These made up 90% of the total and the amount of completed missions were quite high.

B-Level missions which were level six missions only made up were only about 20 to 30 missions from the total. One-fourth of the missions were incomplete. On the other hand, there were not many A-Level missions, and most of them were also incomplete.

Luo Yuan looked at the incomplete missions and tried to estimate the time it would take to complete them. He realized that if he were to complete them all, he would increase his level by two. This would be easier than relying on his luck to find a mission like he was used to.

However, there were also some more important, urgent missions. He had to find the Wisdom Tree first. Although he was currently powerful enough to handle B-Level missions, an A-Level mission would be no easy feat by any means. He may actually not be able to make it back home.

As long as he could find the Wisdom Tree, his power would be upgraded when his Physique and Intelligence reached the same level. By that time, he would have the confidence he needed to complete the mission.

Luo Yuan took a sip of his tea and began to skim through the information. He finished his lunch fast and went back to his desk again. He made lots of remarks whenever he found something relevant. He discovered a few strange points in just a few hours.

For example, a group of people had gotten attacked and they'd gone missing along with their weapons. Usually, if one was attacked by a mutated beast, their corpse might get eaten, but their weapons and bullets would still be there. No matter how desperate a mutated beast was, it would not eat the weapons. Luo Yuan speculated that the only way the weapons could have gone missing was if the group had bumped into a highly intelligent species.

For example, there was a stone ax in some of the photos he had.

There were many intelligent species near the rehabilitation base. However, it was not easy to trace their footprints, and Luo Yuan had no idea whether the management had any further information as they never shared any intel regarding this issue.

Two parcels arrived in the afternoon around 3 p.m. Luo Yuan could not wait to open them. He switched off the computer and left the office after informing Chen Xinjie.

This was one of the pros of working for the bureau was that he

could come and go as he pleased. It was fine if he did not come to the office, as long as he completed three low-level missions. The Captain would not even criticize him, as long as he did not cause them any problems.

Of course, the fewer missions he completed, the fewer points he would gain. Without points, he would not be able to buy rare resources. Luo Yuan was already familiar with all the rules and regulations of the bureau. He would get 100 points when he completed a C-Level mission, and he would get 10 times more points for every higher level mission he completed.

In other words, based on the value of his contribution, Luo Yuan's achievement had been undervalued when he previously killed the deformed monster.

However, he had yet to join the bureau officially at the time, so theoretically he had not been employed by them. Besides, they could not have identified the level of the deformed monster based on the active energy in its blood. Therefore, he had been lucky to receive two A-Level achievements and the title of Vice-Captain.

Luo Yuan took the elevator to basement level nine. The whole area was like an underground city with wide streets and modern buildings. No one would know they were underground if they did not notice the rocks on the ceiling. In order to fully utilize the space, all the buildings had been built with four floors and their roofs almost reached the ceiling.

This was a residential zone, so it was vastly different from a few levels above where there was a small but polluted industrial zone.

Normal people could not live there. It was working hours though, so the streets were empty and there was not a single shadow that could be seen.

Luo Yuan was carrying the two parcels, which weighed about 50 kilos with ease. He was walking fast, so he reached his house after a few minutes.

He opened the door and saw that the lights were on. Chen Jiayi was sitting on the couch in the living room. There was a lot of moss on her head. She had not moved in a while, and she had not even noticed that Luo Yuan had come in.

Luo Yuan felt amused as he patted the fluffy moss. Before he could touch it, the moss shrank back into her body.

"Brother Luo, you're back!" Chen Jiayi was shocked.

"Why are you alone? Where is everyone else?" Luo Yuan asked.

"They went shopping. I didn't feel like going," Chen Jiayi said.

Luo Yuan was stunned. He got worried as he looked at her. The time Chen Jiayi spent idling was getting longer, and she would continue to remain idle if they did not talk to her. That would be really bad for her. Luo Yuan set the parcels aside and sat down beside her. "Why didn't you feel like going out?" he asked patiently.



"I just didn't find it interesting." Chen Jiayi quickly lowered her head as if she had done something wrong.

"This is not right. I understand that you're affected by the moss, but you're a human, not a plant. You will become a real plant one day if you keep up your current lifestyle. Do you really want to be a plant?"

Chen Jiayi thought silently, "It's actually quite good. Being able to absorb sunlight is really fun!"

She raised her head and looked at Luo Yuan's serious expression. Then she quickly looked down at the floor again and said, "No."

Luo Yuan's head ached. He felt pity for her as he looked at her. She had been better when she'd attended the classes in Desert City, as there had been lots of homework waiting for her every day. However, she had gotten worse ever since she'd stopped going to school. Luo Yuan sighed. He believed that they needed to send her to school to keep her busy. "I think you need to go to school, otherwise you might not be able to keep up. I'll contact the schools in the area. It's always good to learn more."

Chen Jiayi nodded insecurely.

Luo Yuan smiled and patted her head before he said, "I'm not trying to kick you out. This will always be your home. You can come home every week."

Luo Yuan continued to talk for a few more minutes. Once Chen Jiayi felt better, he picked up the parcels again. As he went into his room, he grew very excited. He opened the small parcel and found three items inside it. There was a glass tube containing a semi-transparent crystal, a small bottle of helium, and a bottle of wax.

Apparently, the helium and the wax were for resealing work to prevent oxidation.

Luo Yuan lifted the glass tube and looked at the energy crystal. It was a lot smaller than it had looked in the picture. It was about the size of his thumb, and there were scratches on its surface. Apparently, it had been used in an experiment. However, it was still bigger than the one he'd had before.

As he looked at the shiny crystal, he switched off the light. When the room was completely dark, he saw a weak light glowing inside the tube.

It was definitely not a fluorite. It was a solid light source. The crystal was glowing.

# Chapter 337: Illusion

---

In nature, there were very few substances that could shine on their own and they were all radioactive substances.

These substances undoubtedly contained an enormous amount of energy. Take enriched uranium for example. One gram of enriched uranium could release 20 joules of energy, which was equivalent to 1.5 tons of anthracite coal power that had the capacity to generate an output of 5555.56 kWh. This might seem insignificant, but the energy generated could melt 70 to 80 tons of steel into iron and burn people to ashes two times over.

Of course, artificial uranium had existed for a billion years. If one gram of uranium decayed naturally, it needed hundreds of billions of years to release even half its energy. The energy released in the form of radiation every second was so little, it was almost negligible.

Luo Yuan did not know what substance this crystal stone was, but it certainly was not radioactive. Judging by the way it released light and heat, its energy would diminish in just a few years.

Then again, the solar thermal energy released from the crystal was a thousand times stronger than that of enriched uranium, and its weight was about 50 grams. He could not tell the amount of energy contained in the stone. Taking a level eight mutated beast's giant body and fearsome power into account, Luo Yuan estimated that it had to contain no less energy than one gram of enriched uranium.

Luo Yuan put the glass tube down with a serious expression. This stuff was too dangerous. He planned to process the horn first, and come back to the crystal later. He carefully placed the glass tube inside the box and closed it before opening the box that contained the spiral horn.

Inside the box was a two-meter long wooden bar. The box was made of fine wood, and it was as dim as golden steel. Even without identification, Luo Yuan could roughly estimate that it was dark blue level timber.

The wooden box was tightly sealed with dried vine, so he could not open it by using force. He had to use his Will to separate those vines.

He was just about to open the box but as his hand touched the lid, he felt a slight numbness in his fingers, as if he had been pricked by needles. He quickly pulled his hand back and looked at them. He was surprised to see that they were full of fine red dots.

Fortunately, his skin was tough, so he wasn't bleeding.

The horn was terrible. Someone had cut it from a dead beast, but its power was not even half of what the creature had. Luo Yuan could imagine it being a powerful weapon when it had still been intact on the mutated beast. It would have pricked its opponents with a hundred holes before even coming into contact with them.

Luo Yuan did not dare look at it anymore. He gathered his Will and covered his whole body in a soft light. He gently opened the

wooden box, his eyes squinting unconsciously. He could not even look at it if he did not take any precautions.

The horn was seemed to glow a whitish-gold color and it exuded a threatening force. Luo Yuan could vaguely feel an invincible force raging in the air. The wooden box under the horn had almost been eroded by the power of the horn and a layer of fine sawdust had piled up under the horn. Compared to the pictures on the website, it did not do the horn's power any justice.

Luo Yuan reached out to touch and feel the horn, all the while still consuming his Will.

Although the force exuded from the Zhanmadao was compelling enough, it was still just a feeling, which was simply incomparable to such power.

Luo Yuan used his identification technique.

"Phantom Unicorn"

"Rarity: Dark Green"

"Weight: 65 kg"

"Additional Abilities: Bloody Tear"

"Remarks: The Phantom Unicorn is the darling of nature blessed with unnatural speed. It has no fixed territory and just wanders around to its every whim and fancy. Its speed and horn are its only means of self-protection."

Luo Yuan took a look around and realized that the additional capabilities of the horn matched the Zhanmadao. The most important feature of a weapon was its sharpness. Any other extra capabilities were insignificant.

Luo Yuan pulled out the Zhanmadao and concentrated his Will. Then he stabbed the saber into the middle of the horn and started to use the synthesization technique.

The horn gradually began to heat up, and soon it was sweltering. With a saber in its center, the color of the white-gold horn quickly faded away as powder fell from it. At the same time, the Zhanmadao, which had originally been black-and-white, gradually formed a slight white-gold pattern. An invisible force began to spread through the blade of the saber.

As time passed, most of the horn was slowly reduced to ashes. Only one-third of it could not be synthesized.

Luo Yuan pulled out the knife and saw that this time the whole Zhanmadao had turned into an amazing weapon. It exuded an extremely threatening invisible force. He felt like he was being stabbed in the heart by a needle just by looking at it. He concentrated his mind, and the threatening force immediately converged within the blade of the Zhanmadao. Then, as he

released his Will into the blade, it exuded a powerful raging force that was even stronger than what he had seen.

After looking at the original wooden box that had held the horn, Luo Yuan flicked the Zhanmadao and the tip seemed to cross the wooden box from the top without even touching it. The distance between the two was about two feet, yet something amazing happened. The Zhanmadao flashed and the whole box was split into two in an instant. The incision was smooth and delicate like the surface of a mirror.

The blade of Luo Yuan's concentrated Will was about half a meter long, and it was very sharp. The power did not immediately disappear abruptly after half a meter either. Instead, it gradually weakened until it was not enough to cut a wooden box anymore.

Of course, this was merely an additional ability. The blade formed by his Will was several times more powerful than this.

Through that test, Luo Yuan had discovered that his weapon could now complement his Will. With its help, the power of his Will could be supported, making it more stable and sharp. He could also expand its attack distance to a maximum of five meters and reduce the consumption of his Will greatly.

"Phantom Zhanmadao"

"Rarity: Dark Green"

"Weight: 24 kg"

"Attack: 40-46"

"Additional Ability 1: Attack Speed +3"

"Additional Ability 2: Passive Tearing. It can easily cut any sharp objects with a moderate effect."

"Additional Ability 3: Passive Bleeding. It can make wounds suffer incurable bleeding."

"Remarks: This is a Zhanmadao with a mysterious force. It is very sharp, and no one can use it except for its owner."

As he checked out the powerful properties in his mind, Luo Yuan looked pleased. To some extent, this dark green, level seven horn was far more valuable than a level eight material.

Its only disadvantage was that the knife was almost five pounds heavier. It made Luo Yuan, who was used to the original Zhanmadao a bit uncomfortable, but he just needed a little more practice to adapt to it. Aside from this minor flaw, everything was perfect.

After the synthetization, one-third of the horn was left. When Luo Yuan picked up the horn to tidy up the room, he noticed something strange. The threatening force the horn exuded had



completely disappeared after the synthesization.

"Could it have been fully integrated by the Zhanmadao? Is the Zhanmadao's absorption capacity infinite?"

Luo Yuan was a little curious, as this was the first time he had noticed this. After all, when the Zhanmadao synthesized, either the material to be absorbed was limited or its ability was hidden. However, he could not know just by looking at it, which was why he had not paid any attention to it before.

As he lacked any evidence, all he could do was make a note for future reference.

Luo Yuan controlled the compelling force of the Zhanmadao until it was back to its normal state. Then he inserted it into the scabbard and put it away.

As he looked at the small box next to him, his heart began to stir. He could not resist taking a look at such a powerful substance.

He reached out to open the box and took the stone out of the bottle carefully. He removed the wax seal quickly before he pulled the cork out.

Suddenly, a threatening aura spread out and stifled Luo Yuan's breath. His expression quickly changed. This feeling was comparable to a real level eight mutated beast, but even so, he felt much difficulty in repressing this feeling in his heart.

Luo Yuan took a deep breath as he knew how powerful a real level eight mutated beast would be. Just the thought of one would have made anyone desperate. By the time one faced such a beast, they may not even dare go near it because of the powerful aura it would exude.

He shook his head to get rid of any distractions. He dared not hesitate. The energy of the crystal could easily oxidize, and further exposure to air could reduce its power.

To avoid any incidents, he covered himself with a thin layer of Will and quickly grabbed the crystal with his hand.

However, when the palm and crystal came into contact, the crystal, which was a living thing started to tremble severely. Meanwhile, Luo Yuan was absent-minded and an invisible roaring noise rose in his mind. He could vaguely see a giant beast with vivid colors roar angrily in his head.

Luo Yuan took a few steps backward. When he recovered, his face had turned pale.

His Will had unknowingly dissipated by more than half and the layer of Will he had surrounding his body became too difficult to maintain.

He looked down at his palm and found himself unconsciously holding the crystal. He shrugged. The energy of the crystal was still in his hands, it just wasn't as violent as before. The crystal was

not moving at all. It felt like the whole scene had been just a hallucination.

Luo Yuan exhaled softly and shivered. He was already soaked in sweat.

"What's going on?"

His face was serious, and he was still afraid.

# Chapter 338: Removal Of Hidden Danger

---

"Active Energy Body"

"Grade: Average"

"Weight: 53g"

"Remarks: This is an average grade semi-crystalline active body of energy with low amounts of impurities. It's an alternative form of energy storage which grows inside the body of mutated creatures that are above the green level. Additional active energy for emergency purposes can be stored by increasing food and energy intake."

It was an energy crystal indeed!

Luo Yuan began to calm down and started thinking rationally again. He seemed to have figured something out as he looked at the thin layer of Will around him and linked it to the incident earlier. Apparently, his Will had conflicts with remnants of the giant beast's Will which still remained in the energy crystal!

Luo Yuan seemed to have found the answer as he thought about the genetic invasion. What is a gene? In Biology, we learned that a gene is an inherited substance which includes DNA and RNA. For this purpose, we will ignore RNA as it only plays a supporting role.

DNA is formed by deoxy-nucleotide chains which comprise of deoxyribose, phosphoric acid and four types of nucleobases. A unicellular organism such as the Paramecium or multicellular organism like human beings have similar DNA structures. However, everything had now changed due to the outbreak of mutations which caused various strong creatures to slowly appear. If we ignore the element of mystery, it is basically the evolution of original species on Earth into more powerful beings. Other than the minority of deformed "monsters", most creatures were carbon-based and had traces of the past within their DNA.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan thought of mutated humans that failed to evolve properly. They ended up being totally different from their ancestors and hated human beings very much. Luo Yuan's heart was beating rapidly at this point but perhaps the genetic invasion was not as mysterious as what people thought. Its main reason might be the fact that the mutated beast had left its Will in the crystal. Luo Yuan felt pumped up as he looked at the energy crystal lying on his palm calmly.

For ordinary people, it might be considered poison but for him, he just needed to utilize a little more of his Will to maximize its power. However, that was just speculation. It was quite a dangerous object which could cause death if used inappropriately. He needed to conduct more experiments before using it.

Luo Yuan was worried that there would be leftover Will from the mutated beast within the crystal so he tried inserting his Will into the crystal once again. Indeed, the energy crystal moved a few times but it was not as active as before. The crystal remained stationary after a few seconds.

Luo Yuan was still worried so he continued to cleanse the crystal until only his Will was left inside and he only stopped when he could sense his Will connected to the crystal.

He waved at the sheath of his weapon and the Zhanmadao automatically flew out and sliced an artery on his wrist. Blood immediately gushed out and floated in the air under Luo Yuan's control. More and more blood oozed out and formed a ball of blood which was about the size of his fist.

The wound on his wrist recovered instantly with a tiny scar once he realized that he had sufficient blood. Luo Yuan frowned as he saw there was a little blood on the scar. He then utilized his healing powers again and the wound was finally closed. The scar even disappeared after 10 seconds. He had forgotten that his Zhanmadao had a passive ability to cause bleeding after it was modified.

After that, he scratched some powder from the surface of the energy crystal and sprayed it on the ball of blood.

The powder dissolved in the blood and it began to change. The temperature of the blood increased and it began to bubble like a pot of boiling water. A good aroma slowly spread around as the blood changed and triggered the hunger in Luo Yuan.

After a while, the blood had stopped any traces of movement. Luo Yuan watched the ball of blood and waited for a few minutes. He felt relieved and thought, "I guess I was right."

The next experiment would be the most dangerous one. He used

his Will to move the blood into his mouth and swallowed it.

The reason he did not inject the ball of blood directly into his bloodstream was to protect himself. He could vomit out the ball of blood to save his life if something went wrong. The blood flowed into his stomach via his throat and he started feeling a burning sensation within his stomach instantly. His body heated up and he opened his eyes wide as he felt an excitement within himself. Every single cell in his body was eager to absorb the active energy. Unfortunately, there was not much energy to absorb as the feeling of excitement came and left in a few seconds, leaving him slightly disappointed when he recovered.

Since he has confirmed it was safe to use, he cut a thin slice from the energy crystal and put it into his mouth. The energy was 100 times more than the previous one. He felt like he was being struck by lightning as his brain instantly went blank and his entire body turned a shade of dark red and was surrounded by steam and heat.

He was sitting on the floor stationary while a strong force flowed in his body as every cell hungrily absorbed the energy from the crystal. The cells became packed and soft as the mitochondria duplicated rapidly and his bones got stronger...

"Consumption of active energy body. Physique +1"

"Consumption of active energy body. Physique +1"

The system repeated the notification, but Luo Yuan did not hear it. He finally recovered after one minute with a long howl.

"Brother Luo, what's happening?" The door suddenly opened and Chen Jiayi broke into the room. Apparently, she was frightened by his long howl.

"I'm fine, just leave me alone." Luo Yuan said gently.

However, Chen Jiayi was shocked as she saw Luo Yuan, "Brother Luo! Your... your face looks very skinny!"

Luo Yuan realized his shirt was very big and he felt a lot of breeze inside it. He then touched his face and realized it had shrunk a little.

However, that was a small matter to him and he truly did not care. It happened before when he did self-treatment in the jail of the Desert City, and he can easily recover by eating more food.

Luo Yuan took another slice after Chen Jiayi left the room. The energy grade of the crystal was very high and the energy was powerful. His Physique had been upgraded by two points throughout the process. It plateaued since then. He finally finished the crystal and there was a tiny semi-transparent crystal that grew inside his heart.

Both of his Strength and Physique had been upgraded to 17-points which were more than his Agility. The entire energy crystal has helped him to upgrade five properties and that was amazing!



He could feel that his new skinny body was full of an explosive power. Besides that, his senses had changed after his Physique upgraded.

The quiet room became very noisy as he could see different shapes of the dust flying in the air like meteorites. He could smell the snacks Wang Shishi tried to hide and he could feel the friction of air on his skin.

It was a wonderful feeling as another side of the world seemed to be revealed. Once the veil was lifted, he was able to see the world the way it was intended, in all its glorious beauty.

...

Of course, there was also a major change in his fighting power.

17-points of Strength was equivalent to about 16 times the Strength of normal people. He could now lift an object that weighed up to 1.2 tons and his 15-points of Agility allowed him to move an object weighing more than 10 tons with a single hand.

Tyson could break a five millimeter steel plate with 0.5 tons of Strengths and Luo Yuan could very well destroy a tank with his current level of Strength which was more powerful than heavy artillery! He need not cheat now if he happened to fight Fang Peibin again.

# Chapter 339: Urgent Mission

---

Luo Yuan got up, took a few steps and almost stumbled on the floor. Since his Strength and Physique was now on a completely different level, he had to learn to walk again. Fortunately, he had enough experience to handle it and after only a few minutes of adjusting himself, he could walk normally. This was the result of him controlling his muscles and it took time for him to make it seem natural. It would take him a bit more time to adjust his body to a condition where he could fight optimally.

The energy crystal in his heart was like a strong motor that circulated energy throughout his body every time his heart beat. Luo Yuan was unnaturally energetic and for some reason, he felt that he could survive even if he did not drink any water for a month. He was lingering in the room as he tried to adapt to the sudden boost of energy. After half an hour, he pulled out his Zhanmadao and began to practice. At the beginning, his posture was awkward and he felt like a novice. However, as he continued to practice, his movements got better and quicker as wind circulated the room.

After a while, Luo Yuan stopped his practice. The strong wind in the room slowly came to a halt and Luo Yuan inserted his Zhanmadao into its sheath and realized that it was not as heavy as before. He was stunned as he looked around the messy room and noticed that the bed sheet and blanket had been scattered all over the place. Moreover, one of the legs of his bed frame had gone missing and there were many scratches on the wardrobe and walls in the room.

At the beginning, he tried to control his power to avoid damaging

the furniture. However, the more comfortable he felt, the more excited he got and in the end, he went all out and damaged almost everything in the room. Luckily for Luo Yuan, the building was made from materials of at least a blue level rank or there would be many holes in the wall by now.

Luo Yuan intended to quickly tidy up the room before Huang Jiahui arrived. However, he had no idea where to start. He heard the main door open and a group of ladies could be heard talking. Luo Yuan sighed and then walked out of the room.

Those ladies just came back from the market and were shocked as they saw that Luo Yuan was different! They finally calmed down after listening to his explanation. However, it was not an easy task to comfort them after that. Huang Jiahui entered his bedroom with a few packets of groceries and screamed as she saw the mess. Unfortunately, Luo Yuan already escaped when she came back to the living room.

He wandered outside until late in the evening and eventually returned with guilt around dinner time. Huang Jiahui was clearly trying to control her anger throughout their dinner. She did not say a single word to Luo Yuan as she was very upset with him for leaving the place in such a mess. During bedtime, Huang Jiahui took the blanket out from the wardrobe and went straight into Zhao Yali's bedroom. Luo Yuan smiled awkwardly as if he was up to no good.

...

Inside the bedroom, Wang Shishi gasped tenderly into his ears.

She was grinding on top of Luo Yuan's body by continuously moving her hips in a circular motion. Suddenly, her body trembled and she then leaned on top of Luo Yuan's body. Wang Shishi hugged him and kissed his chest repeatedly. Her face was red and she said, "Brother Luo, I'm so tired... It's your turn!"

Luo Yuan could not wait any longer. He immediately got on top of Wang Shishi and thrust his penis into her body repeatedly. However, Wang Shishi was too weak to handle him and surrendered in less than 10 minutes. Soon after, she fell asleep from utter exhaustion after being penetrated and pleased multiple times by the horny, energetic, Luo Yuan.

As you would imagine, Luo Yuan was extremely energetic today and he was still in the mood to enjoy himself. Despite his penis already being erect from his activities with Wang Shishi, it got even longer as he thought of the fact that Zhao Yali and Huang Jiahui were sleeping on the same bed! This was a rare opportunity indeed and he knew that he must grab the chance!

He lustfully put on his clothes as he saw Wang Shishi lying on the bed deep in sleep. He then got up and walked out of his room to find fresh meat. At this point, Luo Yuan was already ready to feast on his new prey. He twisted the doorknob gently but realized it was locked! However, getting the lock to open was now a trivial matter to him.

He used his Will to follow through on his lust and within seconds he had successfully opened the door and entered before he slowly closed the door again. The room was quickly occupied by screams from the two women who were scolding Luo Yuan as he tried to

apologize. However, after a while, those sounds were converted into longing moans.

...

At midnight, Luo Yuan was lying between two smooth, soft naked bodies. He suddenly heard the phone ring and had to slowly move their fair arms away and pull his legs out from the embrace of their pink thighs. He woke them up even though he was trying to be gentle.

"What are you doing? You've been bullying us the entire night!" Huang Jiahui remarked as she pinched the softest piece of flesh on Luo Yuan's body that was a lot harder than his other muscles not long ago. On the other hand, Zhao Yali's face looked mad as she thought Luo Yuan wanted to have sex again. She did not bother and turned to the other side.

"Don't pinch me! I heard the phone ring!" Luo Yuan said.

"Who is calling you at this hour? It's so late." Huang Jiahui asked with a dissatisfied tone.

"The phone that rang was given to me by the department. Something must have happened. I need to answer the call." Luo Yuan got up and put on his clothes. He then said to them, "You guys get some sleep first."

The phone was in Wang Shishi's room. Luo Yuan opened the

door carefully but realized that Wang Shishi was awake. He pretended nothing happened and asked her to continue sleeping. He then took the phone and walked out the room.

"Luo Yuan! We have an urgent mission. We need you to be at the department before 4:30 a.m." Captain Lin Feiyan spoke hastily from the other side of the line. Based on her tone, Luo Yuan could tell that it must be a serious matter.

"What's happening?" Luo Yuan asked.

"Tell you later." She replied.

"Alright, I'm heading there now." Luo Yuan said.

She hung up the call after hearing Luo Yuan's response.

Luo Yuan put on his armor and picked up his Zhanmadao. Huang Jiahui and Zhao Yali were still awake when he walked into the living room. They asked worriedly, "Do you want to grab some food?"

"I'm good, they will prepare food for me. Two of you go back to sleep. Don't worry. I'll be back soon." Luo Yuan said as he waved before he closed the door to the room.

Zhao Yali and Huang Jiahui looked at each other and blushed slightly. They felt a little awkward as they recalled the scene that just happened.

...

After about 10 minutes, Luo Yuan arrived at the office. He walked into the lobby of the first floor and realized there were two people there. Xie Junhui and Xu Qianshen looked very serious as they waved at Luo Yuan when they saw him walking towards them.

"Do you know what's going on?" Luo Yuan asked as he nodded to greet them.

"I'm not sure. I was trying to find out as well." Xie Junhui replied.

He looked closely at Luo Yuan and realized that he looked different. He was shocked but he did not say anything as he was more concerned about the current incident. They suspected that it was something which threatened the safety of the entire rehabilitation base. None of them could reject the mission, otherwise, they would be expelled.

After a few minutes, crazy Mr. Wang and Li Dong also arrived. They sat down on the couch and remained silent after greeting each other. All the members then slowly arrived one by one and Lin Feiyan was the last one to make it.

Lin Feiyan glanced across the office and said, "I only have a rough idea of the mission. According to the report from the Southeast Military Zone, Hot Springs City which is located nearby to Hope City has been surrounded by a thick fog. Everyone there fell asleep

and no one knows whether they are still alive. The fog is spreading further and our mission is to get more information."

She looked at the time and said, "You have 20 minutes to get ready. We board the plane at 4:45 a.m. If you have no questions, you're all dismissed!"

"D+ Level Mission: Investigate the killing in Hot Springs City. Identify the cause and kill it."

"Time Frame: 24 hours"

"Accept/Decline?"

...

It was 4:45 a.m. and the military transport aircraft was ready to depart. It took off immediately after everyone boarded the aircraft.



# Chapter 340: Bizarre

---

Within half an hour, the aircraft stopped at a military camp.

Luo Yuan jumped down from the aircraft following the other members before him and looked to the direction of Hot Springs City. There were about five to six kilometers between them and the city but they could only see a dark shadow with limited light.

An officer rushed towards them and introduced himself while shaking their hands, "I'm the Chief Deputy of the Southeast Military Zone, Xu Shaoze. Welcome, Captain Lin and Captain Luo, as well as the rest of your colleagues from your department. The Chief Officer has been waiting in the office for your arrival."

"Could you take the lead?" Lin Feiyan said coldly.

Luo Yuan was well prepared to be instructed as he understood that he was still new. He only nodded and remained silent.

The Chief Deputy did not care and said, "Please follow me."

They were in a temporary campsite in the outskirts which had many tents set up everywhere. There were not many buildings in the vicinity except for look-out posts which were made from wood. Luo Yuan and his members passed through an artillery square and finally entered a 100-square-meter tent after a few minutes of walking.

There were more than 10 people in the tent. A middle-aged man with a Lieutenant General badge got up and welcomed them as he saw Luo Yuan and his members arrive, "I'm Chen Jianfeng. Welcome to our campsite my dearest colleagues. Thanks for coming."

"This is our duty. The information you provided is too basic and we need more details." Lin Feiyan went straight to the point.

"Let me start with introductions. This is Researcher Zhang and his assistant from the Second Biology Research Institute of Hope City. They had begun researching the fog since yesterday and have arrived at a few conclusions. Perhaps we can discuss it here." Chen Jianfeng remarked.

"I'm just a normal researcher... nothing much to introduce. I think it is incorrect for us to call it a fog as it is a type of gel that appears in a gaseous state. Therefore, it is very difficult to clear even with the help of the sun or wind. I've observed it over the last two days and realize it has been expanding... Here are the samples I've collected... You can have a look."

Researcher Zhang took out a petri dish and offered it around. Luo Yuan took possession of it first and observed it carefully. He realized it was a puddle of light green liquid. He stirred it with a glass rod and it appeared to behave like glue as it was very sticky. "The liquid is 60% water and the rest is some dense molecular substance which had not been discovered yet. Through some tests, I found that it can absorb electromagnetic waves. It would be perfectly invisible if it were synthesized artificially. In many industries..."

As Luo Yuan noticed that he was carried away in describing the substance, Luo Yuan frowned and interrupted him, "I'm sorry, Researcher Zhang. Could you please focus on the highlights? We are running out of time!"

Researcher Zhang was shocked and apologized with a smile, "I'm sorry, I got too excited. Let me continue. The fog can absorb electromagnetic waves. Therefore, you can't communicate through the use of electronic devices. In addition, the fog is of a very high density so you won't be able to see things further than 50 centimeters away. It gets worse. There is a substance in the fog which can trigger hallucinations even if you inhale a small amount of it. You will also start to feel lethargic if you inhale more than one gram of the substance. Unfortunately, 10% of the fog is made up of this substance. In other words, you'll fall asleep if you take one single breath of it. The physical condition of the individual could also play a part in how quickly the substance acts, putting you to sleep. Those who are strong may be able to last longer."

Everyone looked scared including Luo Yuan. He had no idea whether his current physical condition would render him immune to the substance. As the Chief Officer saw their changed expressions, he quickly said, "Don't worry guys, we have saved many people outside the area where the fog is spreading. It's not poisonous and you'll just sleep longer if you happen to breathe in more. You'll be safe if you wear our protective mask. Your mission is very simple, you only need to find the source of the fog and install the pulse generator. We'll take care of the rest."

"Chief Officer Chen, please do not hide things from us. We need to know everything. You wouldn't request for help from upper

management if it is this simple, right?" Lin Feiyan glanced at him and said rudely.

Luo Yuan looked at Lin Feiyan who had the features of a Barbie doll! He thought, "Seriously, don't judge a book by its cover. There must be a reason why she is the Captain."

Chief Officer Chen was pissed by her question. However, the reason she could be a Captain at a young age was that she was quite smart. He tried his best to overcome his anger and said with a smile, "Fine. We have sent three teams of people to conduct investigations but none of them returned or gave any response."

"Not even a single person returned? Luo Yuan pondered and asked.

"Oh, there is one from the special team, but he became crazy when he returned. No one could calm him down and he died after a while." The Chief Officer said.

The special team should be the team of evolved humans in the military. Luo Yuan pondered and said, "Could you help us get in touch with anyone he has contacted before? We need to know more about him."

...

Luo Yuan and the team checked with those soldiers as well as the medical staff and found something scary.

The guy was no longer conscious since his return. He was basically dancing, screaming and spouting nonsense. Unfortunately, what he said was not clear so they could not make any notes at all.

He was tied down and finally returned to a calm state after being injected with tranquilizers. His condition stabilized and he even woke up in the middle of the night. He watched the ceiling but it looked as though he had totally lost contact with his surroundings. He then smiled strangely. He saw someone walking over and said clearly for once, "I'm going to the heaven." He then passed away!

That was mysterious and strange! An invisible enemy was the scariest thing. Luo Yuan pondered and said as he saw that everyone was insecure, he said, "There is no point to send so many people there, you will just increase the number of deaths. I'll go. You guys stay here."

It was totally useless to send too many people into the city if they could not find out the cause. He preferred to go alone because he did not want to have extra problems if something dangerous happened.

Everyone looked relieved when they heard what Luo Yuan said. Even Lin Feiyan looked at him gently and smiled. She said, "Indeed! But you should not go alone, I'll go together with you. The rest can stay here."

Lin Feiyan decided on the plan and everyone had no objection.

...

"This is the pulse generator with a layer of superglue on its surface. Tear away the sticker after you set the time and then throw it at the target when you see it! The superglue is very sticky, so don't touch it at a whim. There is a spot for you to hold it and you might need to remove your skin if you accidentally stuck it on yourself." Xu Shaoze explained to them.

By then, the Chief Officer had already left. However, Lin Feiyan and Luo Yuan did not give a sh\*t as they were not afraid of offending him anyway. They felt disgusted by his attempt to hide the truth from them.

Xu Shaoze continued his explanations, "The pulse generator will emit a high-energy wave which can penetrate the layer of fog and give the location of the target. And remember, you must be at least 200 meters away from the target when the pulse generator emits the wave to avoid being hurt by the tracking missile."

Luo Yuan looked around and noticed a stack of metal objects which looked like a fortress and asked curiously, "Are those the tracking missiles you were talking about?"

"You have a sharp eye, Captain Luo! Those are the latest tracking missiles that are equipped with nuclear warheads. It's the most special weapon of our country!" Xu Shaoze said proudly. "It's even more powerful than the model you have seen before. Five kilograms of this can travel at nine times the speed of sound! Even

level eight mutated beasts would be severely injured if they got hit. However, at that level, you would expect them to have a good sense of danger, making it difficult to target them."

Luo Yuan looked at the shadow of the missile which was almost nine meters tall and more than 20 meters in length. He was full of respect for the technological advancements in their weapon technology. This was something that only existed in the realm of science fiction before the apocalypse but right now, it was right in front of his eyes. Humans seem to have the ability to unleash unlimited potential under the pressure extinction.

# Chapter 341: Stunned

---

Equipped with a mask and map each, Luo Yuan and Lin Feiyan made their way to Hot Springs City before daybreak. They made good time and in less than 20 minutes, they had arrived at the outer ring of the mysterious fog. From where they stood, they could smell a foul stench coming from the city. Also, there seemed to be something binding the fog as it was not spreading further at all.

Luo Yuan looked grim. He said to Lin Feiyan while putting his mask on, "I'll go in first to see if everything is okay." Lin Feiyan rejected Luo Yuan's kind gesture and said, "It's okay, you can follow behind me."

Luo Yuan suddenly felt an intense chill spreading outwards from Lin Feiyan's body and he immediately took a few steps back. The air around them started getting foggier, and it then turned into tiny ice crystals which slowly fell to the ground. Upon looking down at them, Luo Yuan noticed that even the ground was freezing up. Any fog within 10 meters of Lin Feiyan soon changed to ice crystals and fell to the ground. More and more of the fog started fading and very soon a huge part of it was gone.

Luo Yuan had his mind blown by this! He looked around and was shocked to see that all the fog within 100 meters had turned into a snow. The temperature was nothing less than -30 degrees Celsius now. "Let's go! The residents did not manage to evacuate when the fog appeared in Hot Springs City. They have been in the cold for too long. I suspect that there will be many casualties." Lin Feiyan spoke while being secretly pleased that she impressed Luo Yuan though she did not show it on her face.



...

Lin Feiyan was born with a silver spoon in her mouth. Before the apocalypse, her father was a famous entrepreneur with a net worth exceeding hundreds of millions of dollars. As the only child, she was brought up to be the heir of the business. But, as the start of the apocalypse drew closer, her family's wealth began to vanish. Eventually, her parents and extended family members were killed by vicious mutated creatures. When she moved to the reconstruction area, all she was left with was her powerful evolved abilities as well as her leadership skills which were basically in her bones due to the way she was raised.

Even since she was appointed as the leader of Hope City, she had clearly been showcasing the wide arsenal of lessons that were taught to her by her parents. Although she was extremely harsh, her overwhelming power meant that everyone in the department was in awe of her. She was quick to hear about Luo Yuan when he managed to discipline the entire department and she was especially vigilant when he was promoted to be the deputy team leader.

Although there already was a deputy team leader before Luo Yuan was appointed, the previous person was very promiscuous and did not care much about the management. He simply obeyed whatever Lin Feiyan said. Although he was labeled 'useless' and 'promiscuous', working with him was considered a pleasant experience for her.

Meanwhile, Luo Yuan who had just arrived was viewed as overly

ambitious despite having superior abilities to his predecessor. When Lin Feiyan was away, he took the opportunity to make Fang Peibin his apprentice and even seduced Wu Qianru. The mission was only two days long and he almost managed to make Wu Qianru his lover before the end of it! That was unbearable!

However, Lin Feiyan was a person with a plan! She would always refrain from doing anything impulsive. Before she embarked on this journey, she had come up with seven to eight different ways to suppress Luo Yuan's cocky attitude. Unfortunately, he had been low-key the entire way so there was no opportunity for her to show what she had prepared for him. She only managed to use one strategy a while ago when she intentionally flaunted her power. It was a pity that she could not unleash all her abilities which would look too suspicious. Nonetheless, the journey would be a long one so she would have her chances.

...

Of course, Luo Yuan did not know what Lin Feiyan was up to. He was amazed as he was stepping on thin ice. Her evolved ability was extremely useful for this situation and even made their masks redundant accessories. Luo Yuan followed behind her into the foggy area as he was instructed but as they stepped in, something strange was happening. Luo Yuan's sense was noticeably oppressed! While he could normally sense his surroundings up to 100 meters away, this power was reduced almost by half to about 60 meters. At the same time, he felt as though there was something pressing against his chest.

He became quiet and cautious knowing very well that he was

probably stepping into an unknown mutated beast's territory. It felt like entering into a fairy-tale when they observed the view from the inside as the entire Hot Springs City was engulfed in a fog. This illusion was way beyond his imagination.

In some ways, this would be the first time that Luo Yuan would encounter a real, level seven mutated beast. Although the mutated monsters that he had killed previously were strong as well, it was a totally different and incomparable life form. At least he had the option to retreat if he could not handle the mutated beasts. In reality, you would only live or die when facing a real, level 7 creature.

Because Luo Yuan's attributes had just been upgraded, he did not have sufficient time to fully adapt to them yet. He could probably only perform at 30% of his full potential. In some sense, despite the upgrade, his unfamiliarity in battle would make his abilities even worse than before. In a real battle which is unpredictable, the crucial thing that determined life and death was one's responsiveness.

Luo Yuan mumbled to himself suggesting that if he really did not have the confidence to defeat the creature when the time comes, the only thing he could do was to give up the mission and obey to the military's instructions. After all, Luo Yuan was generally not an impulsive person either. Although the mission was important, life was even more important to him. He could see it clearly that there would be nothing left if he were to die.

Inside the fog, the two of them could see many people knocked out cold on the streets. Initially, Lin Feiyan stopped along the way

and attempted to wake them up. However, a few attempts later, she gave up. It was an impossible task.

After a few hundred meters in, there were numerous soldiers who were also seem knocked out on the street. There were hundreds of them along with more than 10 armored vehicles that had crashed into the surrounding buildings. Furthermore, some of their engines were still running which suggests how recent the activity had happened. The soldiers who were investigating the place were stopped before they could reach a thousand meters deep.

"Hot Springs City isn't small so it's inefficient to look around like this. Do you have any better suggestions?" Lin Feiyan asked. Luo Yuan looked at the map, pointed at the hot springs lake and said, "It's impossible that the fog would come out of nowhere. I remember from the notes earlier that this kind of fog is 60% water. Hence, I think the fog could not exist without a water source. My suggestion is that we start at the lake."

Since the city was named after hot springs, naturally one would expect there to be several hot springs around. The temperature of the hot springs in the city was approximately 80 degrees Celsius which meant that there were almost no signs of life inside it. Ever since the reconstruction area was built, the hot spring was widened to a lake so that the people could have access to water nearby.

Lin Feiyan's eyes brightened up at this thought but soon she felt stupid for not thinking of such a simple thing earlier. She said, "Then let's go there!"

"Wait, there's something coming our way!" Luo Yuan said while staring into the fog.

His hearing ability allowed him to hear even the softest of sounds. For example, he could hear mosquitoes flapping their wings if they were within one kilometer of him.

Lin Feiyan listened in doubt but heard nothing. Just when she started suspecting that Luo Yuan was lying, there were heavy footsteps getting clearer in her ears.

It was a gigantic beast! Before it even appeared to them, the ground was already shaking and the buildings in the vicinity were probably damaged by its humongous body.

The sound was getting closer to them at a terrifying speed and it basically only took 10 seconds from the time Lin Feiyan heard it to the point where it appeared in front of them. It was 9 meters tall and 15 meters long with turquoise hair. Its pace was inconsistent though its limbs seemed strong. It was exuding an overwhelming power that could be felt from its aura. As it was charging towards them, there were sharp claws that looked like black machetes appearing from its toes.

It appeared to originate from the feline species based on its attacking style. Although it was completely mutated, its natural habits remained. Luo Yuan stared at the giant beast, tightened his muscles and waited for the right time to attack while grasping his saber tightly. However, before he could even move, Lin Feiyan

plunged herself towards the beast at a blistering pace! In an instant, a cold, terrifying aura could be felt from her body once again. There was frost spreading around and Luo Yuan was also affected by the cold. He gave up on his plan to attack and took a few steps back instead.

A figure covered in ice charged towards the giant beast. It seemed like they were going to crash into each other as Lin Feiyan did not look like she intended to stop. Luo Yuan was initially concerned but he soon felt relieved as he noticed that the frost was spreading across the beast's body and restricting its movements as it was approaching her.

When they were six meters away from each other, the beast could not move at all and even fell to the ground. Next, a small white punch landed on its body. Within a single breath, the giant beast was completely frozen.

Lin Feiyan was seen panting at this moment. Her face was red like it was burning while there was green smoke covering her body. As compared to the chilly weather out there, her body was at a relatively high temperature. It was like she absorbed all the heat from the surroundings into her own body. Even her battle suit was almost burnt! Luo Yuan could smell something burning and guessed that perhaps that was the reason why her clothes were loose so that it could cater to her strange ability.

A moment later, Lin Feiyan had fully recovered and was breathing normally again. She turned around to look at Luo Yuan and clenched her fist saying, "This mutated creature is too weak, it should not be the one we are looking for. Let's go!"

## Chapter 342: Soul-Eater

---

Luo Yuan walked towards the light blue iceberg and touched it. He got a chilly feeling from touching it and his hand felt slightly numb, even to the point that it stuck to the ice. He pulled it off in an instant and there was a soft tearing sound that was heard. He examined his hand fortunately, he realized nothing happened apart from some parts of his skin looking slightly fairer now. His +17 Physique made his skin so tough that even the sword slashing at his skin was nothing to him, which was why he did not think that the ice would tear his skin. Looking at Lin Feiyan who was not aware of what happened, he walked towards her immediately.

As a significant amount of fog was now transformed into ice, numerous mutated beasts began to reveal themselves. Every time they appeared, Lin Feiyan would freeze them to prevent any delays to their mission. This happened multiple times which made Luo Yuan feel slightly annoyed as he wanted to train himself by killing the mutated beasts so that he could adapt to his new abilities. However, every time when was ready to attack, Lin Feiyan would aggressively attack first and rob him of the chance. He was terrified by the look in her eyes.

It is not that Luo Yuan did not want to attack first... it is just that the area that Lin Feiyan's attacks could cover was very wide. From this experience, it was hard not to see that Lin Feiyan was indeed a strong evolved human. She looked like she was attacking aimlessly and that her techniques were very limited but there was a certain rhythm to it. To quote a martial arts idiom, "It is not how good your weapon is but rather how skillful you are at using it." Anyone would die if they could not defend against her attack.

The more they continued their journey, the more boundless her abilities seemed to Luo Yuan! They encountered at least 10 different mutated beasts and two of them were at level six. Besides exhaustion from utilizing her powers, her abilities were maintained. By this point, her clothes were all torn by the effects of her own powers and when she was hit by the mutated beast earlier. Although the mutated beast was already dying, it tore the back of her shirt and her knees were also galled by it. There was also a cut on her face.

Lin Feiyan was panting frequently and all these battles made her look unkempt and messy. Every time that she was catching her breath from using her powers, she would turn back to look at Luo Yuan who was still squeaky clean and let out a sigh of frustration. Looking at her complicated expression, Luo Yuan wondered if she was blaming him for not helping in the battle. He felt that she ought to know that his abilities were no help to them in such situations. Although he could use his Will to overcome the chill, the frozen ground was clearly preventing him from doing more.

He would normally be able to root his feet on the ground but this was not possible in the current situation. Now that the ground was covered with slippery ice, not only was he no help in battle, he might even fall to the ground which would be a burden to his leader. Anyhow, Luo Yuan wanted to test if his hypothesis was right so he said, "Why don't you take a rest and let me handle it from here?"

Lin Feiyan figured that her amazing performance had achieved its purpose. Moreover, there would be even more terrifying mutated beasts waiting for them at the lake. Hence, she should not use up all her strength now. She thought for a while and said,



"Alright, be careful!" However, to their surprise, there was not a single mutated beast along the way and in less than 20 minutes, they were already approaching the hot spring lake.

"Wait." Luo Yuan paused to listen then continued speaking, "There's someone in front." During the journey, Lin Feiyan already noticed that Luo Yuan's hearing was exceptional and much better than hers so she trusted him. She stopped and asked, "People? Besides the residents who were all knocked out, who could it be? Could it be the bunch of soldiers who were lost?"

"Let's go and see." Luo Yuan said with a solemn look.

As they were getting closer to the lake, the pressure on his chest got stronger. His ability to sense his surroundings was further suppressed and he could now only detect things within a 20 meter radius now so he decided to move forward slowly. A few minutes later, there was a person limping towards them. Just when Lin Feiyan attempted to call out the person, Luo Yuan stopped her and said, "Something's wrong, the person looks strange. Let's wait and see."

Lin Feiyan took a closer look and gasped. The way the person walked was strange and stiff. It did not look like a normal person. It looked like a puppet that was being controlled. They walked carefully and the person passed them by in the blink of an eye. Luo Yuan turned around and noticed that the person's eyes were closed. It seemed like the person was immersed in a deep sleep but Luo Yuan knew very clearly that the person was not sleepwalking.

"There are many more of them ahead. Let's not bother who that

person is, it's better that we find out where the mutated beast is." Luo Yuan said while pulling Lin Feiyan whose face had turned pale.

Lin Feiyan snapped out of shocked state and followed Luo Yuan. At that moment, she was not even aware that Luo Yuan had taken the lead. Suddenly, she felt the fog ahead getting darker and eerier. Fear was slowly rising inside of her. If she were placed in a different scenario, she would not behave like how she was right now. But as girls were naturally afraid of creepy stuff, she would naturally allow Luo Yuan to take the lead.

There were more and more 'pedestrians' popping up randomly on the street as they got closer to the lake. They noticed that the area surrounding the lake was swamped by a huge crowd and there were people coming out of their houses from time to time to join the crowd. The eerie atmosphere made Lin Feiyan picture what would happen if she became one of them. As she was walking through the crowd, she caught a glimpse of Luo Yuan and quickly caught up with him.

Suddenly, there was a splashing sound that came from afar which sounded like something heavy falling into the water. Besides that, Lin Feiyan got a whiff of a dense odor in the air which was similar to the smell of meat. As she was still trying to decipher what that was, she thought of something that gave her a chill down her spine. The two of them felt the same way and subconsciously walked faster. Not long later, they arrived at the shore.

Luo Yuan was upset and in disbelief to the point where his scalp

was numb. The boiling hot spring lake was filled with countless dead bodies that were just floating on its surface. As the temperature of the lake was a little on the high side, the dead bodies were in a half-cooked-state as they floated on the surface the lake. Some of them were even disfigured and deformed.

Since the onset of the apocalypse, Luo Yuan had witnessed many catastrophes so corpses had become a norm to him. However, this sight was upsetting to his stomach.

Luo Yuan remained very quiet... He was not sure how many people had walked in a daze into the lake. There were at least a thousand of them from what he could see but looking at the sheer size of the lake, there could be more than 10,000 of them in total.

What Luo Yuan saw next gave him goosebumps. As these 'people' were walking into the lake, he saw a blur of a shadow forcing its way out of the crowd but was instead sucked into the bottom of the lake moments later. It was a soul! The mutated beast was eating their souls! It was now clear why the mutated beast wanted to invade the reconstruction area. To a soul-eating mutated beast, no food could compare to the soul of a human. In a dense city like this, it was like a mouse entering a barn. The temptation was so strong that it was willing to risk its life.

Those soldiers must be under the control of the mutated beast and were led into the Hot Springs City during the midnight fog. Luo Yuan was trying to process everything as quickly as he could and soon he understood the whole thing. He quickly took a deep breath to gather his thoughts. The soul-eating mutated beast was at the bottom of the lake so he had to think of something to force it

out as there was nothing that he could do while it was in the water. He turned around to look at Lin Feiyan who was still stunned and said, "Can you freeze the entire lake? Without a doubt, the mutated beast is somewhere inside the lake."

Lin Feiyan was still in her zone. It took her a while to snap out of it. She said "Freeze it? I can try!" She walked towards the lake and without thinking too much, she put her hand into the lake. Soon, there was a thin layer of ice becoming visible on the surface. In an instant, the ice was getting thicker and spread across the entire lake.

The fog on the surface of the lake was also getting thinner. As time went by, Lin Feiyan's face was flaming red and her body gave off a scorching high temperature. Her armored suit started to curl up. There was a heat wave surrounding her and out of nowhere, her clothes caught fire.

Luo Yuan was shocked by what he had just witnessed but any fears were quickly removed when he noticed that the fire did not seem to affect her at all as her hair did not even burn. She looked like a mini sun that was giving off heat and light. It was now difficult to differentiate between her body and the shadows. It was now Luo Yuan's turn to be stunned. The energy that was stored in her was beyond his imagination. If she could unleash the energy she had in its entirety instead of absorbing it, he may choose to avoid her in the future.

As Luo Yuan pondered this, there was a loud sound that sounded like ice shattering that came from the lake. There was a terrifying force that was striking the middle of the lake where the ice was a

few meters thick. Chunks of crushed ice that each weighed a few tons shot into the air. In an instant, a giant beast leaped on top of the ice. Its eyes were pitch black and it let out a furious roar!

# Chapter 343: Kinetic Energy Attack

---

It was a monstrous beast that shared a resemblance to a giant crocodile. Although, if one compared the two, the latter would merely look like a tiny fish in a stream. It stood at a height of 18 meters and was easily a hundred meters long where it lay. Its gigantic physique gave off a terrifying force from 80 meters away making it seem, to Luo Yuan, as if it were right in front of them.

Its body was covered in saw-like layers of deep purple scales, carved into beautiful silver patterns. Trailing its spine from head to the end of its tail was a golden skeleton with three stacks of one meter tall, black lance-like thorns with yellow spots. Luo Yuan figured such a defense would be impossible to penetrate! Its limbs look extremely powerful, with five digits and four long sharp claws that were carved into the layer of ice.

All of a sudden, the beast rose up and there was a fog surrounding its massive form. From a distance, it looked like a fog-spewing mythical titan! The air seemed to stand still in its presence as its aura filled the surrounding area with an unbelievable force. There seem to be menacing swirling look in its bowl-sized, pitched black eyes. At a quick glance into its eyes, Luo Yuan felt a strong sense of impending doom. His heart was racing and his spirit froze, ice-cold with fear.

He mind screamed to abandon all hope and fun for his life as this enormous beast was the most difficult entity he had ever encountered. Furthermore, looking at the rising fog that surrounded its being, this mutated beast was a thousand times larger than the spirit based evolved human in Desert City. Even his +17 Physique was no match for such a God-like creature.

"Captain, retreat.." Luo Yuan whispered softly, as he concealed his vibe and backed up slowly to avoid being spotted by the beast. Before Lin Feiyan could respond to his warning, the giant beast turned its head and stared right at the both of them.

"BAM!"

Looking into its swirling eyes, Luo Yuan felt a sharp jolt run through his body, and his mind went completely blank. With all his might, he summoned his Will power and slowly regained consciousness as the layer of Will covered his physique. In an instant, one-third of his Will power was drained just fighting to stay alert. He was shocked to his core as the power in those eyes and thanked his lucky stars that the beast had not attacked him in that state or he would have sure been dead.

"RUN!" He shouted. Just as the words escaped his lips, he felt another jolt run through his body and his Will drained yet again, half his body frozen stiff from a layer of ice. He looked up in disbelief, to see Lin Feiyan standing before him, a cold white palm pressed to his chest.

He noticed in Lin Feiyan's eyes that she was possessed and she struck him. The giant beast was in control of her mind. He started to panic, but fortunately his reflexes did not fail him. In the blink of an eye, he masterfully laid a strike onto a pressure-point in her neck with his hand, and she fainted instantly. With all his strength, he grabbed her in his arms, stomped his feet hard and ran as fast as he could.

"ROAR!" A deafening roar exploded from behind him and a strong wind hit him as he ran, nearly knocking him off his feet. The sky suddenly turned dark as the beast stood, casting a gigantic shadow as it covered the entire sky. The beast's black underbelly was as wide as four basketball courts! The air was shaking as the clouds were thrown into chaos. It was an incredibly terrifying scene!

"This is most definitely not a common level-7 mutated beast, it is a level-8 at the least! With its form, it is surely faster than mine, and we will surely die at its feet!"

At that instant, he got an idea. He stomped his feet hard again and he fled onto his trail like lighting. Just as he moved approximately 50 meters, there was a loud thud followed by a level-five earthquake.

Even with Lin Feiyan in his arms, Luo Yan could reach speeds of 200 meters per second, which puts 50 meters just 0.25 seconds away from him. For an ordinary being, it was a blink of an eye, but to him, it was a distance that meant life or certain death.

Luo Yuan turned around to see what happened, and saw that the buildings by the streets had vanished and his whole line of vision was filled with the form of the giant beast at his heels. He bolted as fast as his feet would carry him! The sights were flashing by as he was like a shadow leaping across the streets, taking less than half a second at every jump. However, all his effort were to no avail as the monster continued pursuing them, its gigantic strides making Luo Yuan's attempts of survival more and more futile.



He glanced at the pulse generator on his left hand. It seemed increasingly impossible to escape from the beast, and there was only one way left. A very risky manoeuvre to give him a fighting chance to survive the ordeal.

Using his Will, he managed to tear off the superglue tape on his pulse generator that immediately started the time-setting.

"10!"

"9!"

"8!"

...

He was approaching the corner of the street, the time left ticking away from 5 seconds. He felt a strong gust of wind from behind him once again and leapt into the air, throwing the pulse generator as hard as he could towards the deadly predator. The pulse generator lodged itself on the creature's gigantic body. With the help of the wind at his back, his speed was greatly increased and as he landed, he ducked behind the buildings at the corner of the street not slowing his pace.

"3!"

"2!"

"1!"

"0!"

Luo Yuan counted down the timer under his breath, and a large explosion shook the area behind him. He was glad that the pulse generator was not destroyed in the blast, but hoped that his plan had succeeded with it.

As the thought crossed his mind, he saw a shadow pass over his head blocking out the sun and area around him. There was no way around but ahead where his long journey lay, but sensing danger in what was ahead, he decided to exercise caution and back track the opposite way.

As he took his first step, the giant monster of thousands of tons came crashing down upon him! The ground shook violently and many houses in the area were destroyed instantly. Countless bits of gravel and wood panelling slammed against the Will layer on Luo Yuan's back. The layer was dying off. With the exhaustion of his Will, he could not control gather its strength anymore. With that, the last bit of his Will collapsed. A flying rock the size of a human head landed square on his back, flooring him as he spat out blood on impact. He was completely out of control with a racing car tumbling down a track, rolling a hundred meters away from where he stood. Lin Feiyan was tossed out of his arms as well.

Suddenly, two red dots were flying towards them from afar. When they first saw them, they were a few kilometers away but in

the blink of an eye, they appeared right before them. They were two bullets the size of a shot putt with a flaming red aura around them. With the collision in the air, they started to feel a terrible burning sensation.

Sensing danger, the scales of the giant beast body stood up. Before it could do anything, the bullets hit the monster like two meteorites. In slow motion, as the metal bullets hit the creature's body, there was a spark explosion. Although they did not pierce the thick hide, the bullets that were harder than alloyed steel and hitting nine times faster than the speed of sound, created a few wide holes on it's body. That did not seem to wipe out the bullet's terrifying trajectory of kinetic energy. The residual energy rippled through the creature's body like a shock wave spreading out from the holes from the bullets.

With a shock wave of that magnitude, buildings still standing all around were all turn to rubble and dust. The giant beast let out a painful moan after the attack, and it crumbled to the ground in agony. It struggled to get to its feet again, and just as it managed to stand up, it spat out a fountain of blood and its internal organs, before falling yet again. Although the two meter-wide holes seemed to do nothing on the almost 100 meter long beast, the electromagnetic attack from the pulse generator had completely shattered its internal organs. It was a miracle that it could even struggle after that attack.

# Chapter 344: Eyeballs

---

A while later, Luo Yuan brushed the dust off himself and coughed up blood. He slowly stood up, his head in agony. He took a deep breath and tried hard to calm himself.

"Current Mission: Grade D+ Mission: Investigate Hot Springs City. Find out the culprit that destroyed Hot Springs City"

"Time limit: 24 hours"

"Mission status: Completed"

"Evaluation: Passed."

"Character: Luo Yuan"

"Basic Experience Value Reward +9600\*100%!"

"Evaluation: Passed, Experience value +9600\*0%!"

"Experience: 91920/153600!"

Luo Yuan was surprised when he was listening to the message in his head. He felt like he did not do anything and the mission was completed. He looked at the mission criteria again and realized

that it was not a requirement for him to kill the culprit himself. To the rigid system configuration, as long as the end result was the same, the mission was considered completed. But of course, it was impossible to get a perfect evaluation.

It was an absolute surprise! But, the thought that he needed another 60,000 experience points to his next upgrade, he would need four more Grade D+ missions to achieve it. His happiness vanished.

However, it was his first time encountering a real, level seven mutated beast, and it was an unforgettable experience. There was no way that he could defeat this beast in combat, and all he did was run for his life. Although, one of the reasons he succeeded was the massive gain in his attributes which he had yet to master. However, if he was in perfect form, the result of the battle would be unpredictable. One tiny mistake could lead to his death.

Furthermore, the difficulty was elevated because the attacks of a spirit based mutated beast were trickier to defend. Nonetheless, as a level seven beast, none of them could be easily defeated and all of them came with unimaginable power. Nobody would believe he could handle any of them.

He stood rooted to the same spot for a moment as his Will recovered and his headache subsided. He was rather surprised at how rapidly he recuperated and attributed it to an effect of his physical upgrade. He felt stronger and pumped for action, and even though his Will was exhausted, he could recover at the speed of light!

Looking at Lin Feiyan who had passed out not far away, Luo Yuan was in no rush to wake her up. He turned around to look at the level seven mutated beast corpse. It was such a treasure, and Luo Yuan was tempted to examine the magnificent monster. He knew that it would be a waste if he was to ditch it there. With the giant beast's death, the fog was disappearing. He estimated that the military would be there at any moment. He predicted there would be fights between them for the dead mutated corpse and he had no say in who would be getting the mutated beast. To him, it would have been preferable if the weapons unit got one-third of it. After all, it was the military's territory, and in some sense, the mutated beast was killed by the military.

Since the military was not here yet, it was the best time for him to salvage items that he desired for himself. The creature's strange eyes haunted him as he recalled their influence. Perhaps there was a unique function to them, he thought, and he must get those pair of eyes no matter the consequences. Luo Yuan walked swiftly toward the giant beast and inspected it. Just a few minutes ago, it had been savagely attacking him, but now, it lay still, not a breath in its body. The gigantic monster was lying flat on the ground, and apart from the occasional muscle spasms, it showed no response to Luo Yuan as he walked toward it.

It sure was a stunning giant beast. Luo Yuan walked around it and he was in awe. Although it was dead, it seemed to have a strong will to live. Its giant tail that weighed 10 tons was like a supersized whip, that dragged against the floor continuously. Although it was incapacitated, the spasmed beating cracked the cement floor, and threw gravel and dust in the air, everywhere.

Luo Yuan used his hand to shield his eyes from the dust as he

leaped onto the giant beast's body which was four-storeys tall. Its scales were strangely smooth, the purple-based silver patterns were emitting a glowing halo, giving it a mysterious aura. There was also a unique force that radiated from the scales. Moreover, its scales were very slippery, Luo Yuan had to hold on to the thorns on its back to stand up properly.

He walked towards the two massive wounds on its abdomen. The creature's abdomen was not completely pierced by the bullets, which had damaged about two-thirds of the body. The flesh surrounding the wounds were terribly mangled, which made it look like a pile of minced meat. Luo Yuan stepped around the wounds and noticed that they were soft, and apparently, the damages were not limited to the wounds only.

Luo Yuan found some powdered metal around the wounds. When the electromagnetic bullets shot into its body, they were already crushed. What was actually shot into the flesh of the beast was a high-speed flow of powdered metal. He then circled round to the giant beast's head. The head was six meters wide, and it was stunning. Filled with bowl-sized bumps, there were tiny thorns on each and every one of the bumps. Luo Yuan estimated the skull to be more than a meter thick, but without the help of his Will to strengthen his weapon, the ordinary saber would be nothing to it.

Its eyes were closed, a layer of semitransparent crystal scales was protecting its eyes. But to a dead body, all the layer of protection was just a tiny trouble to Luo Yuan. He then used his Zhanmadao to cut open its eyelids carefully. The protective layer was strong. It was giving out a force that repelled other attacks. Without his Will, the level seven Zhanmadao could barely cut the eyelids.

Moreover, he needed to be extra careful as the cutting might hurt the eyes. That was challenging to him. With much effort, Luo Yuan managed to retrieve the eyeballs. Each of them was 30 centimeters wide and weighed five catties. They were pitch black and did not feel like they were made with flesh. The texture was cold and hard, they were more like crystals. There was a strange wave coming from it. With one glance, Luo Yuan felt that his soul was affected. He was shocked and quickly looked away. He then used the identification technique.

"Soul-Eating Crocodile"

"Function: Material"

"Rarity: Dark-green level"

"Weight: 2.3kg"

"Additional Ability 1: Dream invasion - With this, it allows you to enter into somebody else's dream"

"Additional Ability 2: Requiem - It could be used as a soul's refuge, to prevent the soul from being harmed by the outer world.

"Remarks: The Soul-Eating Crocodile is a tremendously terrifying mutated beast, it could strengthen itself by absorbing souls as well as controlling low-level mutated beasts to be its



puppets. It could hide itself using the fog, any signs of life would be destroyed if they walked into the fog. Its eyes were a part of its abilities.

"Dream invasion, Requiem!" Luo Yuan thought to himself. Although he did not know what was the use of Dream Invasion yet, but Requiem could be a last resort. In the cruel apocalypse, nobody could guarantee of their own safety and to live to old age before eventual death. Furthermore, the four-dimensional vision on his forehead was like the sword of Damocles placed on top of his head. Perhaps when there was no way to run, it could be a great alternative.

## Chapter 345: Into The Wilderness Again

---

Luo Yuan found a torn piece of cloth nearby, carefully packed both the eyeballs into it and carried them on his back. He wanted to collect much more from the giant beast's carcass but as he was left with very little Will, he gave up the thought. He picked up a few pieces of the beast's scales and put into his pack.

Luo Yuan then moved to wake Lin Feiyan up. She opened her eyes and looked lost. Slowly, she regained her memory of what had happened and stood up immediately. She then noticed her surroundings and blushed in embarrassment.

Her jacket was burnt but she was not completely naked as there was a silver-grey scale armor that was as thin as a moth's wing covering her body. Apparently, the armor had no defensive attributes and acted more like an undergarment. Apart from the purpose of having something under her jacket, the armor hugged and outlined the curves of her body.

"Captain, the mission is completed. Let's go!" Luo Yuan wiped off his stunned expression and composed himself. He did not expect her to have had such a great body under her loose jacket. She looked like she had D-cup breasts and her waist was smaller than his thigh.

"Oh!" Lin Feiyan responded. She then realized that she was too soft-spoken, her strength & leadership stolen by Luo Yuan. That was unforgivable. She was the captain of the mission and she should be the one who made the decisions. She looked at Luo Yuan who was trying to avoid eye contact and said calmly, "Since the

mission is complete, let us go back."

Luo Yuan looked at her in doubt. He thought his captain was behaving a little strangely. As she led the way, they headed towards the campsite. Lin Feiyan walked at a swift pace, clenching her fist. When she was controlled by the giant beast, her memory was not lost, only her thought process was controlled. She could see and hear but had no command of her body. Soon, she recalled what she saw, thinking of the embarrassing scene in her mind, feeling her face flush yet again. She pursed her lips and walked even faster.

...

Luo Yuan followed the members back to the department. He did not accept any missions for the next 10 days. He was training at the department in the morning and training outside the city in the evening. Once he had full control of his abilities that had skyrocketed, he started to look for the Wisdom Tree.

Every day, he headed out earlier and came back late in the night.

Soon one month had passed, every clue jotted down on his notebook were being crossed off one by one. There were very few clues remaining. Besides his completion of five Grade-D missions, by accidents, which increased his experience value to 139920/153600, there were no trails found to the Wisdom Tree.

He looked at all the clues that he had and frowned. Without a doubt, some of the evidence to his search of the Wisdom Tree was

obvious, but when he was searching for it, it could not be found. He did not think that it was merely an accident. Perhaps one of the clues was an accident, but not all of them. What could he have missed?

Suddenly, he had a breakthrough as he studied the coordinates of the incidents. He asked his secretary, Sun Yuting, to get a white board and a marker. He then drew out the longitudes and latitudes, and mark down the coordinates accordingly. He did not notice anything at first but when he was done marking, he realized that the coordinates were focusing on a specific district. He marked a big circle to include all the coordinates

He was thrilled! He estimated the coverage to be a few thousand square kilometers. "Now I know! No wonder I couldn't find it, the activity area was massive!"

Luo Yuan also noticed that the coordinates that were on the edge were denser. He suspected that its old nest that was not in the reconstruction area but was in the wilderness instead. At the same time, he was surprised. Who could have thought that there was such a massive intelligent race hiding near the reconstruction area.

There was an unknown sadness that rose within him. They were left in the reconstruction area. If there was a large-scale outbreak, it could be destroyed immediately. But the wilderness was boundless, nobody knew how many intelligent races were thriving out there. The reconstruction area seemed to be strong but it was the last fortress for human beings. It could not afford any disasters.\

...

Luo Yuan estimated the direction of the old nest. He then informed the office director, Chen Xinjie, of what he had discovered and left the department immediately. As fast as the wind, he had left Hope City within 10 minutes. Half an hour later, he arrived in the wilderness. The howl of a strong wind filled the air and was felt blowing on Luo Yuan's shirt. He levitated up in the sky and looked at the land. The wilderness and the reconstruction area were two completely different worlds. It was filled with lush greenery and provided a lease for life to the ecosystem. It was blanketed with all kinds of green life that covered the area like a boundless green ocean. The plants were growing and countless leaves carpeted every inch of the land. Luo Yuan was searching the place at his view of the skyline, but apart of the emerald landscape before him, there was nothing else.

After a while, he plunged towards the land like an eagle, diving for a kill. He moved so fast, nearly moving at the speed of sound, a strong wind blew against his face. Soon the air became humid, and his body was protected by a thick shield. At such speeds, the air pressure was increasing at an alarming rate. He was relying on the gravity as his Will was of no use at that height, apart from controlling his direction. Not long after, he slowed down and landed safely on the ground.

He inhaled deeply to fill his lungs with the invigorating fresh air within the greens. Even since he entered the reconstruction area, he had not had a breath of fresh air as the air was heavily polluted with industrial smoke. At moments like that, he would recall his experience in the wilderness, but he was not reminiscing. An endless amount of danger awaited in the lively jungle. Nobody

would miss living the life of a savage, where having to sleep in the wilderness was extremely unpredictable.

Passing the transition zone to the wilderness, Luo Yuan entered the jungle. It was near noon and the sun was shining but it felt like the evening in there. The light shining through was dimmed by the canopy overhead. The gigantic trees towered above him, vines that looked like snakes and shrubs that were filled with poisonous thorns made him think that he had entered into a realm of chaos.

The bugs in the shrubs thought he was food approaching them, so they started circling him. The bugs went through a major mutation where he could not identify what they were anymore. Luo Yuan frowned as he felt terrifying vibes cross his mind. Countless washbasin-sized bugs fell from the sky before him.

He stepped on one of them, there was a colorful liquid oozing out of it. He proceeded to walk. In half an hour, he saw more than 10 mutated creatures dead along the way, many smaller bugs scattered all over the place. Luo Yuan was not who he was before, so apart from those creatures that were level seven and above, the rest could do nothing to him.

When he achieved +17 Physique, his speed of attack had reached the level where an ordinary person could not anticipate them with their naked eyes. His attack could create sonic bursts and if he was to use all his strength, he could double up the sonic bursts. Even without the Zhanmadao, he could kill attackers that were on a green level with his bare hands.

# Chapter 346: Suspicious

---

"Huh!" Luo Yuan stopped as he saw a pile of bones in the shrubs.

He could not tell if the bones belonged to humans or mutated beasts in the jungle. The entire jungle was filled with dead bodies and skeletons, but what attracted Luo Yuan's attention was a sharpened wooden pole close by. Instead of a pole, it was more of a pillar. It was as wide as a big bowl and was four meters long as if the two broken parts were patched together.

He picked up the smaller part, and it weighed almost 300 kilograms.

It was surely not a weapon that was used by a human!

Luo Yuan frowned. Enduring the horrible stench of rotting flesh, he cleared away the shrubs so that he could see the complete skeleton. It was only the torso of a body, and the lower extremities were nowhere to be found. Perhaps it was eaten by a mutated beast, he thought. A maggot that was the size of a thumb wiggled around in an eye socket.

Luo Yuan manifested his aura, and countless poisonous insects scuttled out from underneath the skeleton. Upon closer examination, the skeleton looked like it belonged to a primate which was much bigger than a human. Its upper body was already two meters long and with the addition of its lower body that had disappeared, it was estimated to be five meters tall. Its head was enormous, almost the size of a washbasin. Luo Yuan took a better

look at its head and was surprised to find out that its head was different from the common primate. Instead of a rounded skull, it was more like a slanted cylinder, where the back of its head was long.

Looking at the rotted beast's skin next to it, the signs showed that it had belonged to an intelligent race. Luo Yuan stood at the spot and closed his eyes. He sniffed the air around him to catch the scents of the area. The smell of dead bodies, plants, beast skins and decayed leaves filled his nostrils. To put it simply, Luo Yuan's smelling ability had exceeded that of a hound. He could tell that there were more than a thousand species of plants in the jungle.

The dead body had rotted and the skeleton was the only thing left. He was not sure how long it had been there. As it had been awhile since it rained, he caught a scent that he roughly identified to where the killer of the dead primate had gone. Following the smell, Luo Yuan found three more dead bodies about hundred meters away. There seemed to have been a battle fought in those shrubs.

Luo Yuan realized that the smell was stronger as he got closer. It was obvious that there was not only one, but a troop of them. They had divided into several groups and went in different directions. Luo Yuan estimated there were at least eight of them that were perhaps there to hunt before they were attacked. The way the first one of them was killed, Luo Yuan knew that the attacker was strong, as two of them died shortly after, while the rest ran for their lives.

But it was all an estimated guess. To Luo Yuan, the only good



news was that the powerful odor made it easier for him as he charted his path, so he did not have to spend more time exploring the jungle. He hasten his footsteps and leaped onto a branch. Like an ape, he traveled along the canopy like a quiet spirit.

There were more and more artificial trails ahead where most of the trees were chopped away. Suddenly, he stopped. He jumped to hide between the branches, and he looked from afar. There was a rustling sound headed in his direction, and he saw around 10 odd-looking giants appeared through the trees.

The giants had rock-hard muscles and they gave off an aura of immense strength. Their heights ranged from four meters to more than six meters. They were hairless and their skin was tan. Their cylinder-shaped heads made them look like they wore chef hats.

The difference between them and the common mutated beasts was that there was a thick beast skin tunic tied around their waists and they held weapons in their hands. Of course, to humans, their weapons were crude as most of them were just wooden bats. What surprised Luo Yuan was the leader brandished a steel ax that was one meter wide.

The ax was poorly forged. Apart from its terrifying size, the surface was rugged and the edge was blunt. There were gaps everywhere and even some tiny cracks on the handle. But it was real steel, the silver-grey shine made Luo Yuan concern.

Stone Age, Bronze Age, Black Iron Age, to the Iron Age of the First Industrial Revolution. The human civilization also had an evolution of the usage of such material. Although such arguments

were somehow biased, being able to utilize steel showed that this intelligent race had mastered the skill of metallurgy.

Luo Yuan felt a chill rise within him. The intelligent race he encountered the last time used fire, but this race had knowledge of steel, and possibly other metals. The evolution of the civilization of such a race scared him. Human took millions of years to get to where they were today but the intelligence of such a race, after the apocalypse, was skyrocketing. Could humans ever defeat, or even match such a race of giants?

He stared at the troop of giants and had a strong urge to kill them. No matter what, he belonged to the human race. If the reconstruction area was destroyed, even if he escaped, he would be left to wander around and struggle for his life.

Slowly, Luo Yuan took out his saber and descended lightly from the branch.

"Human!" The leader shouted as he saw Luo Yuan and the gang was alerted to the threat.

The word 'human' shocked Luo Yuan. He squinted his eyes and looked at the giant. He sensed their fear when they first saw him, but they were then relieved when they found out that he was alone.

"Surrender, live; Fight, die!" The leader of the pack bellowed furiously. His voice was deep with a choppy accent. He waved his hand, and the rest of the giants surrounded Luo Yuan in an

instant.

Luo Yuan did not even flinch as they advanced. He looked around him and scoffed, "You guys can talk?"

"Surrender, live. Fight, die!" The leader repeated himself.

"It seems like you can only say that. Prepare to die then." Luo Yuan swung his Zhanmadao and an invisible force shot out of the tip of the saber, extending approximately two meters away. It was not the glow of the saber but the Chi that came from the Zhanmadao itself.

"#%#@ " Looking as Luo Yuan attacked, the leader lost his patience. He roared a battle cry and charged in ready to capture the 'human'. However, the rest did not move at all. They were stunned and wondered where did that tiny human had gone. Next thing he knew, he felt pain in his throat. He touched his throat, and suddenly, he was levitated into the air and started spinning...

More than 10 heads fell to the ground around Luo Yuan, a crimson rain of blood followed. He sheathed his saber and proceeded to walk forward. He frowned to himself. Although they were smart, it was impossible that they learned the human language on their own. Moreover, with the way the giant attempted to get him to surrender and the odd steel ax, he had a sense of suspicion to all that happened.

# Chapter 347: Giant Evolved Human

---

There were two deep valleys with ravines on both sides, a clear stream flowed through them. A school of piranhas swam like wandering souls with the current, the stream bed scattered with bones.

A shadow walked on the shore silently, no one noticing its existence. Even the piranhas were unaware as they scoured for food in the water. With every stride taken, a distance of 10 meters was put between each step the shadow made. Within a few breaths, the shadow was gone.

More than 10 minutes later, Luo Yuan darted aside and hid within the shrubs. Looking afar, there was a cave at the side of the valley. The cave was eight meters tall and more than 10 meters wide. It was four kilometers away from the cave, and more than 10 giants who lay and squatted in front of it. Luo Yuan thought the gang of giants looked like they were the guards of the cave but they did not seem to be capable of doing that. The race had yet to develop professional troops.

Luo Yuan watched for another few minutes and he realized that there were many activities going on in the cave. Within a short period of time, three groups of giants went in and came out. Those who returned from the outside carried carcasses of prey on their shoulders, their bodies stained with blood. The food was a priority for them, and it seemed like hunting was their main source of food.

Luo Yuan continued to observe them patiently. The valley was

one of the tribe's main passages, many teams of them walked by but none of them noticed him even if he was just a few meters away.

"Grade D+ Special Mission: Destroy the intelligent tribe. Leave none of them behind. Kill all of the creatures in the tribe."

"Reminder: This is a special mission, difficulty has been lowered."

"Time limit: None"

"Accept / Decline"

A mission message popped into his mind. He took a look and accepted the mission. By some twist of faith, this special mission had the lowest difficulty. The only thing was to have patience as it was basically not risky at all.

As Luo Yuan had been preserving his strength, poisonous bugs in the bushes scurried out toward him. Many colorful bugs crawled on the back of his legs and some of them attempted to tear his skin apart. He took a look and ignored them. Now that his skin was a hundred times tougher than leather, even normal rifle bullets could do nothing to him. Apart from itching, the bites of the poisonous bugs could not harm his skin at all.

Furthermore, the bottom of his trousers and his sleeves were tied up. Other than those who crawled on his face that he squished to death, others bit him on the rest of his body.

Time was passing by and before long, it was evening. There were lesser teams coming back through the passage and it seemed like all the giants were in the troop. Both males and females were hunters, and as Luo Yuan calculated, there were more than a thousand of them who came back from the hunt since the afternoon. To include those who stayed in the cave, there could be three thousand of them.

Suddenly, he heard a voice cry out from behind him. He scowled and turned around.

Soon, he saw a team of giants appear. He was angered as the team brought back their prey while speaking in some strange language. The prey were not animals, they were humans! They were tied up with rattan ropes and there were men and women strung up. Their clothes were torn and most of them were covered in beast skins. Besides one who was well fed and rosy, while the rest had yellowish skin and were severely malnourished.

Luo Yuan frowned as he watched. Even the lowest class in the reconstruction area would at least be fed well. Apparently, this group of people was not from the reconstruction area, but wanderers in the wilderness. He had been in the reconstruction area for a long time so wanderers were not unfamiliar to him. Whether they were evolved humans who ran away to the wilderness or those wanderers who were chased out of the reconstruction area, the group of evolved humans had wandered

around the reconstruction area and struggled their whole lives.

Of course, not all wanderers were strong evolved humans. Most of them were captured by the evolved humans along the way. As there was no ruling monarch at that time, the evolved humans were merciless towards the civilians. Nobody knew what happened to them. Slavery was considered acceptable and to some evolved humans who acted like savages, civilians would become their prey when they could not hunt for food.

When Luo Yuan arrived at the reconstruction area, if not for his strength and ability, the giant lizard and king kong, he might be one of them here. When the people slowed down their steps, the giants would whip them. With every whip, a piece of flesh would tear off their backs. Most of their backs were ripped open and bloody, and they were limping hopelessly.

Luo Yuan held his saber tight and looked down. The giants were far away now as he let out a long sigh while holding back his urge to kill. Soon the sky turned dark, and when it was six in the evening, a new team began to guard the cave. Luo Yuan waited for another hour, and he leaped forward when he saw a bunch of giants who were coming back. Soon, he landed silently on top of the cave.

Suddenly, without Luo Yuan noticing, the giants who guarded the cave started to quarrel. Not long later, they started to fight. Luo Yuan was ready to kill them, but looking at them fighting, he held back. The gang of giants that he killed earlier, happened too fast. Before they could do anything, he butchered them all. He had no idea what kind of power these giants possessed. This small team

of giants was nothing to him as their power was limited. However, if he was to kill all of them in the cave, it would be trickier as there were thousands of them. One tiny mistake and he could get himself killed.

Luo Yuan crouched and hid under a giant rock while observing them patiently. At first, there were two of them fighting. One of them who seemed to be the leader tried to stop them but soon more of them were involved in the fight. Failing to stop them, the leader got dragged into the fight in the end. Eventually, it was chaos. Everybody was hitting each other, and the only purpose here was to fight. The giants were incredibly strong, each punch landed like an exploding bomb with every hit.

Soon some of them had fallen in pile of blood and one of them even had his chest sunken in. That did not stop them at all as bloodlust and death triggered the berserk of the giants as the fighting got even more intense. Just then, a giant appeared at the entrance of the cave. As he looked upon the bloody scene, the giant became furious.

Luo Yuan took a glance and noticed that this giant was different from the rest. The rest had eyes similar to humans while this one had gold pupils. It was wearing a necklace made of six human skulls on his neck, and that filled Luo Yuan with anger.

The giant walked quickly towards them and waved his arms. Luo Yuan could feel that there was a strong flow in the air. The hoard of giants who were fighting was hit by an invisible force and thrown off their feet, five meters away. They were screaming in pain.



"An evolved human?" Luo Yuan was dumbfounded.

# Chapter 348: Wicked

---

The giant evolved human roared at the rest in a fit of rage. Apparently, it held a position of power among the giants. Suddenly, all the giants fell to the ground, trembling with fear. No one noticed the shadowy grim of death that flew by behind the giant evolved human. Out of nowhere, a saber flashed and as the luminescence disappeared, the giants who lay on the ground were dead.

The place fell silent, as more than 10 bodies twitched in the dirt. The smell of blood was thick in the air, and as time went by, the odor became stronger and stronger. Luo Yuan hid in the shadows and flew into the cave undetected. Along the way, each giant he crossed was beheaded where it stood. Blood dripped from the tip of his bloodied crimson saber.

The cave was sloped downwards, more than 10 meters into the cave. Soon after, Luo Yuan came to a fork in the path. Later on, more than more paths appeared. It was like he moved through a maze. As he noticed the smooth air circulation, he realized that there were more than one entrances to the underground lair. Such terrains made the quest difficult as the giants could escape in many ways. Even for a person with powerful abilities, it would be hard to find even a single giant if he was lost in the maze. Nonetheless, for each giant he met, his blade was the last thing they encountered.

His sharp ears allowed him to hear the tiniest sound. Even the falling of dust that landed on the ground could not escape him. He could smell the giants who were a few kilometers away easily. His +17 physical attributes were fully utilized in that cave. From what he had observed, the civilization of this intelligent race remained

primitive where its societal formation was similar to those of a primitive nature. As Luo Yuan dashed through the cave, he saw that the giants were barbaric and openly having sex with different partners. Although they were of a form similar to humans, their desires, and cruel nature was that of wild animals. Luo Yuan could not bear to watch.

He followed the scent before him and moved forward. More and more bodies fell to the ground as he passed and he would dash into any path he detected a large life form and killed them all. The quest was not as simple as he expected. When there were many of them, he was noticed and he had to attack with increased effort. He encountered three or four evolved humans but at his enhanced agility, he killed them even before they could move a muscle. For the normal giants, they were killed in just a few swings of his saber.

Fortunately, there were not many giant evolved humans. There was only one of them in every hundred others. If there were more, it would be trickier for him. Evolved humans' abilities varied. If its ability was not used, nobody could tell what kind of power it would have. Even an insignificant skill could be tiresome.

As the killing continued, the stench of blood was overwhelming. More and more footsteps blundered his way. He was stunned at the stampede headed towards him. He thought for a while and leaped nine meters up to the top of the cave. A few hundred giants burst into the area, their gigantic bodies made shook rocks loose from the cave wall. An evolved human, who looked to be the leader of the gang walked in, in his thick arm he held an enormous machete, a bloodlust berserker look in his eyes. He looked at the pile of dead bodies, and as he looked around in fear, he bellowed with rage to

the cave ceiling. The rest of the giants stopped moving.

To some extent, the intelligent race was the same with the human race where they were a small tribe struggling to survive the apocalypse. In the wilderness, there was an endless jungle of danger that would kill them, and even genocide was a possible reality. Perhaps the normal giants were wild at heart and functioned based only on their physical strength, but to be the leader required much more. The evolved human giant that became leader had to be prudent, which was crucial or else they would have vanished in the wilderness.

It was too late for them to run. Luo Yuan used his hand and pushed off against the top of the cave. His body dropped in an instant. While he was still in the air, with his Zhanmadao in hand, combined with his Will, he slashed the air before him. The glow on the saber expanded to 1.5 times its brightness, and its luminescence extended at a length of three meters.

As the giants were huddled together, with a single swing, Luo Yuan slaughtered 19 of them with that blow. Before they could even make a sound, Luo Yuan darted by and swung deadly motions with his blade. The glow was like a laser, shooting out savagely in the small tunnel. Before they realized what happened, some hundred of them were dead on their feet.

It was too late. The cave was in chaos. The giants were choked with fear. The will to fight disappeared with the screams of fear and the gurgling of blood, like snowflakes caught under the scorching sun. The shadow that murdered them was unstoppable.

Just when a giant was prepared to attack with its spear, it was killed instantly. As another one was ready to unleash its power, its head slid clean off its body. Even when one of the giant evolved human used its defensive evolved ability, it was futile against the Will powered saber. Some of them were killed by accident in the chaos of the attack.

Although it was a Grade D+ mission, its difficulty was comparable to that of a Grade D mission. Even though there were thousands of them to be killed and the leader was on the light-green level, they could not escape Luo Yuan's wrath.

In less than a minute, the tunnel was filled with cold corpses. A few of them managed to escape and hundreds of them were killed by Luo Yuan's blade. Including those that he killed earlier, there were approximately two thousand of them dead in the dirt. Carrying his Zhanmadao, Luo Yuan proceeded to walk into the cave following the stench of giants with no fear. Along the way, he killed more than 10 giants. 10 minutes later, he could see light illuminate the darkness of the cave.

The cave was humongous. It was 10 meters high and a few square kilometers wide. Countless fire points covered the cave like starlight, lighting up the space.

It was the centerpoint of the tribe. Perhaps due to the massacre earlier, there were not many giants left. Most of them were kids that were shorter than two meters and pregnant mothers.

What shocked Luo Yuan was there were many humans around them, numbering in the hundreds at the least. As he peered closely

at them, he noticed some of them looked like slaves while the others looked empty, like zombies. The cave was filled with many items that were left by humans after the apocalypse. Rusty cars, broken tanks, worn out electrical utensils and random trash were piled up at the centre of the cave.

Luo Yuan suspected that the source of their steel weapons came from the materials on that hill. He knew that the items could have been possessions of the humans trapped in that cave, and they would have been forced to forged weapons for the giants under the threat of instant death. He was torn between the choice to end the supply of steel weaponry to the giants, by killing the people, or saving them from the faith that ensnared them.

# Chapter 349: Lost

---

With his Zhanmadao in his hand, Luo Yuan walked ahead, expressionless. More than 10 young giants attempted to ambush him. But, before they were close enough to strike him, they were killed by a few slashes of the glowing saber that was radiating three meters of his Will.

While he was walked, he killed all who stood in his path. Dead bodies filled the area. Soon, the noisy cave was silent. Not only the giants, but the humans were quiet too. As Luo Yuan was stepped closer towards them, and they backed away in fear. Some of them were so scared that their knees buckled and they fell to the ground. None of them dared to fight back.

Luo Yuan neither unleashed his aura nor did he kill anyone, yet. However, his blood covered saber, clothes and his deadpan face terrified everyone in the cavern. He glimpsed at the furnace that was 10 meters away to the left. Next to it was a gigantic mold workshop with some self-made machines. A group of humans stood by it, frozen with fear. Some of them held wrenches and shovels in their trembling hands. He looked away and did not say a word.

As a strong evolved human, it was hard for Luo Yuan to imagine how difficult it would be to live in the wilderness. Apart from how they live their lives as fodder for mutated beasts, the harsh environment, as well as slavery of their own kind were a few more nightmares they suffered. Perhaps to them, it was the only way to live. Their nature of life was to live and to breed. What was against the nature of life had been eliminated through the evolution of their species.

A group of them were seen as rebels who escaped to the jungle, but the others were not. Most of them just wanted to live as wanderers forgotten by the reconstruction area. Luo Yuan was no saint. His principles and virtues were no something he was proud of. If he did not have the system which made him an evolved human, he might have been one of them. What he saw was a means to stay alive, but there was an indescribable sadness inside of him for them.

If he did not find out earlier, this intelligent race of giants would have developed into a super civilization with the knowledge they would have learned from the humans. Perhaps they would be killed by the giants once they found no use for them. It would be a disheartening thing to witness. Luo Yuan shook his head to get rid of the miserable thoughts on his mind. His face turned stone cold and he looked ahead. His body was suddenly a blur and he disappeared from where he stood. More than 10 female giants who attempted to run away were slashed in half as they took their first few steps.

In an instant, that area of a few kilometers became a kill box. With his speed of 200 meters per second, nobody managed to escape his merciless saber. No matter pregnant women or children that were less than one meter tall, they were all killed without remorse. Within moments, the stench of blood filled the air.

10 minutes later, Luo Yuan slid his saber back into its sheath. The people who were watched were relieved the giants were all mutilated around them, but none of them uttered a sound. Most of the wanderers were ordinary people who were captured by evolved human to be sold as slaves. Peace had been lost to them for so long,



they did not know it anymore. They were numb from all the torture and were just glad to have air in their lungs. Apart from the fear for Luo Yuan, most of them were terrified for what this murderous evolved human had in store for them.

During the apocalypse, human lives were worse than a dog's life. The treatment the giants gave them was considered good as humans were of use to them. Although their freedom and dignity were long gone, at least their safety was guaranteed and they would never go hungry. If they were to be in the wilderness, they were not sure how long they could live in that lush green diabolical wasteland.

Luo Yuan did not have the time to care about what the people thought. He looked at the mission and realized that it was not completed yet. He searched the dead bodies around him again. He saw a dead woman's pregnant body in the mound of corpses at his feet, and he used his saber to pierce through her tummy. But yet, the mission remained incomplete.

There were many forks in the cave but there was only one path in this one. He had a meticulous memory where he memorized everything in one glance. Before he came here, he had already cleared each and every path he crossed. There should not be any giants that he missed. Apart from the possibility that there were more giants who had not made their way back yet, there should be another giant hiding somewhere.

He looked around carefully, and something caught his attention. In a dark corner where some filthy women were cowering for their lives, there was an oddly shaped curtain hidden by their feet. He

heard a heartbeat that was obviously stronger than a human being's heartbeat thumping from under the bundled up curtain. There was something concealed in there. Luo Yuan walked towards the women. Seeing Luo Yuan walking towards their direction, they were horrified. Their bodies trembled and they turned a sickly pale white.

"Get out of the way!" Luo Yuan said.

"It's... still a baby, it doesn't know anything. Please forgive it!" A woman said while swallowing her fear, her voice was quivering uncontrollably. Luo Yuan was surprised. He was not sure if these women loved the child, and were now on the same side with the giants. How could they protect their enemy? Did they underestimate how powerful his saber was?

Luo Yuan pulled out his Zhanmadao and said, "Do you think you can stand in my way?" The women were terror-stricken. They instantly crawled aside and stayed silent. He then lifted the curtain, and there was a baby that looked not more than a few weeks old. It looked like a six-year-old human child. Its pupils were gold, clear and innocent. It thought he was playing a game with it, and let out a giggle while kicking its feet.

Suddenly, a light flashed before the baby. It stopped smiling. Blood gushed out of its throat. It bled to death instantly, its eyes cold and lifeless.

"Grade D+ Special Mission: Destroy the intelligent race tribe, leave none of them behind.

Kill all of the intelligent creatures in the tribe"

"Remarks : This is a special mission, difficulty has been lowered."

"Time Limit: None"

"Mission Status: Completed"

"Evaluation: Perfect."

"Character: Luo Yuan"

"Completion: 100% "

"Basic Experience Value Reward+9600\*100%!"

"Evaluation: Perfect, Experience Value+9600\*100%!"

"Experience: 5520/307200!"

"You have leveled up!"

Character: Luo Yuan

Occupation: Vice-captain of the Sword Unit

Level: 11

Attributes:

Strength: 17 (10)

Agility: 15 (10)

Physique: 17+4 (10)

Intelligence: 14 (10)

Sensory Perception: 14+1 (10)

Will: 16+1 (10)

Skills: Science 16, Math 14, Mandarin 19, English 16, Finance 17, Computers 9, Dancing 1, Art 3, Gaming 6, Negotiating 9, Socializing 7, Cooking 3, Driving 1, Hand to Hand Combat 19, Sword Skill 5, Gun Skill 6, Casting 15

Special Skills: Identification Technique, Synthesization

## Technique, Detection Technique

Natural Abilities: Earth Stomp (Level 6), Four-Dimensional Vision (2%)

Battle Beast: Giant Lizard (Level-3) Raging Ape (Level-2)

Unassigned Attribute Points: 1

Unassigned Skill Points: 5

Incomplete Missions: None

Luo Yuan looked at the message sent from the system. He was happy. After waiting for almost half a year, he had finally achieved a level-up. Although it took some time, within six months his abilities improved very quickly. Whether it was the change in attributes during the transition period or the level eight energy nucleus that he recently consumed which boosted his physique and strength, the minor points the system gave him every time he leveled up barely meant anything to him. The function of the system had become insignificant to him.

However, the upgrade of attributes that the system gave was crucial too as all attribute points were added accordingly. His highest attribute (plain attribute) was +17 while the lowest was +14 and they were the main attributes. Initially, his dexterity was the highest but now it was far behind his strength and physical traits

which set him back from his true potential.

Luo Yuan was not in a hurry to make changes to his attributes. He had some doubts. The main reason why he was here was to look for the Wisdom Tree. If he managed to find it, not only would his intelligence be boosted, but the remaining points could be added to his dexterity. By then, his four-dimensional vision could be relieved, and there would be another round of major changes to his abilities. However, he had looked high and low throughout the cave, but there was no signs of the Wisdom Tree.

He thought about it and realized that it made sense. There was no tree that could survive in a cave as there was no sunlight. He had no idea where the giants migrated from. He looked at the women in front of him and pulled out his saber with an ice cold look in his eyes. That frightened the women and their faces turned a ghostly white. He said, "Let me ask you, where did these giants come from." "I... I don't know, I don't know anything." said the woman who defended the baby. Luo Yuan turned around and said loudly, "Everybody come forward. Does anybody know where these giants come from?" His voice was so loud that an echo lingered in the cave.

The massacre earlier made them obey him out of sheer fear for their lives. They looked at each other, gathered around him. Soon, all of them were standing in front of Luo Yuan. He looked at them one by one and noticed that there were a few of them that seemed hesitantly stuttering to say something. He pointed at one of them and said, "Speak up, and if you dare to lie to me..."

His words send a chill down their spines. The crowd backed away

and the one he pointed at stood alone. The man looked around in fear. When he realized that Luo Yuan had pointed at him, he dropped to his knees and repeatedly prostrated himself before Luo Yuan could even finish what he was saying.

"Master, please have mercy on me. I know, I know... where did they come from."

Luo Yuan frowned. It felt strange to him. "Stand up and tell me!" he shouted at the wailing man. The man was petrified. He could not move his legs to stand up. He was shaking on the ground and could not speak. Luo Yuan picked another person from the quivering huddled mass of people. With all the vicious killing that had happened, the man spilled everything he knew from the beginning to the end.

# Chapter 350: Supervision

---

"They have been here for half a year?" Luo Yuan said. He thought to himself, it seemed like the Wisdom Tree remained where it was.

"Yes, yes!" The man said while he bowed, afraid of what could happen next.

"Good, continue!" Luo Yuan nodded.

The man was surprised. His long face was replaced with a relieved smile. He was more affluent with his information after that.

"They were from the Mushi Province, by the Kidney Mountain." he noticed Luo Yuan's frown and added, "The Kidney Mountain looks like the kidney of a pig, it's very easy to recognize."

"What Pig Kidney Mountain? Can you be more specific, is there a proper name for it so that I could find it on the map." Luo Yuan was not satisfied.

It was barren land in the northwest area, and there were only a few provinces there. Mushi Province was one of them. He had an idea where it was as he had seen it before on the map, but it was located at the Kunlun Mountain that had many dangerous rivers and treacherous hills. Even if some one was familiar with the landscape, it was impossible to trek the path with serious risk to bear. Moreover, the entire place was covered in plants. It was difficult enough to find Mushi Province, not to mention what Pig



## Kidney Mountain.

The man was stunned. He glanced at the saber in Luo Yuan's hand and cold sweat was dripping from his forehead. He was startled by the sudden change in Luo Yuan's mood, "That's... how we call it, it's... easy to find, Kidney Mountain, it looks like a pig's kidney..." Suddenly, a thought occurred to him and he smacked his forehead, "Oh right, there's a waterfall where you can hear it from far away."

A waterfall was a good landmark, he would look for it when he got back at night. There was a computer in the department with a satellite map. It was not the common map used by civilians but a detailed military version. The resolution could reach 0.3 meters where even tiny objects could be easily seen. To find the waterfall should not be a problem.

But Luo Yuan was confused, "Why would they want to migrate out of nowhere?". With fear in his eyes, the man stuttered his answer.

"The place was terrorized by a gigantic mutated beast and it had eaten many green-skin giants. That's why they escaped."

Luo Yuan thought to himself. It made sense. With the intelligent race's temperament, they would not move away unless they were under siege by a force much greater than themselves

Luo Yuan looked at the time and realized that it was almost 8 p.m. He took a glance at the people and said, "I'm leaving. Take

care of yourselves." in unison, the crowd burst with chatter.

"Master, please bring us along with you!"

"As long as we don't die of hunger, I'm willing to do anything! Please bring me with you!"

"From now on, you are our master, you can do whatever you want with us. Please don't leave us behind!"

...

As he was walking, Luo Yuan sensed the people behind him bowed to him. He could not help but stop. From what they said, it was obvious that life in the wilderness would be suicide for them if they stayed alone. It was the jungle rule where the strong lived content, while the rest would live like animals with no dignity.

But to think it through, it would not be an easy task if he decided to bring them along. It was 400 kilometers from the reconstruction area. They would have to go through jungles that were full of danger. Even if they walked day and night, the fastest they could go would just be 50 kilometers a day. Furthermore, throughout the journey, he would have to take care of their well-being and keep them safe. Even if they made it to the destination, perhaps only half of them could survive.

Luo Yuan looked around the cave, the only way to get out of the cave was through the tunnels. As long as the tunnels were blocked,

the cave would be safe to live in. Looking at the dead bodies and food around the cave, they should not be worried about what to eat for a while. For an intelligent race, there was nothing for them to worry about as they had been in the wilderness for a long time as their survival principles were not as rigid as it used to be. Luo Yuan suspected most of the people here had practiced cannibalism to survive.

Although they looked harmless, many of them were dangerous. During the apocalypse, one had to do whatever it took to stay alive. He thought for awhile and said, "Please get up. I will contact the reconstruction area and try my best to help all of you. Please stay here for a few days while awaiting the rescue."

There was joy on their faces. Luo Yuan shook his head and left the cave. On his way back, he reported to the office director Chen Xinjie for a status update. The results would have to wait for approval from his superiors. Luo Yuan did not mind the wait and arrived at home an hour later. He opened the door and realized that there was a guest.

"Oh god, finally! You're back, Mr. Luo! The ladies at home had been waiting for you." said a 50-year-old woman with a thick Shanghai accent. There was a lingering charm about her, and he could see that when she was younger, she was a beauty. Upon Luo Yuan's return, she stood up and greeted him with enthusiasm.

"Oh, Auntie Zhang is here. Let's take a seat! There was something I had to do earlier, that's why I'm home late. Let me go change and I'll be right back." said Luo Yuan with a smile. The woman was the committee director and a very ebullient person. She had dropped

by three times this month.

Luo Yuan walked to his bedroom and took off his shirt that was stained with blood. He took a shower and went back into the living room. The woman stood up and was ready to leave, "I didn't notice it was so late, Mr. Luo, I shall make a move first or else the man at home will not be able to sleep."

"Aunty Zhang, I just came back and you're leaving. Please do stay... But if you have to go, you are always welcomed to drop by anytime. Jiahui, fetch me a can of meat from the last distribution, we cannot finish it anyway."

The welfare of the sword unit was very generous as they would distribute food for their personnel every month. Furthermore, they did not only provide top quality food such as fruits and meats, but there were also daily necessities made available by them, that were rare on the market. Sometimes, there would also be seasoning sauces.

Mu Wenwen and Wang Xianguang were allocated jobs this month and moved in with Luo Yuan. Even Chen Jiayi was sent to school, but she would only come back every 10 days. Luo Yuan was not interested in the meat that was distributed as he preferred fresh ones, so the two boxes of meat remained untouched.

Aunty Zhang kept refusing his offer but gave in to Huang Jiahui who was very persistent. She took the meat while smiling and thanked them on her way out. She could not hide her happiness when she saw the '5-star' label on the packet. She had never seen a '5-star' meat as there were only '4-star' selections available in the

market. Each packet cost a bomb and that was if a person could get his or her hands on them first. It was a surprise that Luo Yuan had them in excess at home.

...

"What did you guys talk about?"

"Some girl stuff, you wouldn't be interested anyway." Huang Jiahui said while blushing, "I have warmed up the food for you, I'll bring it to you now."

"Okay!" Luo Yuan nodded. Although he was not hungry, since it was ready, it would be wasted if he did not finish it.

"Oh yeah, I might need to head out tomorrow. If it doesn't take too long, I will be back at night. If not, I might be out for a few days."

He could not be sure that he would find the spot where the Wisdom Tree grew in one day.

"Do you need to be gone for so long, is it another mission?" asked Zhao Yali who was bringing out the food. Her hands shook as she spoke, and the soup in the bowl spilled all over the floor. She immediately put down the bowl in front of him, wiped up the spill, and asked him again with concern in her eyes.

"Don't worry about me, look at you, all clumsy. Don't you know

my ability? A year ago we traveled from the east to be here and we survived. Furthermore, it's not a mission this time. I'm looking for something, I will be back as soon as I have found it." Luo Yuan said while knocking on the wooden table, superstitiously.

"Look at you, so proud of yourself!" Zhao Yali rolled her eyes at Luo Yuan, with relief. She knew that besides being promiscuous, there was nothing that this guy could not do.

"Boss Luo, since it's not dangerous, let me follow you." Wang Shishi said.

Luo Yuan wanted to decline at first, but looked at her eagerness, he nodded and said, "Sure, let's go together."

Luo Yuan thought to himself, as a strong evolved human, she must be bored to death to have to stay home every day. It would be good for her to explore. He was confident nothing would happen to her, on his watch.

# Chapter 351: Child

---

The moans as the couple had sex in the bedroom could be heard throughout the house. They finally came to a stop after the woman screamed for joy at the intensity of her orgasms.

Zhao Yali's naked body lay beside Luo Yuan. He playfully ran his hand up and cupped her snowy white breast, which made her moaned softly. She enjoyed his touch with her eyes closed.

After a while, Zhao Yali opened her eyes and hugged Luo Yuan. She said, "Little Yuan, I want a child."

Luo Yuan chuckled to himself. "What inspired you? Auntie Zhang?" he asked.

Zhao Yali nodded and said softly, "Even though I know it is a recommended policy by the reconstruction area for you to procreate, I too, genuinely, want to have a child with you. I am so worried every time you leave, I am never sure you would come home. It will be different if I have a child..."

"I'll get jealous though!" Luo Yuan said and he smiled mischievously.

Zhao Yali slapped his chest and said, "I'm serious, don't interrupt me!"

Luo Yuan composed himself and sighed, "I believe you know that

I have never used protection. We have been together for so long but Huang Jiahui and you have never got pregnant. Obviously, my gene might be different from that of a normal person, and the probability of infertility could be very high."

"I thought we can try with a test tube baby or even use sperm from the sperm bank?" Zhao Yali asked.

"Auntie Zhang told you about this as well?"

"She mentioned about it while gossiped. I didn't know there are so many people had problems getting pregnant. Most of them tried artificial insemination and finally succeeded." Zhao Yali said.

Luo Yuan looked upset as he knew the government would have planned to analyze and study his genes. For artificial insemination, they needed to extract his sperm. However, he had no idea what they would do with his excess sperm samples after completing the process of artificial insemination. He had no control over the procedures as well. Perhaps, he would get many children for free or possibly various kinds of abnormal fetuses.

Luo Yuan pondered and then said. "Let's continue trying naturally for a while longer. If it really does not work out, then we can try artificial insemination."

He understood that the action would be a good deed as it was not a bad idea to donate sperm before the apocalypse. Perhaps, it would be a benefit to society if the rehabilitation government could produce stronger human beings.



It sounded really bad. He was too obsessed with that problem. Luo Yuan suddenly frowned and sat up on the bed.

"What's wrong?" Zhao Yali asked.

"I heard the alarm! I need to go." Luo Yuan said as he took his clothes and put on his shirt.

"Don't worry, it should be fine. There is always an air defense alert every few days." Luo Yuan said to comfort Zhao Yali as he knew she was worried.

Their house was at Basement Level Nine, and the sound of the air defense alert was muffled as there were many layers of concrete between them and the surface. Luckily, it was very quiet during midnight, otherwise, he might not be able to hear it as well.

"Take care!" Zhao Yali said.

"Alright, I'll be right back." Luo Yuan replied and button up his shirt. He took his Zhanmadao out from under his bed as he always made it a point to have it nearby, in case of emergencies. He opened the room door and left the room.

He arrived at street level on the surface in just a few minutes.

Countless threads of fire danced around the night sky. Many

spotlights followed, racing behind them as their game of cat and mouse to illuminated the skies. The atmosphere was filled with a lot of smoke.

All the factories on both sides of the streets had closed for the night.

All of a sudden, a giant corpse fell on top one of the factories with a deafening crash. The factory collapsed and caused a short circuit which sent sparks flying into the sky.

Luo Yuan jumped onto the roof of one of the factories nearby and realized the City of Hope was not the only place being attacked. The surrounding areas were up in flames as well. Luckily, all the workers had gone home and no one was injured.

A giant mutated bird which fell on the other end of the street struggled to get up and it tried very hard to extend its bleeding wings which were more than 10 meters long. Its action caused a very strong blast of wind to sweep across the ground and a wall nearby collapsed and then swirled in a whirlwind up in the air.

In the next second, a short spear struck it in the back and it instantly broke its spine and pierced through its body. The wound was about a meter long and exposed flesh and its gizzards. The mutated bird moaned and fell to the ground.

Luo Yuan spent looked around for more thick wood plates and made a few more short spears. He threw the short spears towards any large living creature he saw in the air and on the ground.

Based on his 17 Strength Points and 15 Agility Points, he could easily hit any mutated green level creature.

But seeing as most of the green level mutated beasts were massive and incredibly strong, he had to aim for their heads and pierce their skulls for an instant kill. Otherwise, a bodily wound would have barely slowed them down.

However, the creature from those level was very vigilant to danger around them. They might not be able to escape during in an emergency due to their huge bodies, but it was easy for them to move their heads in order to avoid an attack. It was not at all easy to kill them.

Luo Yuan had to be nearer if he really wanted to kill them.

The chaos slowly subsided after about 10 minutes. Only a few sparks flashed across the dark night sky.

Many military trucks and tanks slowly appeared in the streets and shot at the mutated beasts were yet to be put down. The dead carcasses were then towed away and piled into the trucks.

The factory doors slowly opened and lights illuminated the war zone around them.

The reconstruction area was no longer as safe as before. Since the great migration, there were a few attacks like the one that just

happened. Perhaps, the mutated beasts came from the great migration. The mutated beasts nearby had been attacked by the humans and they knew that the reconstruction area was dangerous. While the mutated beasts from other regions moving through, did not know and simply broke in and attacked the area.

Luo Yuan continued to look around and saw a truck spraying pest control solution. He quickly jumped off the roof and walked towards the entrance of the underground city.

The antiseptic solution was poisonous and had a terribly pungent odor, but it did not affect him as he moved through the area.

# Chapter 352: Departure

---

The next morning, Luo Yuan walked through the attacked zone again. The dawn sky was a light orange and a dark gray as sun rose over the horizon. He realized everything had returned to normal.

The carcasses on the street had been cleared and the damages to the factories were repaired as well. Everything was back to how it used to be. The only remaining impression from the night before was a light smell of smoke that still floated through the air.

Luo Yuan walked to the sword unit headquarters and told his secretary to prepare a cup of tea for him. The pros of having a superior who is very particular about documentation were that, fortunately, he did not have much paper work to do.

He switched on the computer and searched for the satellite map of Mushi County. Based on the satellite map, Mushi County was a forest. No signs of human life could be found and it had become the home of many different species of mutated beasts.

A few hundred kilometers away was the ocean. The entire world was different from what it used to be, due to the change in climate. The living environment for the humans became unsustainable and the surface area of the land became much smaller because of the rising ocean levels.

At the moment, the entire region of Hua Dong, Hua Nan and Hua Bei had disappeared off the map. Half the region of the [ancient state of Shu](#) had been sunken below sea level. A vast portion of the

land in China was underwater. Even the North and South regions of the Americas suffered the same fate as well. The central region was still safe from the waters. However, the other regions were all lost underwater. The low lying European countries were long gone with a few small islands in the center of the ocean.

Luo Yuan looked very serious as he stared at the map which was completely different from the existing one.

Even if the humans succeeded and survived in the end, the land could never go back to how it used to be.

He tried to calm himself. He shut down the computer, sighed aloud and finished the tea on his desk. He walked down to the underground training hall. Since the last time he volunteered to help during the emergency operations, many of the team members from the Unit looked to him with a lot more respect. Many team members came forward to greet him when he was on the way to the training hall.

After helping Fang Peibin train for a while, Luo Yuan walked to a quiet corner. The entire level was the training hall. He backed away into the shadows for a moment of privacy.

Shortly after, he opened the system panel and assigned all five points of the previous upgrade to his saber skill. With that, his ability was upgraded to an expert level.

He was surprised. Perhaps, he had accumulated some experience points from his training earlier because the five points were

sufficient for him to upgrade himself by two whole levels (three points is equivalent to one level). His saber skills were: Expert: 7. A warm feeling of new found power spread throughout his body.

The air around him began vibrating and the dust particles started rising into the air. The space where he was at immediately became another world. Luckily, Luo Yuan was standing in a quiet corner, otherwise, if anyone was around him, they might have been hurt.

The area around him seemed to have infused with his Will. He could turn the space into a dark hell or turn it into a bright heaven. He could set fire to the air around him and also freeze the particles around him in an instant. He could do anything he wanted in that particular space.

Of course, that was the misconception of his strength upgrades. His Will was still not on par with his level. He could only generate certain forces for combat. For example, it was possible for him to kill an ordinary human or low-level mutated beasts easily. However, he still needed weapons powered by his Will to kill stronger and more powerful mutated beasts.

He closed his eyes and did not dare to move. He was cherishing the moment, the good feeling of an upgrade. It slowly faded after awhile. However, the memory lingered in his mind.

His momentum slowly faded as the feeling faded as well.

He was slightly disappointed as it was getting more difficult for him to be upgraded since he chose to master his saber skills above

all else. Even when he had the system to guide him, he was not able to completely master it without consistent training. However, training did not help much anymore at this stage as his saber expertise has reached its highest level.

It was believed that his skill had reached its optimal level. His Will had been upgraded and the saber had become more powerful as well. Besides that, the energy to manifest his Will had been reduced significantly. Training harder was not an option for chasing upgrades anymore as it would take much longer.

There was another way to make upgrades happen, he thought. His breakthrough idea was to risk his life and fight extremely dangerous battles. The difficulty and threats of death would be much more intense, which might be enough to help him gather his Will, and gain more experience. However, how could he know which battle might be his last?

Luo Yuan skipped his lunch to practice his saber skills again when the techniques were still fresh in his mind.

...

The next morning, Wang Shishi woke him up before sunrise. Luo Yuan looked at the clock and realized it was 3 a.m. He dragged himself out of the bed groggily, showered and had his breakfast, while still rubbing the sleep out of his eyes. An hour later, he started his journey together with Wang Shishi, who brimmed over with excitement.



The moon was beautiful, and there were a few stars in the sky. They increased their pace after they exited from the Hope City.

Luo Yuan was surprised that Wang Shishi could keep up with him. Although he was not moving at full speed, his Agility was well over that of a normal person. He crossed 20 to 30 meters in a single step at speeds of about 50 to 60 meters per second.

At the moment, Wang Shishi was gliding a foot above the ground. She looked calm, and she moved much faster than before.

When they arrived at the reconstruction area, Luo Yuan was more relaxed as he mentored Wang Shishi. He offered her advice now and again, but in truth, he wanted her to take charge of her own actions.

Fortunately, Wang Shishi was truly passionate about her Telekinesis. She trained tirelessly since she entered the reconstruction area. She had not seemed hardworking when she first arrived, but she practiced, daily, whenever she could. To the untrained eye, she seemed to be walking normally, but her feet were not touching the ground. With missions she had completed with her Telekinesis technique, she would not even have to get her hands dirty to accomplish them.

Luo Yuan was impressed, and curious as he had no idea exactly how powerful she was at this point.

He realized he had underestimated Wang Shishi's ability and he thought she was ready to join the Sword Unit.

...

An hour later, they finally arrived at the frontline border office. Luo Yuan showed his ID card to the security guards, who were immediately shocked at what they saw. They quickly greeted him respectfully and signaled the troops to allow them through. As an evolved human of Luo Yuan's standing, his ID card from the Sword Unit was very useful.

"Brother Luo, why did the soldiers address you as a Vice-Captain?" Wang Shishi asked curiously after they walked through.

"The sword unit is a military regiment, what's wrong with that?" Luo Yuan said.

"Vice-Captain, that's Vice-Captain! A person of power! Why have you not mentioned it before?" Wang Shishi pouted, annoyed that Luo Yuan had not told her.

"That's nothing special. The lowest rank in the bureau is Colonel. My military title is not valuable at all." Luo Yuan continued to say.

His title meant nothing to him but he did not realize it was deemed a powerful influence among ordinary people.

"But, but that's Captain! You never mentioned it before! I would never have known if I had not come today!" Wang Shishi said, agitated.

"Alright, stop talking. We are entering the forest now." Luo Yuan shook his head and chuckled to himself.

The Ancient state of Shu refers to the current region of the Sichuan Province in China.

# Chapter 353: The Pellet

---

Both of them had departed by midnight, but it was already almost sunset by now.

Mushi County was about 700 kilometers away from the redevelopment area in a straight-line distance. If Luo Yuan was alone, he would already have been able to head there and back within just a day. But as he had brought Wang Shishi along, the journey had been slowed down with several stops to rest, as her perception ability was not able to last for long.

Fortunately, it was less than 100 kilometers from here to Mushi County and it would take less than an hour to reach there. However, when he saw Wang Shishi's tired face, he still stopped and blamed himself for his own impatience. If the wisdom tree was really there, it would not disappear if he had delayed this journey by a day. Luo Yuan said, "The sky is getting dark. We should stop here now. Please be careful, I'll be scouting around to look for a place to put up tonight."

There were mountains everywhere, but Luo Yuan managed to find a cave nearby a cliff. Outside the cave, there were dense vines that camouflaged the cave well. If it wasn't for Luo Yuan's sharp eyes which caught the rustling of the dead leaves, he would not have discovered this cave.

He forcefully ripped off the vines and gently covered his nose. An odor was lingering in the air from the cave. After a few steps, a mutated beast that looked like a giant bear rushed towards him, along with the pungent odor. However, it got hit badly by Luo

Yuan just as it arrived him. Being flung a few meters away, it collapsed onto the ground heavily.

In order to avoid the smell of blood that could lead to unnecessary trouble, Luo Yuan was much more civilized this time and did not induce too much bleeding in his battles.

He even made sure dinner was settled for the night.

"STOMP!!"

Luo Yuan frowned and stepped on his foot heavily. There was a beetle that was trying to climb onto his feet – which was now crushed to death. Looking at this cave with various mutated creatures and insects that lived in harmony, he spread out the momentum and the air distorted violently. Large numbers of insects were already dead before they could escape.

After a while, Wang Shishi came into the cave as well. She did not care about the dirty cave any longer and sat on a rock. She was too exhausted to even want to move a muscle.

"Do you regret accompanying me?" Luo Yuan laughed.

"I am just not used to it yet. I'll be fine after a break," Wang Shishi replied unwillingly.

Luo Yuan smiled and stopped teasing her. "You be careful while I go out to hunt for better food."

"Please come back earlier!"

Before Luo Yuan left, he veiled the cave with vines once more. He began to comb the forest. To an expert of the jungle who had identification skills, despite his meticulous search, chancing upon good food was no easy feat. If it was a planted tuber full of starch or succulent fungi, it could be found in abundance. As compared to the Reconstruction Area, many more choices of food can be found there.

Luo Yuan sniffed around and managed to determine a spot after walking for a few steps. He pulled away from the dead leaves above and found a bunch of snow-white eggs underneath. Each of the eggs was the size of a goose's egg, and they were perfectly round, like a ball. There were more than hundreds of eggs all piled up into a mound.

Obviously, these were not bird eggs but those of insects. However, they were edible, tender and tasted more delicious.

After Luo Yuan picked five, he broke the rest of the eggs open before he left, out of habit cultivated back in the Reconstruction Area. The moment he saw any mutated creatures, he would eliminate them on the spot to avoid any possible risk.

Luo Yuan was lucky, as he found a plant bearing wild fruits before he returned. It was shaped like a hawthorn but was bigger by at least a hundred times. Each of them was as big as a football, with a very hard the shell, and was protected by barbed spines.

After he cracked the hard shell, a rich aroma filled the air. Luo Yuan ate one, and it was not as sour as hawthorns were, but it tasted slightly alcoholic, with a hint of frankincense. The flavor was indeed unique.

The whole tree was ten meters high but it only bore eight fruits. Luo Yuan picked all the fruits and used a large number of meter-wide leaves to wrap them up. Even if they could not finish all of them, he could still bring them back for Huang Jiahui and Zhao Yali.

...

The embers from the bonfire gradually extinguished and left only a dim red light in the dark.

Luo Yuan hugged Wang Shishi to sleep, quietly listening to the wailings of the mutated beasts outside. After being so accustomed to the peaceful life in the Reconstruction Area, and now having to return to the wild, they were unable to adapt just yet. Any small movement would easily jolt them awake

"Go to sleep. I am here to protect you." Said Luo Yuan.

Wang Shishi acknowledged him and was finally relieved. Her days' worth of exhaustion finally outweighed the worries of the night. Her eyelids were getting heavy, and she soon fell asleep. After some time, Luo Yuan gently let go of Wang Shishi and looked at the time – it was already one o' clock in the morning. He felt

slightly cold in the forest and decided to get up to rekindle the bonfire.

Suddenly, a dim blue light swept through the cave. He curiously walked out, only to find that the blue light came from 30 to 40 kilometers away, and was shaking. Luo Yuan hesitated; the curiosity in his mind drove him to go over to take a look. He glanced through the surroundings and quickly found a pile of boulders.

He then pushed the boulders to block the entrance. Wang Shishi who was very tired after a long day was sleeping like a log, so the movement did not wake her up at all.

...

The forest was blanketed with thick fog, like countless evil spirits clawing close to the ground, which exuded a sinister vibe. The wailing sounds that came one after another, even made everyone feel like they were back in the prehistoric era.

Suddenly, a figure quietly passed through the forest, thronging through the mist.

Luo Yuan started to slow down; his steps became light and quiet. He hunched his body to completely submerge into the mist, before stopping to quietly lie on a hillside. He had a serious look on his face.



He found that the glow was not from a mutated beast, but rather, a scientific object.

It was about half a meter in diameter, shaped like a sphere and covered in white. Its surface was extremely smooth, and on its head, was a small concave arc. There was a fist-sized crystal supported by nothing; merely being suspended above the concave arc. The blue light was emitted from the crystals.

It seemed like there were some text and icons on the smooth surface. Other than the geometric shape of the icon, Luo Yuan did not recognize any of the text. In fact, it looked more like distorted squiggles than legible text at all.

The ball was floating around the forest, and that blue light kept scanning its surroundings – plants, animals and even tiny insects were not spared. Apparently, the blue light was malevolent. When it scanned through the mutated beasts, there was no harm done.

The ball was moving in a haphazard manner, fast at times, and slow occasionally. It sometimes flew upwards, and sometimes it swoops downward. Even when the forest was full of twigs, the ball could fly through the forest smoothly, hindered not by the twigs.

Luo Yuan's face turned solemn. After the apocalypse, the technology advanced under the pressure of death. In just two or three years, the technological progress had made a dramatic improvement. Although it did not improve much due to a major setback in the civilian areas, the military area experienced an influx of changes.

The new highly explosive material, the armored exoskeleton and even the application of nuclear-powered guns had also been quite a breakthrough. However, Luo Yuan did not know that it was partially his credit to take, as the normal temperature of the superconducting material had helped many areas to experience a critical breakthrough.

But no matter how many breakthroughs science and technology had undergone, the history was always traceable, and thus, massive improvement could not be done overnight.

Even when the scientific and technological content in this tiny sphere had only demonstrated the ability of flight, it still had shocked Luo Yuan immensely.

Anti-gravity and advanced intelligence were the only things that he could see. As for that blue light, he had no idea what its purpose was. Furthermore, its smooth and futuristic appearance was obviously not an aftermath of the apocalypse.

His heart grew heavy. As of late, humans had no tendency to invent a ball to such a level. Even if they could create such an item, in order to reduce the processes to improve efficiency, the surface would be with marks and edges of a machine.

...

At this moment, the ball seemed to have discovered something, as it suddenly disappeared into a shadow, and flashed towards the

front.

Luo Yuan heart was not at ease, as he quickly got up and tailed it. After running for 10 minutes, he hid again.

Somewhere in the near distance, there was a level four to five mutated beast. At this point, it lowered its head and growled as if to warn. Apparently, it was irritated by something. Any mutated beast would be agitated, should they be disturbed while eating, especially with a blue light emitted onto its body. It was a top-rated predator with a fiery temper, which finally acted on its anger. It stopped eating and its whole body burned up. A bluish flame was pounding on its body like a glamorous glow.

Luo Yuan noticed that its terribly high temperature had dramatically distorted the air of its surroundings. The scene in front had been blurred, and most of the nearby plants had burned up as they could not endure such a high temperature.

The dark night instantly turned crimson red. However, the ball inside the flame did not seem to be affected by anything at all. Occasionally, it even went close to the blue flame on the mutated beast's body. That awfully high temperature seemed non-existent to that ball, as even the color on its surface did not change at all.

After a few seconds, the ball finished scanning the vicinity and began to fly away. The crystal on its head kept scanning its surroundings and completely ignored the raging mutated beast.

Before the ball could even manage to fly a few meters away, the

mutated beast suddenly moved. It did not have to take many steps to attack the ball. In just a second, it already extended its head and opened up its mouth to swallow the ball whole, right into its stomach. The whole process happened too fast; even Luo Yuan could barely see it with much clarity. He looked serious, and laid on the floor, without budging. He could not believe that such a highly-advanced, technological item would be wiped out so easily.

Perhaps this level seven mutated beast could chew this item until it was thoroughly crushed, but it was impossible to be digested in its stomach. Luo Yuan did not have to wait long, for within seconds, a white light burst out from the thick skin of that mutated beast. One of the beams shot towards a nearby rock, and turned it into red hot, flowing lava. Luo Yuan could vaguely predict that a more powerful energy was going to break out soon.

His face turned pale as he quickly crept back. After retreating for a few meters, he heard a loud explosion. A heat wave charged towards him and blew right into his hair. Luo Yuan looked upwards and saw that this powerful mutated beast had been torn into pieces, and looked extremely pitiful. Its original bright red color of flesh had now turned into charred remains. It was now dead.

Amidst the smoke, a spherical head floated upwards, and the transparent crystal ball still exuded a dim red light. It circled around the spot before flying off to another place.

He was now 100 percent sure that this item was certainly an object that hailed from outer space. No matter how pressured humans were, technology would not have achieved such an

advancement, let alone such a brutal one.

Watching the battle between the ball and the mutated beast and its self-defense, he could have easily chopped the ball into two with confidence. However, he did not plan to attack just yet.

He could not guarantee that this was the only intelligent robot, and there was no certainty on what the consequences were, after killing it. After all, even if science and technology on earth could already achieve real-time video streaming, there could possibly be an attack plunging down from outer space or even self-destruction, if he were to kill the ball.

Whether it was the self-defense of aliens or merely just a counter attack, he could not afford to take this gamble, as he knew nothing about extraterrestrial beings. When Luo Yuan thought of how the ball could easily destroy an area with a radius of 10 kilometers, he could not imagine how powerful they could be. His strength seemed to so inferior compared to such a destruction.

Luo Yuan continued to follow the ball stealthily. The ball's active zones were not huge; it only kept spinning around. At about four o'clock, the crystal suddenly abandoned its task and retreated inside the ball, when the arc concave opened up an entrance.

An invisible force spread towards the surroundings, and the grass nearby was instantly bent to the ground. The next moment, it flew up and broke through the dense forest in a flash. A large number of branches snapped and created a big hole of a three to four-meter radius in size. The ball instantly disappeared from his line of vision. Luo Yuan quickly ran out to the forest and looked up

towards the sky. The ball had now become a tiny dot, and very soon, it disappeared into the horizon.

# Chapter 354: The Strange Bone Mountain

---

Luo Yuan stood on the branches and looked up at the sky; his mind absent for a moment. There was nothing in the sky except for a few stars dotting the canvas. Everything he had seen tonight had a huge impact on his soul; it felt like it was all but a dream.

After quite a while, he snapped out of his reverie and walked back to the cave, numbed. Wang Shishi was still sleeping and snored a bit. Luo Yuan who did not sleep throughout the night did not feel the least bit sleepy. He lay beside Wang Shishi and sat on the bearskin with a blank mind. He thought he needed to be calmed down.

What was the purpose of these aliens coming to earth?

Was it purely a scientific and technological research, or were they ready to conquer the earth? Was it a strange, unwelcomed guest, or simply a foe? Was this remotely associated with the recent years of insane mutating of plants and animals? Everything was unbeknownst to him.

Luo Yuan was not sure whether the Reconstruction Area had an inkling of this force from the outside world, but it seemed very unlikely.

This place was more than 600 kilometers away, and it was completely under the mutated beasts' control. Human beings were restricted to enter this area, and even the robotic spy plane was rarely seen in this vicinity. In addition, this unknown outskirts

appeared to be well hidden; its active time was late at night, so chances of discovering it was rather slim. If Luo Yuan did not come all the way here to look for the wisdom tree, he would not have been aware of it either.

If it was a spacecraft that existed in space, it would be extremely difficult to find it in the vastness of the milky way. It could very well just be hidden behind the moon. Even with technology, humans would have barely discovered it. Not to mention that the power that was demonstrated by this external force was much stronger than that of the earth. This was akin to a radar during World War II put up a miserable fight with a stealth aircraft of today. Even if a spacecraft had appeared directly outside the atmosphere, it would not have possibly been discovered.

Today, the Reconstruction Area had been equipped with very powerful technology, and it assisted in improving the strength of humans. Although the population now was less than one tenth of the population before the apocalypse, the military force had been several times more powerful. In fact, the battle between the humans and the mutated beasts had arrived a stalemate. The situation was rather balanced, as the mutated beasts could not enter further into the Reconstruction Area, whilst the humans could not reclaim their lost homeland.

And now, there was one more unknown outsider appearing...

The more Luo Yuan thought, the more pessimistic he was. The future of humanity seemed to be even more uncertain.

...



The sky was getting brighter. Luo Yuan rubbed his face and exhaled deeply. With 17 points of Will, he soon controlled his negative emotions, no matter how bad his day was going.

"Brother Luo, you have awakened." Wang Shishi was awake, as she sat up and stretched her body.

"Yes. Let's eat something. After breakfast, we will need to depart," said Luo Yuan. He looked at Wang Shishi's innocent face. He felt that ignorance was bliss. At least she did not have to bear such a heavy burden.

There was still some food leftover from dinner last night, except for the barbecued meat, which had hardened like a stone by now. The worm eggs were still edible. After a simple breakfast, they adjourned once again.

The cool early morning was the most comfortable time of the day. At this time, the high temperature had dropped, and when the wind blew, it felt like all their pores were finally breathing. As it was foggy last night, the ground was a bit damp, and when they walked the forest, droplets of fresh dew dripped down from the leaves above.

However, before the water droplets fell to the ground, they were suspended by an invisible force in the air. After a day's worth of rest, Wang Shishi was now brimming with energy. Last night's fatigue had all been restored, and throughout their journey, she enjoyed playing with the water droplets with her power of control.

The air felt a little saltier, which meant the sea was not far from here. Half an hour later, they could see that the road was covered with moss and vines, but there were no traces of civilization at all.

The few meter-thick layers of dead leaves had covered everything up. Without referring to the coordinates on the map, it was hard to believe that this forest was Mushi County, which was once a city populated by more than 200,000, a few years ago.

Luo Yuan flew into the air to identify it again and continued to move forward.

Kidney Mountain was three to four kilometers away from Mushi County. It was neither populated nor had any sign of human habitation within the radius of a few kilometers. Before the apocalypse, there was only one dirt road that could lead to it. Today, the road was impossible to be seen, so he could only rely on his eyes to distinguish it.

On the map, Kidney Mountain simply could not be found. The name was created for one of the barely-seen hill peaks among this massive mountain range, and not a soul would have ever known about this, except for the locals.

Before the apocalypse, it was a deserted mountain with sparse greenery. However, it was now abundant with plants. The plants were all hundred meters in height and it would undoubtedly increase the complexities if one were to hunt for Kidney Mountain. The hill peaks were almost the same, so it was too good to be true

to find the mountain purely based on its name.

If he wanted to ever succeed in finding the mountain, he could only follow the waterfall.

Actually, it was no arduous task. With his sharp hearing ability, Luo Yuan had picked up the rumbling sound of the waterfall. But according to the ranger, the migration was six months ago, when the sea level had only just begun to rise. It was still an in an arid zone.

With the salty taste in the air, he could see that this place had already become coastal with its humid climate and abundant rainfall. Due to the gap between the mountains, there were numerous waterfalls nearby. Based on what he could sense, there were at least seven to eight waterfalls. Fortunately, he only needed a little time to do so.

Luo Yuan checked everywhere, and when he came to the fifth mountain with a waterfall, it was already close to noon. He took a look and was surprised. This mountain was not high, and the gap was about three or four meters. The weird thing was the shape of the mountainside, which was actually just a little hollow. If he were to remove the plants for clarity, it looked exactly like what the ranger called a 'Kidney Mountain'.

The waterfall cascaded from the bottom of the hill and was splashing down with immense force. It was a waterfall formed by an underground river. The amount of water was not abundant and the gap was not high, thus, it took Luo Yuan some time to find this waterfall as it was indiscernible.

Luo Yuan asked Wang Shishi to stay put. After all, it was not safe to go forward. It was at least a level six mutated beast which was able to scare the Hui clan away. Even if they had wanted to migrate somewhere else, it was still plausible if it were to be a level six mutated beast. However, if it was a giant level-seven mutated creature, a simple leap could easily cause widespread destruction. Should he ever chance upon this kind of creature, only then would he go all out to fight with them, and would simply neglect Wang Shishi.

He carried his Zhanmadao and departed again. The mountain terrain here was extremely steep. A few mutated vines were quietly spreading like a snake, attempting to eat Luo Yuan, but he chopped them all off.

Several huge piranha flowers were growing under the shade of the trees. They were all colorful with a sweet smell, but remains of bones were seen surrounding them. Somewhere not far away, there was a 100-meter-tall giant plant moving slowly. Every step it took, a thick root pulled out from the ground and probed back into the ground deeply, causing the ground to tremor slightly. On the trunk, there were cracks everywhere, and it looked like a face of an old man. With every single movement, its expression changed accordingly.

All the plants here have been humanized. Even for the rarely seen humanized tree, at least three would be found here.

Luo Yuan listened to the sound of the waterfall and accelerated his speed to move forward. After a few minutes, He hopped onto a

boulder and the waterfall was already in front of him. The terrain here was relatively flat, with oval stones of various sizes everywhere on the ground. The height of the waterfall was only 10 meters. The water fell into the pit, and eventually formed a 10-meter-wide river, flowing into the bottom, along with the pebbles.

The strange thing was that the plants here were quite sparse and relatively smaller in size. At first glance, he could only see a few scattered trees growing on this rocky beach. Apart from those, he could barely see anything, even vines and grass were also tough to find.

And there was a 50 to 60 meter-high quirky plant near the lake, clearly standing out in this low bush. The sarcoma-like lump of its spherical roots, the sparse foliage that looked greatly distorted, the trunk that resembled a wrung towel, and bearing fruit that looked like a baby skull, had clearly revealed its identity.

‘Wisdom Tree.’

Luo Yuan's eyes brightened, as he panted heavily.

This wisdom tree was apparently larger than the one he previously discovered, and its color was different. The trunk that he previously found was in yellow and purple, while this one was completely dark purple. Obviously, this wisdom tree was higher in grade than the previous one.

However, although he was anxious, he did not act rashly. He carefully looked around his surroundings. There was no sign of

any mutated beasts nearby, not even an insect or a bird tweeting. Everything just seemed unusual.

He carefully felt the air, and it seemed to have some suppression. Luo Yuan scowled.

He hesitated, tightened his grip onto the knife slowly, and moved forward. At the same time, he had expanded his Perception to its maximum limit, as he carefully searched the vicinity for movements. But alas, he did not sense anything uncanny. He stepped forward quickly, and his Perception had already covered the whole pool.

He thought that the mutated beast was inside the pool, but it was not.

The pool was not deep. Its diameter was only three or four meters and was less than 100 meters in height. There was no trace of any dark holes underneath. There was absolutely nothing except for a few several meters long of 'small fishes' in the water. In the apocalypse, creatures this size could only be referred to as a small fish.

Luo Yuan exhaled. It had seemed to be a false alarm. The mutated beasts here might have died or had been abandoned here. In this very cruel world, even the powerful mutated beasts might have faced accidental misfortune, should there be any carelessness.

The bones under the wisdom tree looked a tad bit strange, but he failed to notice that from afar. Every bone under the tree was very

large; one of the femora that lied on the ground measured up to ten meters long and five meters thick. The bones were even larger than the soul-eater mutated beast, and similarly sized bones were scattered everywhere on the ground.

It was still acceptable if there was only one or two, but it was everywhere. The bones piled up like a mountain, near the wisdom tree. The entire bone mountain was about four meters thick and occupied 10,000 square meters. Luo Yuan noticed that the skeletons underground had been disintegrated into powder. He did not know how many strong mutated beasts had been buried underneath.

His mind suddenly felt a little uneasy. The entire bone mountain would not have been caused by the Hui clan. Any one of the mutated beasts could easily extinguish the whole clan.

He could also vaguely smell a trace of blood. He gently sniffed around, and cautiously looked towards the bone mountain. His face suddenly turned pale. There were numerous translucent-like cocoon filaments growing from the trunk of wisdom tree, and it camouflaged the tree well.

The corpse was obviously quite fresh, indicating that the murder just happened not too long ago. It was most probably placed there only since yesterday.

His heart was getting heavy. This mutated beast did not go away yet but probably went somewhere else to hunt. Apparently, this was not a normal mutated beast, as it was capable of building a bone mountain with its own ability. It could pass off as a level

eight mutated beast.

He looked at the wisdom tree not too far away and hesitated for a moment. He then hopped over and stood next to the trunk without further delay, as he did not know when the scary mutated beast would return.

Luo Yuan brandished his Zhanmadao and chopped off the trunk with all his strength. Immediately, there was a burst and a banging sound ensued. With the fall of this giant tree, the trunk also started to tumble down fiercely.

A large number of bones were flying in the air. The fierce wind blew harshly, almost uprooting the nearby trees. Just like cold water being dripped into boiling oil, the bone mountain was churned up like a pot of thick porridge, paving a way to a series of explosive sounds like rolling thunder. Some of the smaller trunks were half a meter thick and some were even one meter thick. More than thousands of them were trembling fiercely and even engulfed the sky. The movement of the wisdom tree before it perished was even more violent than a level seven mutated beast.

As time passed Luo Yuan could only stand somewhere far away to wait patiently. The fruit of the wisdom tree was useless to him. The one thing that was useful to him was the Heart of Wisdom.

However, in order to form the Heart of Wisdom, many conditions have to be met. Only when the tree was fighting against brutal damage, most of the nutrition would shrink from the trunk to a core part in the body.



This was equivalent to having a seed waiting after a crisis. It would sprout again on the original plant by gathering the nutrients to be alive again. This was the survival skill of the wisdom tree.

But it would need to take some time. No matter how anxious Luo Yuan was, he could only wait patiently until the tree triggered this protective mechanism.

# Chapter 355: Escape

---

Half an hour had passed.

And then, it had clocked into an hour.

...

As time passed, Luo Yuan kept looking at the time. Somehow, there was a feeling of irritation pounding in his heart like a boulder slamming right onto it. The more time passed, the heavier the depression felt.

The wisdom tree had gradually stopped struggling. Its purple skin had periodically lost its luster, and at the same time, the trunk began to shrink, with falling yellow leaves. However, this process was very slow and Luo Yuan started to be impatient.

He looked around from time to time and occasionally looked up to the sky. He was well aware of how wrong this feeling was. This was somewhat a warning sign of danger, just like the erratic behavior of some animals before an earthquake, and Luo Yuan was far more sensitive to danger than animals were.

Only such irresistible danger could make him grow such strong emotions.

He tried to suppress such battles in his mind that drove him insane and waited patiently for a few minutes. He felt increasingly

strong palpitations and finally decided against waiting.

He took a few big steps and appeared next to the wisdom tree. At this time, the nutrition of the wisdom tree was still shrinking towards the Heart of Wisdom. However, Luo Yuan could not wait any longer, as he just wanted to leave as soon as he could.

He vaguely had a feeling that it would be too late if he did not leave.

Experiencing this before, he scanned through the tree once and was able to immediately identify the exact location of the Heart of Wisdom. He brandished his Zhanmadao and with just a few swipes, a big hole had been punctured. In front of him, it was the Heart of Wisdom which was as big as a human brain.

However, this Heart of Wisdom was only halfway formed. It had smooth skin and did not resemble the wrinkly features of a brain, and it was only half the size of the one he had found before.

He held the small semi-formed Heart of Wisdom and doubted if it would produce any effect.

Once he took off the Heart of Wisdom, he subconsciously looked up to the sky.

The landscape was vast, with sparse plants all around. He could directly see the sky from where he stood. The sky that was previously blank, was now full of clouds. These clouds were

stratus-like and resembled a gossamer, sometimes appearing and disappearing, as if countless of white ribbons in the sky crested endlessly.

These clouds soon began to change its color, as if it was dyed with a layer of rays and expanded rapidly. However, in a blink of an eye, all the clouds had disappeared as if they had never existed before. It seemed like there was an invisible force interfering with the planet. At the same time, a repressed atmosphere gradually enveloped the sky.

His face became pale. He did not dare to stay any longer and immediately walked out. He instantly reached his speed limit, one second before, he was still standing, and disappeared completely in the rocky beach, at the very next. He desperately rushed to sneak into the jungle.

The scene around him quickly passed; the wind that swept up to his face had immediately squeezed it into a distorted form. Some of the branches that had blocked him instantly disintegrated into ashes.

His speed had reached nearly 200 meters per second. Luo Yuan was completely unable to react to the massive data, with his 14 points of Intelligence. He could only avoid a few huge trees but collided into those branches haphazardly.

The combat costume had shattered into pieces and was flung into the air, while his skin that was as tough as a green level mutated beast, had been badly scratched until he bled.

"Roarrrrrr!"

He heard a loud muffled noise from the back as if it was just beside his ear. Luo Yuan's eardrum had almost exploded by the roar. He could hear the anger brimming from the roar.

At the same time, an unimaginably horrible atmosphere gradually enveloped this space. Under this pressure, he was not able to resist anymore.

It was just ten seconds from the time he escaped until he heard the roars. Even the thought itself was frightening as it is.

He bit his lips and hastened his speed even more. His heartbeat was drumming fast, the energy inside his heart gradually flowed through his body in his bloodstream and turned into a greater power to support his intense exercise.

However, in just one second, Luo Yuan suddenly turned stiff and his scalp was fried. An incomparable atmosphere of repression came from the top of his head. He quickly glanced upwards while running, and he saw the sky greatly twisted through the gap between the leaves and branches.

Cold sweat trickled down his forehead quickly, but it was soon evaporated by the wind blowing against him.

No! He should not just run like that. No matter where he went,

he would leave his breath where he was. This superpower mutated beast could definitely track his breath no matter where he was. As he was already noticed, he could not escape from this mutated beast, no matter how fast he ran.

He had to find a way.

Although Luo Yuan's mind was full of fear, he still struggled to remain calm.

Suddenly, a river appeared in front of him. Today, it was a place with a humid coastal climate and abundant rainfall. There were rivers everywhere. He suddenly had an idea! In just a few seconds, he jumped into the river.

He dove into the water and swam desperately. With his powerful dexterity, he was akin to a sword that shot directly to the bottom of the river. His speed was even several times faster than that of an average fish.

This river was small, about 50 to 60 meters wide, and about three meters deep. Such drastic actions almost stirred the river into the mud.

Five or six seconds later, he drilled his body deep into the silt of the river and did not move. He held his breath, stopping his heartbeat. He closed his eyes and quietly listened to the movements above.

The dirt inside had slowly flown downstream with the flow of the water, and soon, the river became crystal clear again.

As time passed, the frightening atmosphere lingered on, as though still in search for him.

Suddenly, he heard a loud noise; Luo Yuan shuddered. The gentle waves of the water suddenly splashed violently onto his body. His chest was congested, causing him to almost spew blood, but he was able to forcibly swallow it back down.

Before Luo Yuan could be relieved from this, there were a few more loud noises heard. One of them was only 50 to 60 meters away from Luo Yuan. His was bleeding from his nose and mouth and felt that his internal organs were failing him.

Luo Yuan was not weak, but when the air encountered a severe expansion, it could bring about a huge impact. It was just the same underwater – the impact was even stronger, with a greater force. It was similar to a deep-water bomb attacking a submarine, even if it did not hit its target, it could make the submarine shatter and sink by a mere explosion, within 100 meters.

His whole body was in pain, but he did not dare to move. As it probably did not find anything, the menacing breath was soon dissipated off, along with a roar.

Luo Yuan did not surface out, but waited and continued to bury his body in the sand without moving. His amazing lung capacity could sustain him even if he did not breathe for four to five hours.

This mutated beast was no ordinary beast. For it to be intelligent enough to grow a wisdom tree, it was almost no different from a human.

As per his prediction, that such an atmosphere suddenly appeared again after a short while, but this time, it just stopped for a moment and left quickly.

Luo Yuan kept going for as long as half an hour. He carefully climbed out from the water after he was certain that the offending breath did not appear again. Once his heartbeat was restored, he finally vomited the blood out, and little pieces of meat came out with it. It was apparently part of the broken internal organs.

Luo Yuan looked at it and did not feel a thing. Such an injury was brutal to a normal human but was regarded as such a small matter to him. By the time he stood up, the broken internal organs had already self-healed and stopped bleeding. His injury was self-healed quickly, and he did not even have to use any Will.

He was not able to stay here for long. It was just ten kilometers away from the mutated beast's lair. He did not care much about his injury but continued to run after being simply healed for a while now.



# Chapter 356: Confidence

---

He was just about to move, but in less than a second, he spewed blood once more. His healed wound was now broken again. However, he did not stop, but continued to vomit blood while he was running.

After more than ten seconds, he managed to stop purging. He looked a little better, and could now run faster.

After a few minutes, he had already ran 30 - 40 kilometers away. Luo Yuan felt relieved as he did not see the giant mutated beast chasing after him anymore. He slowly decelerated; the stress given by the giant mutated beast was beyond imagination. He would have died if he did not jump into the river earlier.

It was definitely the biggest enemy of the Reconstruction Area. A nuclear bomb would be the only solution to kill the level eight mutated beast – it was way stronger than what he could imagine.

He already ran away even before he could see the mutated beast. Luo Yuan was deprecating himself in his mind.

He did not have the interest to see the mutated beast as well. He would not want to see it for an eternity if he had the choice.

He looked at the Heart of Wisdom in his palm. It had cracked as it has been squashed by the water pressure. Luckily, the content was not in a liquid form, but a gel-like of substance. Otherwise, all his effort would be wasted.

He did not rush to meet Wang Shishi as the giant mutated beast would come anytime soon. To risk getting her into trouble was the last thing he wanted.

His armor has been tattered, but the synthetic suit was still perfectly fine. He took off a few of his clothes and scattered them in different locations. At least, when the giant mutated beast found the place by following the scent of the clothes, it could be distracted for a while and it might buy him enough time to escape.

After that, he floated into the air and traveled via the sky. It was easier for his scent to disappear as the air had better circulation in the sky, as compared to the ground. After flying for a few kilometers, Luo Yuan finally found a small cave to hide.

The cave was really small and it was just nice to him. He made sure it was safe before taking out the ‘heart of wisdom’.

"Premature Heart of Wisdom"

"Rarity: Dark Green"

"Weight: 50 grams"

"Element: Wisdom form of object"

"Additional Abilities: Intelligence +1, low probability of special mutation."

"Comment: This is a rare heart of the Wisdom Tree. It is rich in the essence of the entire wisdom tree and it is very valuable. It can stimulate the brain and increase intelligence when you consume it. It is very effective for people with an intelligence point of 16 or below, due to its premature form."

"What a waste!" Luo Yuan sighed as he felt lucky but sad as well. The Heart of Wisdom was a high-quality treasure. Unfortunately, it was plucked at a premature stage, otherwise, he could have increased two to three points of his intelligence.

However, based on the situation at that moment, he might not be able to sit here, if he decided to wait for a little longer.

The Heart of Wisdom had also produced a scent, which was attractive to the giant beast. It was quite dangerous to keep them in his hand; he should eat it as soon as possible. Besides, Intelligence was not the main priority. It was different from those physical properties which takes time to adapt. It was not similar to upgrading the Strength and Agility which his power would decline in a short time, and the fighting power will shoot up instantly.

It was definitely a rare treasure when he was in danger.

He decided not to overthink and stuffed the Heart of Wisdom into his mouth. He chewed it and swallowed. It was sour. He

waited for a while and began to feel an itch on his scalp. He had blurry vision, but he was calm as he had a similar experience before.

After that, he had lost control over his abilities to hear, smell, taste, and sense. There was too much information in his brain, and his body was numb. A certain paralysis may have struck him.

In the end, the brain was not able to accept any of the information, and he could not feel anything. Time meant nothing to him, and he even lost the ability to think.

After a while, he slowly recovered. He could sense light, as he heard the sound, and he could smell again.

He was like returning from hell. He took a deep breath, as he was still in fear. Although he had experienced it before, he really treasured the fact that he survived. He got up again and felt the world has changed.

Just like the rain after a long drought, everything seemed to be livelier.

His ears were filled with a lot of noises and his nose seemed to be able to smell the fragrance from miles away. His eyes could see everything in a clearer way - he had become more sensitive! Apparently, the senses could be improved if the intelligence increased.

It was akin to a computer hardware, and its processing software. No matter how many accessories you have, it would not perform well if the operating system was bad in the worst place. It was similar to the human body. Although he was physically strong, he could not manifest it.

He must hear it carefully if he wanted to hear something very softly. He had to focus hard if he wanted to trace the smell the soft scent.

But now, he needed to do it stealthily. He could easily organize all the information systematically. Unlike the Superman comics, he suffered from insomnia when he turned on his super hearing mode. Apparently, his Intelligence level was too low and it led to a property imbalance, which was the reason he could not process the information.

Of course, the points he had in his Intelligence was still far from his Physique. Therefore, there was still much power locked up in his mind, waiting to be discovered.

He blinked his eyes as his mind became extremely clear. As he moved his vision, plenty of information crept into his mind and it instantly organized itself. He looked confident and charming; his eyes were glowing with wisdom as he felt everything was in control. At that moment, he did not even think the giant beast was dangerous anymore.

He was super confident.

He opened up the strap covering his forehead.

"Boom!"

A lot of information from the his four dimensional-vision gushed into his head.

His heart felt the shock and his brain stopped for a second. His body trembled, as had he closed his eyes and slowly opened again. However, the charm in his eyes has faded, he transformed back to normal from a godlike state.

He smiled sheepishly, as he realized that it was just an illusion.

In the end, he survived anyway. The effect of his Intelligence upgrade has been complemented by the insufficient information from the four-dimensional vision.

# Chapter 357: Return To The Reconstruction Area

---

Luo Yuan put on the strap once again and he felt much better. His vision had cleared and his hearing was restored.

His mind was racing as he recalled what had happened. He felt he made the right decision to reduce the side effect of the four-dimensional vision by upgrading his intelligence. However. It was insufficient. He needed more of the Heart of Wisdom as the green level Heart of Wisdom could only help to upgrade Intelligence attributes below 16 points and Luo Yuan's Intelligence was still at 15 points.

However, it was not easy to find the Wisdom Tree as it required accurate information as well as a stroke of good luck.

Fortunately, the 2% of the side effects from the four-dimensional vision was not a burden to him anymore. Besides that, he was wearing the strap to cover his forehead, therefore, the four-dimensional information could hardly affect him now.

He still had time!

Luo Yuan stayed in the cave for 10 more minutes to analyze the situation. The giant beast had stopped attacking and it seemed to have abandoned its search for him. He left the cave and carefully picked up his clothes and equipment one by one.

The energy-absorbing bulletproof jacket was still fine, but he decides he would never give up the plasma-underwear as it could provide a good defense and most importantly, the strap on his forehead was made from the same material as the plasma-underwear. He could still cut part of the underwear to cover his forehead if he loses the strap.

Unfortunately, the floating sportswear he had since the beginning of the apocalypse had served its use and had officially resigned due to wear and tear. The blue level sportswear has been scratched by the branches when he ran rapidly. In its condition, it looked the same as clothes worn by a beggar.

Luo Yuan sighed and threw the sportswear on the ground. He pondered his condition and then put on the partially torn sports pants as he was only left with an underwear covering the lower part of the body.

He put on all his suits and left the place. He immediately floated in the air as he gathered his Will. He flew in the direction to the place where Wang Shishi was waiting but upon his descent, he saw that Wang Shishi had left. He finally tracked her down after searching for her around the area.

She was hiding behind a huge rock. She was trembling and afraid to move. She almost collapsed when she saw Luo Yuan.

"It's alright... Everything is fine now, let's go!" Luo Yuan said and tried to comfort her.



The Kidney Mountain was not that big and they stood at the base of the mountain. Wang Shishi definitely saw the giant beast when it appeared. It was normal for her to be frightened as Luo Yuan almost collapsed as well when he saw the natural phenomena triggered by the monstrous beast. Besides that, he was away for a few hours and Wang Shishi did not know whether he was still alive or dead. If it was someone else, she would have ran for her life.

"Are... Are you alright?" Wang Shishi struggled to push him back and then checked Luo Yuan for injuries with a pair of teary eyes.

At the moment, Luo Yuan's pants had become shorts and his jacket was gone. There were also some blood stains on his bulletproof jacket and his hair was caked with mud. As she looked at him, she was wondering whether that was the Brother Luo who she used to know.

"Look, I'm perfectly fine." Luo Yuan smiled and said as he thumped his chest like an ape. He winced and coughed a little almost immediately when he pounded a little too hard. He realized he most probably had not fully recovered from the injuries.

"We can talk along the way. It is still very dangerous, we need to leave now." Luo Yuan interrupted Wang Shishi as he knew she had more questions to ask.

Wang Shishi was frightened and could not remember what she wanted to ask. She just nodded, and they were on their way.

...

Both of them moved as fast as they could to leave the danger behind them. They did not rest until night fall.

When they were a comfortable 200-300 km away from the Kidney Mountain, they finally felt relieved of their worry and in need of rest.

The forest was in complete darkness that night. Both of them had their dinner beside a bonfire while they talked.

"I couldn't see it clearly. It looked like a dragon with claws, but it did not have horns. Its claws were big and strong and its entire body was colorful. It was flying towards me!. I was too afraid and ran away without turning back!" Wang Shishi said, still in fear when she talked about it. Her body was trembling and her voice was weak and shaky.

Luo Yuan remained silent. He poked the bonfire with a dry branch, which caused some sparks to rise into the darkness around them.

It did not matter to him that the dragon was an extremely powerful mutated beast reigning supreme during the time of the apocalypse. He would not worship it even though the humans said that they were the heirs of the dragons. The only thing he cared was obtaining the power of the dragon.

Luo Yuan got up and threw the branch to the ground. The mutated beasts which were lingering nearby immediately scuttled

away in fear.

"Get some sleep. We will need to continue our journey at 4 a.m. tomorrow." Luo Yuan said.

They remained silent for the entire night. Finally, after they trekked from early in the morning, they arrived at the reconstruction area at noon.

The huge thermal power station in the east of Hope City had been officially opened and in operation for the last two days. There were a large number of huge chimneys releasing a lot of smoke into the air, tainting the sky black with soot.

Luo Yuan breathed in the pungent odors and exhaled. He actually missed the scent!

The reconstruction region was lacking uranium which it usually reserved for nuclear weapons. Therefore, there were not many nuclear power plants in the city. However, there were many thermal power stations in the city as it was rich in forestry resources which fortunately managed to reduce the operating cost of the thermal power stations by a significant amount.

Both of them quickened their steps and finally arrived at home after a few minutes.

Huang Jiahui and Zhao Yali had not left the house. They were overjoyed and relieved when they saw Luo Yuan and Wang Shishi

had returned safely. They were worried and had insomnia, fearful for what had happened to the two of them.

Luo Yuan was the backbone of the family. It would be disastrous to them if something bad happened to him as they would lose their minds without him. Before they came home, Luo Yuan warned Wang Shishi not to mention a single word regarding the danger they encountered at the mountain. Four of them had a lovely dinner together and Luo Yuan went out again after changing into some clean clothes.

What they had encountered earlier was really crucial as they had discovered the existence of an extraterrestrial civilization which could affect the safety of the reconstruction area. The strength and destructive nature of the level eight mutated beast were not that important anymore compared to the aliens.

No matter what, he was a member of the human race and he could not neglect the issues especially since his home and loved ones were living in the reconstruction region.

Luo Yuan walked to the headquarters. He marched to the Military Manager's office and opened the door after knocking for a few times.

## Chapter 358: New Capital City

---

The office manager, Chen Xinjie seemed unnoticeable in the ranks of the sword unit. She was hardly evident along side the likes of the mighty Lin Feiyan, and Luo Yuan, who cared about their jobs and nothing more. With such an indistinctive personality, even an ordinary team member could have ordered her to work, and she would simply obey.

The beautiful young lady looked like a housekeeper as she served the members of the Sword Unit. However, her meek and simple demeanor was not to be misunderstood for weakness. With her knowledge and prowess for political gameplay, one could easily tell that this highly-rank lady who seemed ordinary was handling all the back-end jobs as an undercover agent.

She was meant to compile reports on the state of minds and personal political inclinations of every member of the sword unit, as well as any kind of information that would be useful to an interested party.

Without a doubt, she worked with a sense of propriety and her feminine attitude made her seem innocent to all the members of the unit.

"Vice-captain, it has been so long since I last saw you. How can I help you today?" Chen Xinjie said with a smile after she opened the door.

She had a pair of crescent moon eyes and looked adorable when

she smiled but Luo Yuan had no interest in her smile right now. He noticed she turned her back to him and seemed like she was going to prepare some tea. Luo Yuan quickly stopped her by saying, "Don't trouble yourself, I'm just here to tell you some important information."

Chen Xinjie was stunned for a second when she noticed that Luo Yuan had a serious expression on his face. She realized that it was, in fact, a crucial matter. She kept her smile and walked towards the door and locked it. She then asked, "Vice-Captain, please have a seat first. What's the matter?"

Luo Yuan straightaway told her the incident whereby he discovered the artificial intelligence robot from the extraterrestrial civilization the day before yesterday. He told her every detail including the time and location of the discovery.

Apparently, people from different levels have different perspectives of what is said to them. If this information came from an ordinary citizen, and even if Chen Xinjie did not treat it like a joke, she would have barely paid much attention to the matter unless more evidence was provided.

But Luo Yuan was a super evolved human and the vice-captain. She knew he spoke of only crucial happenings all this while, and he had no history mental disabilities or illness. His words were influential and it seemed impossible for him to be joking with a matter like this.

"Vice-captain, are you sure about this? You can't possibly be serious." Chen Xinjie said with a stiff smile.

Luo Yuan knew that she did not doubt him but was only in shock of what she heard. If it had been anyone else, they would have thought he was mad. Luo Yuan looked her in the eyes and nodded.

Chen Xinjie exhaled a breath with a heavy heart, "Vice-captain, you are not allowed to speak of this matter outside these walls. This is a matter of great importance and you might need to depart to the new capital city immediately to report to the higher authorities."

Luo Yuan nodded as he had expected the order.

Chen Xinjie picked up the phone in front of her, and hesitated for a second before she dialed a number. By the time she hung up the phone after a few minutes, her forehead was already covered with sweat and she looked exhausted.

After taking a breather, she then called to the train station for ticket reservations.

"We'll catch the next train and leave immediately."

...

They both hurried to the train station.

Compared to the Desert City's underground train station, the

underground train station of Hope City was much larger. Especially with the nearby freight station which was as big as a few football fields, there where thousands of containers piled up like mountains on each side.

Nowadays, the sea shipping routes had been stopped while road transportation was also only limited to some short-haul deliveries. The most reliable form of transportation was not the underground railroad. Being one of the main cities of the reconstruction area the amount of deliveries taking place here were unimaginable.

Nonetheless, compared to the busy cargo transportation site, the giant waiting hall seemed quite empty with only 20 to 30 sharply dressed business-looking people. The number of people in this small city before the apocalypse could not have been more than the people he had seen just on his way in.

The reason for building such a gigantic hall was simply because of hope that there might come a time when the hall would be filled once the global situation improved in the future. From what he saw, it also functioned as a point for gathering and transporting troops for battle.

Luo Yuan studied his surroundings for a moment and was pessimistic to what he saw. He had no idea how long this false sense of safety could last.

...

They only waited for a short while before the train arrived. Both



sat down in the compartment and both gathered their thoughts in silence.

Luo Yuan laid back in his seat and closed his eyes.

What happened these few days had really exhausted him, physically and mentally. He really thought he had already recovered from his injuries, but it did not seem like it. What he had seen the other day still made him uncomfortable. He was heavily burdened by the reality of from extraterrestrial civilization. Albeit a positive mindset, one still would have been deeply affected. That was not something that could be easily put aside by self-consolation or pretending that nothing had happened.

But after he had spoken of his worry deeply buried in his heart to someone else, he felt relieved that someone from the upper management would be able to help in this situation. Some might consider that too as another form of self-consolation. In fact, even people from the reconstruction area were not able to do much in this situation as the extraterrestrial civilization was much more advance in terms of technology as compared to them. With just minimal effort, they could easily destroy the reconstruction area.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan felt a light touch on his arm and was startled awake. Realizing it was just Chen Xinjie clutching his hand, he calmed down but then noticed her body was trembling.

Luo Yuan looked at her and sighed. He held her hand back even more firmly to try and ease her worry. Even he was fretful when facing this situation, and he could not imagine how she felt as she was just an ordinary human being. That was the reason he did not

tell this to Huang Jiahui and others was because he did not want them to take on the unbearable burden of such knowledge.

Chen Xinjie did not speak and remained silent with her head down throughout the journey.

They reached their destination after two hours. They walked out of the train station together with the other passengers, and instantly, a strong unpleasant odor greeted them. Luo Yuan frowned as he raised his head and looked around.

They were really shocked by the scene of the New Capital City.

The entire New Capital City stood in the center of two majestic pillars and each pillar was about 300 to 400 meters high. The cement was of a misty-grey design. They could not even tell if they were natural or artificially made.

This New Capital City seemed to have no other ways in or out except for some narrow passages in the gorge on both sides of the hills.

It was no wonder at that time why the upper management abandoned Hope City and made this fortress the new capital of the country. By having cliffs and precipices on both sides, that place was the perfect point to defend the nation. One man could easily hold out against thousands of enemies!

Looking at the stunning scenery, Luo Yuan was finally able to

clear off some of the dread in his heart.

However, the air circulation was very bad due to that geographical arrangement. The air in Hope City was considered extremely fresh if compared to the polluted air that surrounded them.

The area was covered by a thick fog and they were not able to see the sky.

There were also an abundant amount industrial buildings which released huge amounts of poisonous smog into the atmosphere. A strong, pungent odor hung in the air. If they were to stay here at a time before the apocalypse, they might not have survived a year.

There was already a small car waiting outside.

The car originated from the time before the apocalypse but Luo Yuan knew these cars were already out of production. These cars were replaced by heavy trucks and armored vehicles nowadays. Thus, asides from some government cars, such cars were hardly seen on the streets.

A big guy in a military uniform came out from the driver's seat. He proceeded to open the rear door and saluted respectfully when he saw both Luo Yuan and Chen Xinjie came out. "Captain Luo, Director Chen. The Second Chief Minister is expecting you. This way, please."

# Chapter 359: Inquiry

---

Right after they got into the car, the driver immediately took off.

The streets were empty and there was not a single person around. The scenery around them flashed by as the car sped through the streets. They passed rows of factories along the way.

Chen Xinjie sat beside Luo Yuan, not moving a muscle. Her body was tense and she clenched her fists till her knuckles were white. Apparently, she was nervous as her veins were showing under the fair skin of her hands. The second Chief Minister was a very powerful person. It was nerve-wrecking for her to see him as she was just a lowly, unimportant government servant.

On the other hand, Luo Yuan was calm and still managed to remain cool. He kept his emotions in check so that Chen Xinjie would not freak out.

The car stopped in front of a small, shabby looking building. They would not have noticed it if they did not see the signboards and the troop of soldiers who were patrolling with the tanks.

Both of them got out of the car and followed the driver into the building. As he noticed the tense attitude and the stony expressions of the soldiers in the building, he surrendered his weapons willingly to not further alarm them. The soldiers also thoroughly checked him and Chen Xinjin for weapons. Luo Yuan submitted to their security procedures and remained calm because if the need were to arise, he could kill them even without a

weapon. As he entered the building, he realized the small building was just an entrance, the real destination was hidden underground.

They took the elevator down and then entered a maze of corridors that made many turns within the building. Fortunately, Luo Yuan had a very good memory, otherwise, he might not be able to find his way out. After about 10 minutes, they arrived at the doorstep of a meeting room.

One of the soldiers held the door open for them. However, he only allowed Luo Yuan into the meeting room and stopped Chen Xinjie, informing them that she had to remain outside. A look of relief spread across her face as she felt the fear of being interrogated by her superiors vanish off her shoulders.

There were many people waiting in the meeting room. Everyone stared at Luo Yuan as he entered the room. Mixed emotions greeted him as he sensed fear, anger, and anxiousness in all the eyes that looked at him. The atmosphere was very serious and stressed. Luo Yuan avoided eye contact and walked into the meeting room.

"Thank you for coming, Captain Luo. We had to meet you in person as the information you provided is top secret. We had to handle it very carefully. I hope you can answer our questions as best you can." The second Chief Minister said with what looked like a weary, exhausted expression.

Luo Yuan nodded in response, maintaining a stony expression.

"Please proceed to the rostrum begin. May I remind you, this meeting is listed as a highly classified file, I hope you are aware of the policies like to keep it confidential." Luo Yuan got up as he spoke and then slowly walked towards the podium.

Luo Yuan stood at the rostrum, took a deep breath and said, "I never imagined I'd have the opportunity to address all of you here today. As a member of the human race, it is my responsibility to inform you of the dangers that I have witnessed"

"The incident happened a few days ago. I was in the midst of executing a mission. At that time, I was taking a short break around 600 km away from the reconstruction area after part of the long journey I on. The location was (X:\*\*; Y\*\*)."

I was resting in a cave nearby when I saw a beam of blue light flashed outside around 1 a.m. I decided to take a look. Hence, I followed..."

The meeting room immediately became chaotic right after Luo Yuan finished narrating the incident.

"Captain Luo, are you sure it wasn't a human controlling the robot? It could have been an Arab militant, by the sound of your description?" A scientist with a full head of white hair spoke while pointing his finger at him.

"No." Luo Yuan said and shook his head.

"But you mentioned that you were three to four kilometers away, do you think there is a chance you could have been mistaken?" He continued to ask.

"I have excellent eyesight." Luo Yuan said calmly.

Before the scientist could continue, another old man in the crowd interrupted him, "We have been interacting with many other labs from different human parties, and even they agree that it is impossible for them to achieve this kind of technology at this time. Can you estimate the temperature of the flame produced by the mutated beast."

"I can't identify it but there is something you can consider as a reference to answer your question. After the mutated beast shot out its flame, all the trees within 10 meters were set on fire." Luo Yuan said.

"I have calculated it. The temperature was around 10,000-20,000 degree Celsius. It was such a high temperature but the color of the metal on the robot did not even change! There is no such material in the reconstruction area, or any other human civilization for that matter," another scientist said right after Luo Yuan finished talking.

Luo Yuan looked at the scientist with a surprised look on his face. The guy looked like he was not more than 20 years old. He looked like that brightest amongst the older scientists with their white hair and bald heads. Besides that, he was very good at mental

arithmetics. He must have been some kind of a rare evolved human with super intelligence as his core evolved elements.

The young man continued to ask, "Captain Luo, can I ask you a question related to kinetic energy? Based on your description, the robot could have had an antigravity engine. When it left the earth, the turbo would have been moving. Could you recall what color the flame was?"

Luo Yuan remained silent for a moment as he recalled the scene. The robot was flying too fast at the time, and he could not see the flame clearly. However, he had a very good memory and he was able to reassemble the scene and replay it over and over in his head for clarity. He pondered it and said, "I think it was red, but a very light red."

"Helium plasma is possibly that color! That should be nuclear fusion kinetic energy. However, such a mini nuclear fusion is mindblowing! That would mean....the extraterrestrial civilization is way beyond our reach and sits at a technological gap of approximately 100-150 years ahead of us," the young scientist quipped as his admiration quickly turned to horror in just a few seconds.

Right after he finished his speculation, the second Chief Minister and the think tank felt relieved and asked, "With knowledge of their technology, does that mean it is possible for us to plan counterattack measures against them?"

"We can't say. Since the industrial revolution, the development of technology has improved drastically. 10 years ago, knowledge



matured as fast as one major breakthrough every 20 years. Five years ago, it increased to one thought every 10 years. As recent as within two years of the Apocalypse, the speed of knowledge's growth had become faster than that too."

"During the First World War a century ago, a missile hunter could attack ships from 1000 km away, as long as it had sufficient firepower. In the process of developing the technology, the 100 years of that followed brought forward a major difference compared to the century before that. With that said, we are not able to prepare any counter attack measures against a force like that in the time we have. All we can do is pray that the aliens don't intend to attack us," an old scientist explained with grief in his tone.

The atmosphere looked exceedingly depressed. The meeting room was filled with a sense of hopelessness. Any effort would be a waste of time and resources when the gap of ability differed so drastically.

...

The meeting was dismissed after three hours. Some of the people left while a few others remained seated. The discovery of the extraterrestrial civilization was too critical, and the meeting earlier had only been about the inquiries. There was no solution proposed and many more meetings to come later on. However, Luo Yuan had done his part. He walked out the meeting room and exhaled with relief.

The atmosphere was too tense in the meeting room, even Luo

Yuan could not stand it anymore.

"The meeting ended?" Chen Xinjie asked immediately as she saw Luo Yuan come out of the meeting room

When Luo Yuan was about to answer her, one of the assistants who worked for the second Chief Minister rushed out after him and said, "I'm sorry, Captain Luo. You're not allowed to leave New Capital City in the next two days as the upper management might need your help with whatever questions they might have. I've reserved accommodation for the both of you. Let me show you to your rooms."

# Chapter 360: Hotel

---

The original meeting room had been used for another meeting an hour later after Luo Yuan left. However, the number of people involved had doubled up due to the additional psychologists, micro-expression experts, criminal investigation experts as well as the international policy analysis specialists who had not contributed much since the apocalypse. They mainly analyzed the relationships between countries, but now they needed to analyze the relationship between mankind and alien species.

The video of Luo Yuan describing the incident was played repeatedly on a big screen. Everyone kept watching for a few times and the conference room was very quiet as everyone was stressed.

The second Chief Minister sat near to the rostrum. He took a document which was prepared by the experts from different industries, made some notes and said after pondering, "The first question is, how reliable could this incident be?"

As one of the leaders of the country, he could not trust someone blindly, especially on such a large scale incident. This was because every single decision could affect the future of mankind and he needed to be extremely careful.

"I can't tell. So far there is no evidence to prove it and none of the other human parties have any relevant information as well. Of course, we can't deny that we may have overlooked some of the important messages."

"Captain Luo did not seem to be nervous, his eyes and breathing rhythm were all normal..."

...

"We couldn't find any intention of lying as well as any flaws in his description of the incident"

"I have a document about him. The comments on his character is that he slacks off in military inclination but is a responsible person. Arrogant but courteous to others. As for comments on how safe he was - Relatively safe."

"Personal thoughts - Patriotic and disciplined, a recognized leader of the reconstruction area. Comment from the organization - Possible to recruit."

"Personal life condition - Lives together with many women and also has close relationships with a few ladies. There are some imperfect characteristics."

"At least, we can see from the documents, most of the comments were good except those on his personal life."

"The second question. If this extraterrestrial civilization is real, what's their objective? And also... what does it have to do with the changes of the flora and fauna in the recent years?" The second Chief Minister massaged his head and asked.

...

At the moment, Luo Yuan and Chen Xinjie have only just arrived at the only hotel in the New Capital City. At the same time, it was also the appointed accommodation for people who came to the capital for the purpose of government work, The New Capital City Hotel.

"Actually you could've gone home earlier. It's not that late now, you can still arrive home before the sunset if you take the train. In fact, this is none of your business, I can help you to explain if they have any questions for you." Luo Yuan said as he opened the door to the room. Perhaps, there were limited rooms or for some other reason, the staff has only reserved a room for them to share.

Although there were two beds in the room, it was not really appropriate for a man and a woman to stay together alone in the room as she might already have a family based on her age.

"It was not a good plan, I need to use the washroom." Chen Xinjie shook her head and whispered. She looked weird, but he had no idea what was in her mind.

She turned around and walked into the bathroom while her buttocks swayed gently. Both of them were in the room alone where it was easy to get seduced physically and mentally. Luo Yuan quickly moved his gaze away after taking a glance. He scolded himself silently as he was still depressed on the way to the hotel but now he was thinking about sex!

Suddenly, he heard the sound of the shower turning on. Luo Yuan pondered before he decided to take a walk at the corridor. Chen Xinjie spoke just as he was about to open the door.

"Vice-Captain, could you please pass my bag to me?"

"Alright!" Luo Yuan looked around the room and realized her bag was on the bed. The material of the bag was similar to armor. Apparently, she made it by herself but the sewing was fantastic and it looked quite fashionable.

Luo Yuan took the bag and walked towards the bathroom. The door opened with a small gap and fair arms stretched out from the bathroom with foam that covered her skin. Unfortunately, unlike bathrooms made of glass before the apocalypse, the thick wooden door blocked all the possible peeping spots. Luo Yuan could not see anything clearly even though he had very good eyesight.

What was wrong with him? Luo Yuan shook his head to calm himself and then quickly passed the bag to Chen Xinjie.

Since his Physique and Strength was upgraded, he felt he had lost control over his desires. He got aroused very easily even if the two women in his house just seduced him a little. He hardly skipped a day. Fortunately, there were a few women staying with him to share the burden.

He knew it was a normal reaction as his hormone production was higher than regular people due to his strong and active body. Therefore, his sexual desire was relatively higher compared to the

time when his Physique was only 14-points. However, it was more difficult for his Will to control his body as his Physique had increased to 17-points.

In conclusion, it was because of the imbalance of his properties. However, it was not very serious at the moment.

Luo Yuan did not dare to stay in the room anymore. He quickly went down to the lobby to get a packet of cigarettes. After making the payment, he quickly took out a cigarette and lit it up. He gradually calmed down with the help of the cigarette smoke.

He realized, he could not live the way he used to be as the reconstruction area might not be safe anymore. He had to think a way to solve it because he could not imagine the tragedy if...

He must become stronger!

Perhaps, he may not be able to save everyone but at the very least, he had to be able to protect the people around him.

Currently, there was one unassigned property point as he had no time to assign and it took awhile for him to adapt. He had to assign it when he returned.

By that time, even level eight mutated beasts could not threaten him any more. While the aliens from the extraterrestrial civilization... He was not afraid if only the robot he saw last time attacked. However, the thought of thousands of the robots

attacking regionally at the same time sent a chill down his spine.

The cigarette burnt off and Luo Yuan lit another one. Cigarettes after the apocalypse were very powerful and it consisted of certain drugs. However, it had no impact on Luo Yuan as his Physique was way stronger than regular humans.

He finished half packet of his cigarettes and realized an hour has passed. Chen Xinjie should have finished bathing, he thought. He threw away the cigarette box.

Luo Yuan entered the hotel room again but did not see Chen Xinjie. The door of the bathroom was left open but no one was there. Luo Yuan did not really get worried as they were in New Capital City which had strict laws. Besides, almost all the guests were senior government servants or were from the upper management. He thought, it should be safe.



# Chapter 361: It Was All Planned

---

Luo Yuan sat by the bed for a while. Soon, Chen Xinjie's voice came from the corridor.

"Thank you for sending me back."

"Don't worry about it. It's my pleasure. How can I keep in contact with you?"

"I'm sorry but I will be leaving the New Capital City soon. We'll meet again if fate permits." It was obvious that Chen Xinjie did not want to offend this unknown man and was trying to reject him politely.

"Sorry if I'm being too forward. I'm staying here for the next few days... perhaps we could meet again?" The man did not seem to give up yet.

Luo Yuan frowned and opened the door. He glanced at the man, looked at Chen Xinjie, and said, "Do you need any help?"

He was a middle-aged man dressed neatly and his eyes were radiating with confidence. He appeared to be a real gentleman - the type which most women would easily fall in love with.

Looking at Luo Yuan, the man let out an embarrassed laugh and said, "It's a misunderstanding, sorry to bother the both of you!"

He left right away.

Luo Yuan looked at him and did not think further.

Chen Xinjie was holding two big bags which smelled like food. Luo Yuan took the bags and realized that there was liquor in one of them. As a soft-spoken woman who was going to sleep in the same room with a stranger, shouldn't she have her guard up?

Luo Yuan asked in confusion, "Why did you bring liquor?"

"I want to drink tonight!" Chen Xinjie responded after a short pause. What happened today was a little too much for her. She was strong enough not to collapse but mentally it was too much. Luo Yuan sighed and replied, "Alright then, but you should only drink half a bottle."

"Don't underestimate me... I have passed my alcohol training." Chen Xinjie grinned in reply.

Luo Yuan did not respond to her remark and removed three bottles of liquor from the bag. They were 'Er Guo Tou' which surprised Luo Yuan as he was not aware that they were still producing this brand even after the apocalypse. He threw two bottles into the dustbin without noticing that Chen Xinjie was observing him from behind.

"One bottle... Then go to sleep when you're done."

"You're not drinking?" Chen Xinjie asked.

"I never drink." Luo Yuan said. He lied though. He used to drink at social events as it would be ridiculous for him to drink juice while his colleagues drank liquor. It would be even more ridiculous if he was with his superior. Some would even consider it disrespectful if he did not drink. However, now that he was here, nobody could force him to.

"You're such a nice guy." Chen Xinjie teased.

"Nah, I've always been like that." Luo Yuan chuckled in reply.

...

In reality, she was exaggerating when she said she could drink. Before she could even finish half a bottle, she was already tipsy and her cheeks were red. She started blabbering, "Men... They're the worst! If you touch me, I swear I would kick you."

Luo Yuan involuntarily choked on what she just uttered which made the situation awkward. Chen Xinjie then reached to get her drink but Luo Yuan stopped her, "Alright, you've had too much to drink for tonight."

"There's still half a bottle and I'm not drunk yet!" Chen Xinjie pouted her seductive lips and smiled.

Luo Yuan's reasoning was that if she was already acting like this

right now, it would be worse if she were to finish the entire bottle. He snatched the bottle from her and said, "Stop fooling around and go to bed!"

"You're such a killjoy! I'm going to the bathroom!" Chen Xinjie struggled to stand up and stumbled her way to the bathroom while saying flirtatiously, "Don't you dare come in! I'll scream!"

What she said had tempted Luo Yuan... especially when he watched her walking into the bathroom seductively. Purposefully or not, she did not close the bathroom door entirely. Temptation and lust were naturally boiling inside Luo Yuan's blood. Suddenly, Luo Yuan could hear the sound of running water coming from the bathroom. It went on for a while and was followed by sobbing.

"What is wrong with her?" Luo Yuan thought to himself. He could see her with his Sense but the image was blurry.

"My butt hurts!" Chen Xinjie said while crying in the bathroom. "I can't stand up."

"Do you want me to come in?" Luo Yuan asked after hesitating slightly.

She hesitated and said, "Alright... but no peeking!"

After promising her, Luo Yuan entered the bathroom. She was sitting in the shower with her pants halfway down, exposing her plump thighs and half of her powdery-smooth, fair and round

butt. She was holding the shower in her right hand and it seemed like she was just done with her business and preparing to wash herself.

With just a glance, Luo Yuan was immediately turned on like a predator who just spotted a succulent and vulnerable prey. In an attempt to suppress his horny intentions, he looked away immediately while walking towards her. Her hands were hooked around his neck and her chest was pressed against him. She was breathing hot air into his ear as she quivered and spoke, "My body is weak, please help... to pull my pants up."

Unsurprisingly, Luo Yuan's heartbeat and breathing got faster.

...

Lying on a white bedsheet, a pair of fair legs and a white underwear were dangling in the air. Chen Xinjie's moans sounded like she was begging and crying at the same time. She was like a fish that was struggling on a hook helplessly while Luo Yuan had his way with her. The sex was intense. Probably too intense for this fragile and helpless prey.

Luo Yuan then crawled up to her, flipped her over and both of them were staring blankly at the ceiling. What in the hell was happening? How did he end up not thinking with his brain again!?

Something was wrong!

In reality, Luo Yuan did not think that he had done anything wrong. Although he had a high IQ, how could any strong and active man resist such temptations? However, the problem now was that no matter how deep he hid, he could never hide anything from the government. Ever since he arrived at the Reconstruction Area a year ago, his habits, hobbies, types of women that he liked and even some fetishes that he was not aware of were already common knowledge among government officials.

The plan had been enforced ever since he was being interrogated in the meeting room. Chen Xinjie was just an insignificant pawn being sacrificed by the government. Without her, there were still Zhang Xinjie and Zhao Xinjie. As a matter of fact, Chen Xinjie agreed to do this without hesitation because Luo Yuan was charming and she liked him a lot. Moreover, as a member of the team, there was no way that she could reject. At a time where sacrifice and cooperation were vital for survival, it was her job to say yes to whatever was assigned to her.

Ever since she joined the Firearms Bureau, she had already decided to follow Luo Yuan even if she had to become a shameless mistress. In fact, she considered herself lucky to be able to be in his presence. As for the plan of how to seduce and turn him on, it was all carefully planned by more than 10 psychologists. Even the middle-aged man who was with her at the door earlier was part of the plan. For a strong evolved human like Luo Yuan, challenging him was a way of fueling his lust and desires.

Chen Xinjie's also did not give Luo Yuan anytime to think about what was happening. She hooked her legs around Luo Yuan's chest which made his heart race. She still added in a soft and delicate manner, "This is a mistake. I have a family. I hope you can forget

this tomorrow and let us go back to being colleagues." She lied about her marriage as it was part of the plan of catering to Luo Yuan's fetishes. She could easily cover up her lie by saying that her husband was a busy man who was never home, a soldier, or an engineer who was working very far away. If it was needed, she could even ask someone to pretend to be her husband. Luo Yuan did not say a word. He thought that this would be good for everyone. If he were to bring her home, he would be in so much trouble when the ladies at home got jealous of her. He thought of using abilities to get rid of this problem but decided not to until it was absolutely necessary.

After he had convinced himself that this was okay and that he had an exit plan, her caress and delicate touches were the only things in his mind. He was clearly turned on. He turned around and pressed against her - sandwiching her between him and the bed. Now that his speed of recovery was faster, there was no need for him to rest before he could go another round.

"Vice-captain, please behave yourself!" Chen Xinjie suddenly felt pain in her vagina and said while covering her mouth. She was shocked by the intensity of his actions. The first round was so intense that she genuinely felt that she was going to die.

Luo Yuan said while trying to catch his breath, "There's still a long way till tomorrow comes."

## Chapter 362: Explosion

---

The next morning, Luo Yuan gently pushed the fair legs still wrapped around him away slowly. He got dressed and looked at the exhausted Chen Xinjie who was still lying naked on the bed. He sighed with a complicated expression. He was clearly not thinking with his head last night and he let lust overwhelmed his mind which caused him to be reckless.

Now that he was completely awake, he was trying to recall exactly what happened last night. He could feel that the whole thing was somehow just an act. However, he personally felt that Chen Xinjie was not a good actor so it was hard to tell which was the truth. Furthermore, the sorrow that Chen Xinjie occasionally revealed in her eyes, as well as the fact that the two of them shared a room, gave it away.

Luo Yuan's suspicions were pretty close. The government of the Reconstruction Area could not trust him. Especially when he brought such shocking information to them. It would be strange if they did not do anything to confirm this info.

"Sugar-coated bomb! It was a sugar-coated bomb!" Luo Yuan said to himself.

Looking again at Chen Xinjie who had one of her boobs sticking out of the blanket, Luo Yuan was less agitated. The reason why the Reconstruction Area did this was to keep an eye on him so that they could feel more relieved. At the same time, the only bait for Luo Yuan to bite was the sugar-coated bomb that was Chen Xinjie. She was probably forced to accomplish the mission.



...

At noon, Luo Yuan and Chen Xinjie were sitting across each other at the hostel's restaurant.

"Let's forget about what happened last night. From now on, we are just colleagues. It won't happen again." Chen Xinjie said with an expressionless face. She had lost her usual jovial smile.

Luo Yuan was unaffected by this and thought to himself, "Was she playing hard to get or was that what she really wanted?"

Soon, he gave up on that thought. Whether she meant what she said or not, he should not expose her real intention. All he could do now was to play along with her. At least she was someone that he knew. It is much better than having someone that he was not familiar with to watch over him.

Although she was harmless, there was now a discomfort in him towards her. He pondered for a while and said, "You've said the same thing last night. Don't worry, I'm not clingy."

"That's great." Chen Xinjie said as she put her chopsticks down, wiped her mouth with a towel and got ready to leave. Just when she stood up, she frowned and sighed.

"Do you need any help?" Luo Yuan said while chuckling awkwardly. The sex last night was obviously too intense for her

and it was actually a torturous experience rather than a pleasurable one. At least for Chen Xinjie. That was the main reason she only managed to wake up close to noon.

"There's no need." Chen Xinjie gave him a cold stare while rejecting him.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan stood up abruptly which shocked Chen Xinjie who was right next to him. She was about to scold him but then realized that he was not looking at her so she looked in the direction that Luo Yuan was looking. However, besides a white wall, there was nothing there. Just as she began to wonder, the ground started to shake! A mellow thud-like thunderous sound was heard.

Chen Xinjie's body was shaking for a moment but she was soon able to stand straight. The trembling was nothing major. It was merely at a magnitude of three but it managed to cause an uproar in the restaurant which soon became chaotic. The horrifying earthquake that happened not long ago had traumatized the people here. The diners were contemplating whether they should stay or leave. Fortunately, no aftershock came after that.

"What happened? And what were you looking at?" Chen Xinjie was now relieved and asked Luo Yuan who just shook his head. He could not explain the intuition that he had. His body could feel the intangible waves in the air which included electromagnetic waves. A few seconds before the wave could reach him, he could already sense it. It was an explosion! It felt like a nuclear bomb but with a small coverage area.

"What! The fusion device exploded? That's not possible! The fusion device would never explode." Luo Yuan heard someone saying that at the corner of the restaurant. Although the person's voice was drowned out by the chaos in the restaurant, Luo Yuan could hear it clearly.

...

"No, it could not be. The fusion device went through a thorough examination. It's completely safe with high levels of shock resistance. It could even run as usual even if it fell. Moreover, the next time it should start up was in a few days. How could an explosion happen today?"

"There must be someone trying to sabotage us!"

...

The fusion device's explosion was upsetting for Luo Yuan. He recalled that there was much propaganda in the newspaper regarding the nuclear fusion power station. It was the hot topic of the town! They were told that there was a crucial breakthrough and it was almost up and running.

Whenever he was at the Firearms Bureau, Luo Yuan would frequently read the newspaper so he already had a rough idea about controllable nuclear fusion. As compared to the nuclear fusion power station, the controllable one had a higher density of energy which could basically produce boundless energy. All they needed was six of them to supply enough energy to the entire

## Reconstruction Area.

Besides the cosmic storm brought about by the apocalypse, the earth did not lack helium which meant that there was no need for them to source for it from the moon. If they were to store the energy produced via controllable nuclear fusion within the Reconstruction Area, it would be enough to supply energy to the entire place for few hundred years.

Luo Yuan was fully aware of what controllable fusion meant and what impacts it would have in the world. As soon as it was successful, it would lead to a revolutionary change in the Reconstruction Area which was a good thing for mankind. However, although he was not entirely familiar with the electrical weapon, he knew that electromagnetic guns required large amounts of energy. Not until the very last minute could those powerful and long electromagnetic guns ever be launched. Launching it required a massive amount of electricity which would mean that part of the factories in the industrial area would be forced to stop working. Boundless energy would mean the beginning of laser-related weapons. The coverage and lightning speed of lasers made them a guaranteed hit as long as the target was properly locked. Such technique was not plainly sci-fi as the theories concerning them were completed a long time ago. Few major countries including China had been testing the feasibility of it as a weapon even before the apocalypse began.

However, the disadvantages of such weapons were obvious. Since the Earth is affected by the ozone layer, the collisions between lasers and the air would cause ionization and diffraction. Besides that, it also consumes a large amount of energy and is affected by the weather.

If energy was boundless, such disadvantages were nothing to be concerned about anymore. With the aid of the anti-ballistic missile technology that was available before the apocalypse, there would no longer be any threats to the Reconstruction Area with these two powerful weapons in place. It is because of this that Luo Yuan could not believe that the explosion occurred! Was it an accident or a conspiracy?

...

The old man who was talking on the phone hung up and walked away looking shocked.

"You stay here. I'll go take a look." Luo Yuan said to Chen Xinjie.

"Alright, make it quick." Chen Xinjie replied.

Luo Yuan nodded and walked out of the hostel. He Sensed for a little while then chose a direction and ran towards the location where the explosion happened.

New Capital City was the Reconstruction Area's capital. In reality, it was not big. The canyons on both sides limited their activities. Excluding the layers on the ground, it was actually smaller than Hope City.

As it was during the day, there were not many people on the street. The empty streets allowed Luo Yuan to run freely and

quickly. In less than four minutes, he arrived at the suburbs.

The location where the explosion happened was not difficult to find at all. It was easy to be spotted even for an ordinary person. The impact of the explosion had already subsided since it happened a while ago but there was still a group of peculiar white clouds that looked like an ice-cream hovering above it. It was similar to the mushroom cloud that was caused by the hydrogen bomb explosion. However, compared to the usual hydrogen bomb, its coverage was so much smaller. Though small, the high temperature did cause a lot of destruction. Luckily, the fusion device lab was some distance away, or else the explosion would have destroyed New Capital City. Luo Yuan did not get any closer but just analyzed the situation from afar. He was not afraid of the radiation from the high-energy particles. Instead, he did not want to cause any troubles.

Soon, there were massive amounts of armored tanks passing by. Soldiers wearing protective suits made their way to the explosion area. More than 10 large-scale excavators started digging the destroyed caves nearby before it could cool down. As time went by, there were more and more engineering vehicles and soldiers coming in with their devices while walking around in the caves. They seemed to be detecting something.

Luo Yuan stayed for a while but made his way back to the hostel since he did not discover anything. Right after he took a few steps, he paused. He turned around and looked at the soldiers again and gasped. Could this be done by those extraterrestrial civilizations in space?

In the meeting yesterday, a scientist forecasted that the civilization in space was 100 to 150 years ahead of them in terms of technology. For humans, that was a massive difference but in space, it was a short time. A space voyage would probably take more than 10 years.

Over the past few days, information regarding the controllable nuclear fusion device was leaked everywhere. To promote hope among the people, as soon as there were new technological breakthroughs, the topic would be widely publicized on the internet and news. The only enemy they had used to have were mutated beasts so there was no need to hide any information.

As for the civilization in space, language interpretation and obtaining information from the internet were nothing difficult as long as the data was sufficient. Although there were differences in technological developments, the advancement of technology in their civilization would allow them to crack the code in no time.

It was basically full transparency of information! Everything on Earth was no secret to the extraterrestrial civilization. As for the controllable fusion device, it was a crucial piece of technology that allowed humans to walk out of Earth and enter into space. It was like the transition between the different eras. If the civilization in space had been watching the humans, the consequences of such a breakthrough should not be underestimated.

# Chapter 363: The Reconstruction Area's Response

---

Luo Yuan felt dizzy as he was making his way back to the hostel. At the end of the day, he slept right after dinner.

Two days later, there was still no news about the fusion device. It was apparent that the explosion incident at the controllable fusion device power station was being covered. Luo Yuan tried not to think too much. After all, it was useless to overthink as no matter what happened, he still had to live. The apocalypse had taught the weakest to be strong and he had adapted to the stressful life since the beginning.

...

Chen Xinjie was acting like a different person. She was not as friendly as she was and would intentionally distant herself. Especially at night when they were going to bed, she would wear proper clothes to cover up herself. She did not reveal any of her body parts to Luo Yuan. Even when she wanted to take a bath, she would wait until Luo Yuan was in a deep sleep before secretly making her way to the bathroom. It felt like she was avoiding him and treating him as though he was a pervert.

Such behavior had shaken Luo Yuan's judgment of her. However, the more she behaved like this, the more Luo Yuan was tempted to penetrate her again. Just a few days ago she was just underneath him, moaning and open like a flower before him. Not to mention the fact that she was drunk and helpless to Luo Yuan's every desire. He was turned on just recalling the events of that night.



Furthermore, the atmosphere around the area was very stressful during the last few days which made him want to let everything out on her!

After resisting his urges for two days, Luo Yuan suddenly opened his eyes one night when Chen Xinjie got out of the bathroom. He pushed aside his blanket and made his way onto Chen Xinjie's bed while panting. After some struggles, she gave in to him and he had his way with her again.

After sex, Luo Yuan again stared blankly at the ceiling while Chen Xinjie had her back pressed against him lying next to him. It was suspicious. Looking at Chen Xinjie who did not say a word, he felt guilty. Not only did she not seduce him over the past few days, she was even avoiding him. Could his earlier suspicions be a mistake?

...

The whole thing had been planned by a few experts in psychology and human behavior pinpointing Luo Yuan's weaknesses. The idea was to have Chen Xinjie own a place in his heart instead of being a cheap prostitute who could be shooed away easily or a person who he would lose interest for after sex.

The interesting thing about psychology and human behavior was that as long as there was desire, no matter how intelligent the person may be, he could be tricked. Before the apocalypse, such technique had been used to successfully trick many business tycoons and senior officers. None of them could see it coming.

For the conservative Chen Xinjie, although her previous act was not perfect which allowed Luo Yuan to have his suspicions, as a natural beauty who was loved by many, playing hard to get was nothing new to her. She did not have to act, it was so natural that even Luo Yuan could not tell that she was acting.

On the bed, Luo Yuan was still indulging in his thoughts of the sexual intercourse he just had with her. The excitement and pleasure he got from having Chen Xinjie be initially unwilling to give in to eventually letting him have his way with her turned him on so badly. He suddenly decided to peek at Chen Xinjie's curved and peachy butt which was still arousing to him. Moments later, a noise was heard coming from their room again!

...

The next morning, Chen Xinjie peeked at Luo Yuan who was reading the newspaper and tidying up the room. She let out a sigh. As a person who was respectable in the Firearms Bureau, she could not believe that Luo Yuan was privately such as an immoral person. His handsome face, perfect body and his mysterious vibe made her feel like she was falling for him over the past few days. However, such feelings were not pure. Ever since she took up the mission, she had given up on the dream of building a proper relationship. For the Reconstruction Area's future, her personal feelings and goals did not matter.

Suddenly, the knocking on the door snapped her out of her deep thought. She put on her clothes immediately and opened the door. It was the service crew from the hostel.

"Why is there another delivery of newspapers?" She asked.

"This is today's special issue." The man replied.

Chen Xinjie took the newspaper and read the headline. She let out a loud gasp.

"What does it say?" Luo Yuan asked from behind.

"Come take a look." Chen Xinjie passed him the newspaper while looking shocked. Luo Yuan took the newspaper and its title read, "Explosion at the Controllable Fusion Device Lab."

"December 4, 2015, there was an explosion that happened at the controllable fusion device lab located in the suburb of New Capital City due to misconduct. Three academicians and more than 10 high-level researchers died in the accident. Including the staff present at the site, it has been confirmed that more than 100 people have died. As most of the documents were destroyed in the mishap, the research is now on hold until further notice. According to the report..."

Luo Yuan flipped through the newspaper and realized that almost the entire copy was about the accident. There were survey results, complaints, and inferences of the explosion. As he already knew this earlier, he tried his best to stay calm. He was not as shocked as Chen Xinjie was. The more he thought about it, the more suspicious he was. It was not the usual style of newspaper reporting in the Reconstruction Area.

Since the apocalypse, the people here had basically been living in hell as battles with mutated beasts were happening all the time. Even the civilians had to bear the unimaginable burdens at work, as well as the insecurity and stress of losing their own life or their loved ones. To encourage them, the newspaper usually only reported positive news. Therefore, for such strongly negative news, it was usually kept a secret.

Hence, the change of style was strange. After a quick thought, Luo Yuan had his answer. "Maybe the explosion was really done by the extraterrestrial civilization and to distract people, they came out with such an odd reporting style. Could the Reconstruction Area have found something at the explosion site?"

"There must be more than one copy of technical documents for the controllable fusion device. Perhaps everything was a show for the extraterrestrial civilization while they move their research to somewhere safe." He was relieved. Although he was not sure if such a plan would be effective, the extraterrestrial civilization was not God. It was impossible for them to know every single thing.

...

In the afternoon, there were two staff members who came to tell Luo Yuan that they could both leave. That concluded his prediction to be accurate. Perhaps the Reconstruction Area believed his report. The house arrest had finally ended, and Luo Yuan did not want to stay a minute more at the stressful New Capital City. Both of them took the train back to Hope City at 4 p.m. in the afternoon.

After bidding farewell to Chen Xinjie, Luo Yuan did not go to Firearms Bureau but instead headed straight home. The house that was quiet without Luo Yuan has soon crowded with noise again.

He made calls home every day while he was away. Although the ladies were not concerned about him leaving, all of them undoubtedly missed him. Looking at their happy faces, Luo Yuan had a sense of guilt storm through his heart. Apart from calling them every day, he did not miss them at all. Instead, he was cheating on them.

...

It was soon midnight and as soon as Huang Jiahui fell asleep, Luo Yuan opened his eyes and looked at the attributes panel. He added the attribute points that he gained from the previous level-up to his agility. His Agility was now +16.

As the usual heat occupied and circulated his body, once again he felt the distance with the real world. Huang Jiahui's breath became slow and heavy, the tick-tock sound of the clock on the wall was also slowing down.

He lifted his blanket and everything around him seemed to be slowing down. He stood up but did not use any of his strength with the fear that it would go out of control. He did not want to hurt Huang Jiahui by accident. He walked slowly and his body felt light like a feather. With just a tiny effort, he could fly. Of course, that was just an illusion. Unless he was using his Will, no matter how

much physical strength he had, it was impossible to detach himself from gravity.

He closed the door, and walked out of the house in silence. Since the incident last time, he dared not experiment at home again. Although it was in the middle of the night, Hope City was still crowded and noisy. Factories were still up and running. There was noise coming from machines that were 10 to a few hundred tons in weight.

The noise was strange in Luo Yuan's ears. It sounded like a radio cassette that was distorted. His +16 Agility made him 11.4 times faster than an ordinary person. If it was necessary, he could brush his teeth in five seconds and use only one second to wash his face. Furthermore, eating would require less than 13 seconds!

Such great time difference made him feel like he was living in a different time dimension than ordinary people. However, he knew in his mind that he was still living in the common world. All he could do was to adapt to everybody else's slow rhythm. Every time he improved his Agility, his life became a little more torturous.

## Chapter 364: Lin Feiyan's Move

---

Then, he started running.

At first, his speed was quite similar to that of an ordinary person's. He even stumbled and almost fell. A few seconds later, he became more agile and started speeding up! He was noticeably going faster and faster and became a blurry shadow dashing by the straight and wide streets in a flash. A factory worker that was pushing his cart could feel a strong wind pass him by but could not see anyone.

"There was no wind!" The man mumbled to himself as he squinted and looked around. He immediately poured the slag from his cart away and ran back to the factory.

...

As Luo Yuan was running, he decided to use his Will to increase his speed. He was now traveling almost as fast as lightning. Within a few minutes, he was in the wilderness! He had reached 200 meters per second but had not reached his limit yet. As compared to running solely on Agility, the difference was not major as each step was between seven to eight meters. But with his current concept of time, to depend on gravity to bring him back to the ground every single time was very time-consuming. Eight meters per step was not agile enough for him. If he was in a battle, space would be even smaller which would result in him taking even smaller steps. The limitation of his Will was that he still could not apply his speed on the ground when he was in the air. In fact, his speed was so much slower. When attacks come his way, no matter

how high his Agility was, he had nowhere to run.

...

The terrain became complicated in the wilderness. Initially, it was barren and had only dunes, shrubs and rocks. Apart from the new complicated terrain, Luo Yuan's visibility was also affected. Just as he ran pass higher terrain, there was a giant rock in front of him that was more than 10 meters away. He almost smashed himself into the rock!

In the past, he had only two options: one was to decrease his speed and another would be to run into the rock. There was no time for him to bypass anything. However, with his current abilities, Luo Yuan had other options. In a split second and with just a tiny amount of effort, he leaped more than 10 meters high! He managed to jump over the giant rock with ease and he realized that his Intelligence allowed him to control his Strength better. In less than 20 minutes of adapting, he was fully in control of his new Agility points.

After running for a while, Luo Yuan slowed down as he arrived at a rocky desert. The weathering effects had the rocks scattered all over the ground. Their surfaces were oddly smooth and under the moonlight, there was a beautiful light shining and glimmering like a precious stone. Those were a type of jade that was expensive collectibles before the apocalypse but was now worth nothing. Luo Yuan then walked under a giant rock that was shaped like a mushroom. Its top was shaped like an umbrella which covered the sky. Since there were extraterrestrial civilizations out there, he had to be extra cautious when training.



He pulled out his Zhanmadao and started practicing. When it was just pulled out of its sheath, it was still visible but soon after it had disappeared from vision. It only reappeared when Luo Yuan took a few short pauses. There was a glow surrounding Luo Yuan and at the same time, he became blurry and eventually looked just like a cloud of colors. His movements were so fast that it created wind which made the sand and dust spiral through the air. Deep carvings were appearing on the surface of the rock walls.

...

It was now morning at the Lin Feiyan's office. She was sitting in deep thought while a pencil was spinning in her hand. She was obviously good at playing with her pencil as no matter how she spun it, it would not fall.

There was someone knocking at her door. Lin Feiyan sat up straight and stopped spinning the pencil that was in her hand in fear that it would reveal how young she was and destroy her image.

"Please, come in!"

"You asked for me?" It was her secretary who had a small body like hers. The main difference was that her secretary was a scaredy-cat and a push-over.

"Have you gotten information on what I had asked you about? Where did both of them go and what did they do?" Lin Feiyan

asked coldly while now holding the pencil firmly in her hand.

The Captain and Vice-Captain of the Firearms Bureau had disappeared for three days. As the leader of the department, she was furious!

"I have checked... they booked train tickets to the New Capital City but I have no idea what they are doing there. I will ask Captain Chen." The secretary said in fear.

"Then what are you waiting for!" Lin Feiyan groaned and said.

After the secretary left, Lin Feiyan still could not calm herself down. She thought to herself, "New Capital City? Why would they go there!?"

Lin Feiyan thought that the only reason they would go there was to visit the political center and see their leader. Such act was disrespectful to her if it were done without informing her.

She finished the cold tea left in her cup in one gulp but that did not put off the fire that was in her. She had complicated thoughts in her head and the pencil was spinning quickly in her hand.

Soon, the footsteps of her secretary could be heard approaching her office. Lin Feiyan put down the pencil again immediately.

"Captain... Captain Chen... Captain Chen said it is a Class A confidential. At your level, you have no right to know..." The

secretary said in fear.

Lin Feiyan snapped the pencil that she was holding. The chilly atmosphere made the secretary quiver. She walked slowly towards the door but she was actually ready to run away anytime.

Lin Feiyan's breathing was heavy but she remained rational. Chen Xinjie would never lie about something serious. The statement about Class A confidential being none of her business was true, but Chen Xinjie was only given some back-end task in the department so how did she even get involved in such a confidential case?

She thought about it and guessed it must have been caused by the annoying Vice-Captain. He must have found out something incredible by luck and told Chen Xinjie which resulted in the trip to the New Capital City. But not informing her was unforgivable.

"Inform all departments that I want an emergency meeting now!"

"Al... Alright!"

"Wait, is the Vice-Captain here?" She thought of something and asked the secretary who was ready to run.

"Not yet!"

"Let's wait for him to come back before informing him about the meeting!" Lin Feiyan was clenching her teeth while saying that.

After acknowledging what her boss had requested, she left the office as fast as she could. Lin Feiyan stood up and walked in circles in her office for a few minutes. She then sat down again and started biting on her pencil while thinking. Soon, she started drafting what she was going to say in the meeting.

Such task was impossible to be accomplished by her useless secretary as the secretary could never understand what she was trying to say. Especially when the situation was as complicated as it is right now that her status was unstable. She had to write it herself.

# Chapter 365: Meeting Xu Zhiqiang Again

---

It was 10 in the morning and Luo Yuan walked into the Firearms Bureau like a robot. He bumped into Fang Peibin who had just arrived like he did.

‘Ah! Master, you’re back!’ Fang Peibin spoke energetically. He was just about to yawn before seeing him.

"Did you not get enough sleep?" Luo Yuan asked while nodding in response to his statement. He was controlling his speed and trying to match Fang Peibin’s. It made his speech a little weird even though it was clear. It sounded robotic but he knew that it was only temporary. As soon as he got used to the new time dimension, everything would be back to normal.

Fang Peibin noticed that something was strange but he did not dwell on it and spoke honestly, "It was already midnight when I got back from my mission last night. I was still wide awake so I didn’t sleep at all. Nothing unusual though."

"Was the mission completed?" Luo Yuan asked.

"I’m nothing compared to you, master. It was only a level-5 mission. It should have been nothing but it sure was tricky. I had to wait half a day for the chance to attack." Fang Peibin chuckled in reply to Luo Yuan’s question.

"That’s great. Come to my office!" Luo Yuan said.

Fang Peibin knew that he had something to ask. He nodded and followed Luo Yuan to his office. After shutting the door, knowing that Fang Peibin was a straightforward person, Luo Yuan asked directly, "How well do you know about Chen Xinjie's family background?"

"Chen Xinjie? Captain Chen? Which part do you mean? I only remember that she has her mother around. Her mother is a demure woman. She used to make us soup but she hasn't been visiting lately." Fang Peibin spoke in a puzzled manner.

Luo Yuan's blood was boiling inside him. Looking at his apprentice who was usually smart, he said, "No, I mean does she have a partner or kids!?"

"I'm not sure. I've never seen any before." Fang Peibin suddenly understood what he meant and responded. His mouth was wide open and he spoke in shock, "Ah! Master, don't tell me you're in love with Chen Xinjie! Don't be fooled by her friendliness towards everybody, she's actually very arrogant."

"Vice-Captain... No, I mean master... I'm not talking about you. The Vice-Captain who died used to go after Captain Chen. That guy was a Casanova! He knew his way around women and he bought her flowers and other stuff every day. After a few months of trying, he did not even manage to hold her hand. There's still chance if you want to marry her. But to make her your mistress, I don't think it's possible."

Fang Peibin had seen Luo Yuan's women before when he was staying at the hostel during the time when Luo Yuan was on the mission to save Wu Qianru. The number of women he had was enough to form a basketball team. Luo Yuan gave an awkward smile. Fearing what he would do to him, Fang Peibin had chills in his bones. He then quickly spoke, "But of course, that Vice-Captain who died was nothing compared to master, your looks alone..."

"Alright, stop your nonsense. Check and let me know if she has a husband!" Luo Yuan interrupted him. He thought for a little while and said, "Never mind, you don't have to check anymore."

It would be an easy task for Luo Yuan to get someone to tell him the truth as long as the timing was right. Even a hint would work. He was not interested in anything else. He was not greedy and never had the intention of betraying the Reconstruction Area. However, not knowing if Chen Xinjie had a husband or not bothered him.

Suddenly, a knock on the door interrupted his thought.

"Come in!"

The door was slightly opened and a small-sized person's head was looking around the office. She was blushing when she saw Luo Yuan and started speaking, "Vice... Vice-Captain... Co... Colonel Fang. The captain asked me to inform you that there will be an emergency meeting in the conference room."

"What time?" Luo Yuan asked. He thought it was odd that Lin

Feiyan hired such a timid secretary.

"Right... Right now!"

"Alright, I'll be there in a minute. Excuse yourself!"

"Okay, okay!" She left immediately and closed the door softly."

"Something major must have happened, let's go for the meeting." Luo Yuan said.

Fang Peibin had a strange expression. He thought to himself... as Luo Yuan had just arrived not long ago, he would not know that the Captain did something like this.

Both of them left the office and bumped into Chen Xinjie along the corridor who was closing her door.

"Master, I think I forgot something. I'll go first." Fang Peibin spoke and left them alone. Looking at Fang Peibin leaving, he tried to say something so that it was not awkward.

Chen Xinjie avoided eye contact while combing her hair with her fingers. She seemed nervous. After a few steps with Luo Yuan, she was glancing at the toilet nearby and said, "Excuse me. I'm going to the toilet!"

Without waiting for Luo Yuan to respond, she quickly made her



way to the toilet.

Watching his new crush leaving and avoiding him was utterly disappointing. He started to feel lost as he was not sure if she was acting or if it was real. Too bad he did not get the opportunity to use his abilities on her sooner.

There were a lot of people at the conference room when he arrived. Apart from those who were on missions, the rest were there. Since there was still time before the meeting, Luo Yuan was making small talk with the people around. He looked at Chen Xinjie when she walked in. Their eyes met but Chen Xinjie quickly looked away.

Soon, Lin Feiyan walked into the conference room. She was wearing her iconic loose armored suit. She looked as cold as ice and was holding her meeting notes in her hand. She walked up to the podium quickly. As she was up there, she glanced at everybody in the room and paused when she saw Luo Yuan. When Luo Yuan noticed she was looking at him, she immediately looked down and pretended to look at her notes.

"Lin Feiyan, please be still! You should not let him sit on you. You were the Captain, and he is only the Vice-Captain. As soon as you finish reading your notes, he will be the one who is anxious." She said to herself.

She calmed herself down, looked up and stared at Luo Yuan again. She cleared her throat and then looked down to read her notes, "I know this meeting was called on very short notice but it is necessary. Although the Firearms Bureau is still standing tall after

a year, there are some clear issues here. The issues may seem minor but that doesn't mean we should not contemplate them. Chairman Mao once said, "The house should be cleaned often, otherwise it will collect dust." Same goes to your face, "You should wash it often or else there would be dirt on your face..."

Luo Yuan was puzzled by all this! It sounded like a high school essay. He looked at Fang Peibin and Li Dong who were next to him and he noticed that although everyone was sitting upright, none of them were paying attention. It seemed like they have gotten used to such speeches.

"As a team that is strong in the battlefield, one of our fellow comrades has started to lose his integrity and his arrogance is starting to show. He comes in late and leaves early, but far worse than that, he does not follow our rules. Especially this particular comrade, who does not act like a leader and does whatever he feels like doing without respecting his leader and also without respecting women..."

Luo Yuan was confused. He looked around him and noticed that everybody was looking at him! He tried to recall what happened lately but he could not think of any way that he could have offended Lin Feiyan. Moreover, what she said was inaccurate. What did she mean by doing whatever he wanted? Since when did he do whatever he wanted? And, not respecting leaders and women? That was even more confusing!

The more she read, the more fun she was having. Lin Feiyan was in her own zone and was reading her notes without noticing the awkward atmosphere she created in the conference room.

A sudden knock on the door broke her momentum.

She was upset but looked up at the door. It was her useless secretary!

She said in a serious tone, "What's wrong? Can't you see that I'm in a meeting?"

"It's... It's Minister Ren from the municipal department. He's here and he wants to see you." Her secretary said softly.

"Let him wait. I'll see him after this meeting is adjourned." Lin Feiyan waved with power.

"He's the senior officer in Hope City. It's bad to let him wait. Since I know him, you carry on with the meeting while I speak to him." Luo Yuan said while standing up.

The Captain had always given him a strange feeling. He sensed that her mentality was immature but she pretended to be an adult. She reminded him of the pretentious female class leader he had when he was in junior high school. Putting her mature face aside, her real age might be much younger than he thought. Luo Yuan did not want to pick a fight nor did he want to be misjudged by her.

Without waiting for Lin Feiyan to respond, Luo Yuan stood up and walked towards the door. Lin Feiyan held her breath. She

moved her lips but she could not say a word until Luo Yuan walked out the door.

The power that she mustered earlier now came to nothing. Looking at her meeting notes, there was still a long way to go and she suddenly realized that she was overreacting.

...

Luo Yuan walked to the hall and saw that there were two people there.

The coincidence was - he knew both of them. Looking at Luo Yuan walking towards them, Minister Ren was relieved. The two men stood up. Minister Ren smiled and said, "Vice-Captain Luo, we meet again. I knew you were going to climb the ranks! You have been promoted in less than a month. Come, let me introduce you to Colonel Xu Zhiqiang. He's a highly recommended staff in Hope City who used to be in the military special team."

"Minister Ren, there's no need for introduction. We're old friends!" Luo Yuan shook hands with Minister Ren while smiling at Xu Zhiqiang, "How are you? Why did you come?"

"It's a long story!" Xu Zhiqiang shook his head while forcing a smile. It was obvious that he did not want to tell his story in front of Minister Ren.

"Let's have a meal together later. We need a good talk. I'll

introduce you to my teammates in the Firearms Bureau." Luo Yuan said.

Xu Zhiqiang nodded.

Looking at them being on such good terms, Minister Ren was relieved, "No wonder Desert City looked familiar on the file. Since both of you know each other, everything is much easier."

The procedure was much easier with Luo Yuan's help. He signed and stamped the document and waited for Chen Xinjie who was still in the meeting. As the Vice-Captain, he had the right to approve access. During the time when he had just arrived, the documentation approval took a while as the Captain was away and the Vice-Captain had died on a mission.

Luo Yuan could sense that there was a major change in Xu Zhiqiang since the last time they met in Desert City. He had no idea how big he would become when he turned into a giant this time but he was very interested in such pseudo-four-dimensional creatures.

# Chapter 366: Prediction

---

Minister Ren was a busy man. After the documentation process was completed, he was ready to leave after a few words with Luo Yuan. It was rare for Luo Yuan to accompany the minister to the door. If not for the minister's help, Zhang Wu and Wang Xianguang would not have received the great jobs they had now.

Zhang Wu was now working with Interpol, from being the lieutenant he was before. Wang Xianguang was assigned to the largest Industrial Planning Bureau in the department. Although that was an easy thing to do for Minister Ren, it meant a lot to Luo Yuan.

After sending the minister on his way, the meeting was adjourned. Everybody had a strange look on their faces as if they were holding back laughter. Wu Qianru mustered up her courage and walked up to him. "Vice-captain, I did not know you were that kind of person," she said, blushing.

Luo Yuan was not pleased. He had no idea what Lin Feiyan had said about him in his absence. Lin Feiyan was nowhere to be found. Perhaps she had sneaked her way back to her office, he thought. She was lucky, or else he would have shown her what happens when you did not respect your superior.

"Let me introduce all of you to our newest member. This is Xu Zhiqiang. He is an old friend of mine from the Special Battle Team. He is very experienced in all aspects of battle. Please welcome him warmly and get well acquainted with each other."

"Welcome, welcome! Finally, a new member to the unit. My name is Xie Junhui."

"Hi, my name is Li Dong."

"A friend of the master is a friend of mine. I'm Fang Peibin!"

...

Luo Yuan was glad that the atmosphere was very cordial amidst the members of his unit. After they shook hands and exchanged a few words among themselves, they started to get to know each other better.

"Vice-captain, when you say we should get to know each other, can we talk about everything and anything under the sun?" Li Dong said with a chuckle.

"Of course, that's part of the unspoken rules of the department. I'll only protect you, not destroy you. If you guys would like to get know each other better, why not?" Luo Yuan laughed. They called the unspoken rule 'The Spirit-Break Beating'. Every newly joined evolved human who joined must go through the process. It not only showed the hierarchy within the unit but also allowed the new members to quickly adapt their new working environment.

The first step was to identify their ability. If one had no ability, there was no place for that person in the unit. The second step was to destroy the idea of power, rank and previous status

qualifications. Before every evolved human joined the sword unit, every one of them was the best in the departments they were from. All of them arrived rebellious and arrogant, which caused conflicts very easily. To make one listen to another was very simple when the other person was proven stronger. While the third step was to battle to know one's ability better.

Of course, the process was with exception of Luo Yuan. Not only did he not have to undergo all the steps, he dominated the entire unit. Xu Zhiqiang got to know a little more about the situation within the unit from Luo Yuan. He was not surprised at all as he was an easy-going person. He had no trouble with the process and started to unbutton his shirt and prepare himself.

"Could he be an evolved human that transforms?" Fang Peibin said curiously, looking at Xu Zhiqiang as he prepared for the test. He was considered a transformer because as soon as he unleashed his power, his body morphs along with it. If he did not take off his shirt, it would be destroyed when it happened.

"Maybe, or he could be an energy-based evolved human!" Li Dong exclaimed. "the Vice-Captain should definitely know."

"You guys watch out for yourselves. I'm not revealing any information to you." Luo Yuan declared and said no more.

Since Xu Zhiqiang arrived, the frequency of hallucinations caused by the four-dimensional mark on his forehead increased by ten-fold. Initially, the hallucinations would occur every half an hour or so, but now it appeared every few minutes. Especially when Luo Yuan was looking at Xu Zhiqiang, there was no stop to



the hallucinations.

He had yet to transform himself. Once he did, nobody could tell what would happen.

Xu Zhiqiang took off his sweater and showed off his ripped muscles. Then he took off his pants and shorts till the only thing that remained was his underwear. He was a little embarrassed. After stacking his clothes neatly in a pile, he walked outside and stopped when he was a hundred meters away.

"What is he doing?" Xie Junhui asked, his eyes focused on the new recruit in the distance. He was puzzled.

His thoughts were interrupted by a loud thud! The thud was sounded like the release of extreme power. There was dust that rose high from the open space a hundred meters away. The sound was deep and could have been a colossal beast, it seemed to shake the entire space. It was hard to imagine that the sound came from the human being that stood there.

Then, Xu Zhiqiang started to transform. The muscles in his body were like roots in trees, his black blood vessels were thickened and bulged. They were showing and crawling on his skin like giant earthworms and a terrifying beast's aura was exploded out of him. Initially, everyone was shocked when they saw but they were not disturbed by the discovery and paid close attention.

In less than a second, his 190 centimeter tall body had grown more than three meters tall. A moment later, he was seven meters

tall! Flesh and bones were not growing out of his body, instead, they appeared to have manifested out of thin air as he wrestled with his transformation. Luo Yuan who had his four-dimensional vision could feel everything. Ever since he started his transformation, the hallucinations in his head were going haywire. It was dark but now it was so bright that it was stinging his eyes. Even the plasma band was not able to able to cover the hallucinations.

The hallucinations were crystal clear. He saw the colors change in waves within his mind. It made him feel like he was staring straight into the sun. At that moment, Xu Zhiqiang stood more than 15 meters tall. That was his height he was when he transformed the last time, but now he was still growing. The cement road that was flattened by the excavators could not hold his weight anymore, and his feet were sunk into the ground. Five seconds later, his transformation was complete. He stood up slowly. The air surged at his movements which cause a strong wind to blow. Sand was flying everywhere around a monstrous black giant who was 27 meters tall.

Compared to his gigantic body size, the loft which was three-storeys tall next to him was not even half his height. They were only up to his thigh, where they looked like toys around him. Luo Yuan was not surprised as he had seen Xu Zhiqiang transform before, but the rest who were seeing it for the first time were completely shocked.

Fang Peibin had his mouth wide opened. He then composed himself. "Isn't this cheating, how are we supposed to beat him?" he said. As compared to his previous height which was less than two meters, his transformation made it seem like he was cheating.

"Xie Junhui you go, your ability is more suitable to tackle him."

"You can do it, don't worry we are only learning from each other." Li Dong encouraged the same thing.

Xie Junhui hesitated and said, "I will try."

Luo Yuan looked at Xie Junhui in curiosity. He had just joined the team not too long ago, and he had never formed a team with anyone on a mission. He was always a lone ranger. Moreover, he had hardly observed Xie Junhui in training so he did not know anything about his ability and what he would do to tackle such giant beast.

"Brother Qiang, please show some mercy. My body can't even take a punch from you." Xie Junhui walked a few steps forward and shouted at Xu Zhiqiang who was a distance away. He was shaking.

"Don't worry, I'll try not to attack then?" Xu Zhiqiang said in a deep, thundering voice as the air shook with each syllable.

Two fists hit each other from two meters away. A loud thud echoed from them, the air nearby vibrated intensely. The force was terrifying, it was sufficient to smash a tank.

Xie Junhui then walked a few meters closer, putting him and the giant 20 meters away from each other. To Xu Zhiqiang, Xie Junhui

was tiny at his feet. Looking at his gigantic body that looked like a small mountain, he gulped, focused and waved his hand.

Luo Yuan who had been paying attention noticed that an invisible force appeared in the area. The force was more obscure than a magnetic field, it was hard to sense and barely there. Just because he recently had his Physique increased to +17 was he able to feel it and that was already him trying hard.

Although he had just felt the force, Xie Junhui had been using it since the beginning. With the help of a +2 Will attribute, he could use the force in battles especially for linear flying.

Luo Yuan had suspected it was a gravitational skill, but he was not sure. Now that both forces appeared upon him, he diverted his attention to the changes around Xu Zhiqiang.

He was incredibly fast. In the eyes of an ordinary person, he could move a great distance within the blink of an eye and it was tough to keep up with him. However, with Luo Yuan's +16 Agility, he could see everything clearly.

As Xie Junhui released his power, and the forces around him crashed together with a similar gravitational energy from the opposite direction. Suddenly, Xu Zhiqiang lost his balance and collapsed to the ground in a terrifyingly loud boom. Xie Junhui had been thrown back from the release of his power. The neutralization of the forces did not take long. In less than one second, the forces around Xu Zhiqiang were back to normal.

Xu Zhiqiang stood up clumsily. He made a massive hole in the ground. He asked in his thunderous voice, "What kind of ability was that. It is really strange."

"Gravity" Xie Junhui answered, confidently. "Although, that's not the only power that I have. If you were to really fight me, I can carefully hold myself!" he continued while scratching his head, but he then hid within the crowd to avoid a rematch. He was afraid that the giant would give him a punch.

It was gravity! Luo Yuan thought to himself. As a force that was everywhere in the universe, such power had great potential. It was way better than his Earth Stomp. Unfortunately, such control would require +2 of Will, a high cost to bear.

It was then that Luo Yuan, who was still perfectly fine, felt pain in between his eyes. He felt dizzy after that, and soon he was staring into the darkness, his mind completely blank. He could hear Wu Qianru screaming in his ears. Unsure of how long had passed, he opened his eyes. He was lying on the ground, a group of people had surrounded him.

"Master, are you alright!"

"Send Boss Luo to the hospital now!"

"Don't just stand here, I'll go find a stretcher!"

He shook his head and he looked lost. He felt extremely

uncomfortable which kept him on the ground and unable to stand up. There were two images in his head. One seemed to come from his subconscious mind, like a dream, while the other was the reality.

Theoretically, the two images could easily cause a stir in the thinking process where one was unable to differentiate which was fake and which was real. What surprised him was that both were running parallel to each other, without making contact.

He could clearly sense which was fake and which was real. One image was running before another at an interval of a few seconds. It was eye-opening for him, which made him thinking, could this be a...premonition of the future?

What was happening? What happened just now?

All he could recall was a pain in between his eyes and he passed out. Hearing what the people were saying and with him still lying in the dirt, he knew that he had passed out was not too long ago.

"The pain was in between my eyes!" he shouted. And then, he went silent. He had a bad hunch and launched his attributes panel immediately.

He quickly glanced at his natural ability, and he was shocked. His four-dimensional vision leaped from 2% to 5% when he passed out. That was still bearable for him as he had added Intelligence in the plasma band. It could withstand the force for a short period of them. What shocked him was the additional 'Four-Dimensional

Brain 1%' in his four-dimensional vision column.

"Four-dimensional Brain"

"Four-dimensional Depth: 1%"

"Effect: Foresight (2 seconds)"

"Remarks: The four-dimensional world is colorful. Ordinary people can't look at it with their eyes because they have simple brains. However, you who have the path of four dimensions opened for you, you're no longer a simple minded human."

Feeling the dizziness, Luo Yuan scowled in anger of what happened.

# Chapter 367: Rumor

---

Luo Yuan stood up with a solemn face.

It felt like a long time had passed since he fainted. He stood up swiftly. The time dimension that he and the rest were in was very different.

"Master, are you alright?" Fang Peibin said in concern.

"I'm okay. Enough standing around, go about your duties!" Luo Yuan said sternly while waving his hand.

Wu Qianru wanted to say something but she hesitated. Evolved humans seemed like they had invincible bodies and they could never get sick. Whenever there was something wrong, it was usually caused by a conflict of genes within them.

It could be insignificant, but if left unnoticed, there could be radical changes to one's body. Deformities and mutations were considered lucky occurrences. The worse cases would have the genes collapsing and there would be nothing any doctor could do as the current medical facilities had not advanced to handle gene abnormalities.

Wu Qianru was not the only one with that worry, the rest were thinking the same thing.

But what they did not know was Luo Yuan was undergoing a pain



that was a thousand times more unfathomable than the collapse of genes. It was a transformation from a human to a God, a level-up to the spatial dimension.

Ever since his four-dimensional vision was awakened, it was like a virus infected his body at an alarming rate. However, the process was not reflected outside the mind and no one noticed anything. But with every step, it was a risk he had to bear. One tiny mistake would kill him. Fortunately, Luo Yuan had a body that had surpassed all limits of a human being. Entering the fourth dimension alone could create chaos in his brain, freeze his neural impulses and kill him.

Xu Zhiqiang morphed back to his human form and ran towards him. "Boss Luo, what happened?" He asked.

Luo Yuan avoided eye contact with him as he knew it would stir his four-dimensional visions yet again. He forced a smile and said, "Just a minor setback, nothing major. I won't be having lunch. I'll get Fang Peibin to give you a little more insight about the unit."

"Master, you can count on me!" Fang Peinbin said immediately.

Xu Zhiqiang had seen Luo Yuan passing out earlier. He was beyond grateful at the fact that Luo Yuan was still making arrangements for him in his current condition. He said immediately, "Boss Luo, you take care of yourself, don't worry about me!"

Luo Yuan nodded and left the unit immediately. A while after he

left, Chen Xinjie rushed to the scene after hearing the news. Too bad when she arrived, Luo Yuan was already gone. She had missed him.

...

Instead of going home, Luo Yuan went straight to the desert he was at the previous night.

There was nobody there. He stood alone, surrounded by rocks. Standing in the desert made him think he was isolated from the world, and there was an indescribable sense of loneliness that gushed from within him. He let out a sigh. He did not expect Xu Zhiqiang's arrival to cause such a change to his physical being. It caught him off-guard.

The 5% four-dimensional vision was more than twice it was before. The image became clearer still, one layer of plasma band could not completely conceal it anymore.

He took off his shirt and the undergarment beneath it, uncovering his strong muscles.

He pulled out his Zhanmadao and slightly cut the bottom of his undergarment. After a series of sizzling hisses, a ring-shaped band was created. He put the band on his forehead.

He felt better clarity to his mind. The dizziness he had experienced earlier faded away. He was relieved and felt more at

ease. The effects of that plasma band were still there and he noticed that the prediction had not affected his Intelligence. The 1% four-dimensional brain did not seem to cause him any trouble. That was the only good news he had the whole day.

He thought about it carefully. If the 'prediction' was really handled by most of his human brain, even a +18 Intelligence would not be sufficient.

Time was a subjective concept for beings of the dimension. It was the embodiment that determined how the world worked. When the basic particle stopped moving, the world would freeze. Time would not matter anymore. By then, all thoughts would be frozen, and time would lose its purpose.

The prediction seemed to be related to time. In reality too, Time was the law of embodiment for all things in the world. Just like cloud computing before the apocalypse, the data analysis could predict the consumer's spending power, the world economy and even the market share. A powerful computer could show the trajectory of micro-particles in split seconds. It could even calculate the uncountable micro-particle patterns. As long as the computer was well-kept in a space without any risk of corruption, physical or internal, it could predict anything in the past or future. There would be no secret, as everything was fated.

Of course, Luo Yuan's prediction was far from being that complex, as he was only granted a two second prediction. But to predict something that crucial, even combining all computers and intelligence information before the apocalypse would not be sufficient. Instantaneously, that would also take an unbearable toll

on Luo Yuan's body.

Although it was only two seconds, the predictions could be life-saving in his time of need. In battles, he could use it to see what his enemy was planning to do before he reacted. Its power had boundless possibilities.

From his experience, Luo Yuan realised that changing the future was not entirely impossible.

Such predictions allowed him to predict current situations. When the current situation encountered were to change, the future would be altered too. When he was looking into the future, a slight change of mindset could bring a tiny but significant change in the future.

Most of his doubts were solved. Initially, his four-dimensional vision of no use to him and brought more problems than it did advantages. Now, with the transformation, the amazing power it had started to show.

...

The next morning, Luo Yuan went to the unit as usual.

He could feel that there was a change in the atmosphere. It seemed like everybody was staring at him. Of course, it was not the first time he had their attention like that, but this time, it was different. The people were filled with sympathy.

He walked into the office with a puzzled look on his face. Secretary Sun Yuting came in after him, respectfully knocking the door. She was making tea while spying at Luo Yuan out of the corner of her eye. As she was on her way out, Luo Yuan stopped her," What happened out there? Why is everyone looking at me like that?" he asked.

"I... I don't dare to say!" Sun Yuting said nervously, a panicked look in her eyes. As a secretary, even though she did not dare say anything, she had to answer him as her future was in Luo Yuan's hands. If she offended him, that was the end of her career.

"Don't worry, just tell me. I won't eat you!" Luo Yuan laughed to relieve the tension. He was curious, could it be Lin Feiyan bad-mouthing him again when he was away.

"They... They said you have some genetic disease, and it's... breaking out soon." Sun Yuting said hesitantly with her head down.

Luo Yuan laughed aloud and said, "What nonsense is that? It's ridiculous!" He thought that was funny. Soon, there was someone knocking on the door.

It was Chen Xinjie, and she looked very tired. Her dark eyes circles were apparent, it was obvious that she did not sleep well last night. She looked at Luo Yuan and a smile lit her face. "Are you alright?" she asked.

"You heard the rumor as well? I'm good." Luo Yuan said while waving his hand, gesturing the secretary to leave.

Sun Yuting left immediately.

Chen Xinjie did not believe what he said and her eyes turned red, "You don't have to hide from me. I heard you passed out yesterday?"

She did not look like she was acting. He felt the warmth from what she said, but at the same time, he was irritated because he did not know how to explain what had happened.

Furthermore, apart from Chen Xinjie, he had to explain to the many other people who were there too. He was increasingly annoyed with the idiot that spread the rumor.

## Chapter 368: A New Discovery

---

What puzzled Luo Yuan was that he had only passed out for a very short time, so why would the people treat him like he was dying?

Until Chen Xinjie explained what was said about the incident to him, only then did he understand the situation. There was another issue circulating about concern for him as an evolved human with possible gene abnormalities.

Being an evolved human was against the laws of nature. The increase of strength created the possibility of genes in the body not being able to function properly. It had nothing to do with whether the evolved human was powerful or not. The more powerful the evolved human was, the higher the chance of an outburst.

But, there was no sign of an outburst in Luo Yuan. An intense battle, a drunken night or even an exhausting day could cause the outburst, but none of it had happened to him. Furthermore, it did not only happen to evolved humans, but mutated beasts too and the ratio was quite steep. However, in a natural environment that was so cruel, such instances were rare as mutated beasts were a food source, and not studied for outbursts.

Luo Yuan emphasized again that he was alright and finally managed to get Chen Xinjie to leave. Not long later, Fang Peibin and the rest came to visit him. Looking at their gloomy faces, Luo Yuan was annoyed.

"Are you guys so free, is there nothing better for you to do? Get out!" Luo Yuan yelled at them before they could even say a word. They did not have to say what they wanted to say as Luo Yuan could predict it, without even using his vision.

Sensing a scary vibe from Luo Yuan, they scurried away immediately.

Luo Yuan was amused at their reaction. Looking at the closed office door, he chuckled. He was glad that they came to visit. Unlike the previous vice-captain who nobody cared about, he felt he had done a much better in his position.

Regarding the rumor, Luo Yuan thought there was nothing explain after hearing what Chen Xinjie said about the conflict of genes. Time would erase everything. Such outbursts were quick, the shortest being three days, and the longest being a week. By then, the rumor should disappear into thin air without him having to explain.

...

Soon one month flew by and it was the year 2016.

It was usually the coldest in January but the temperature was 40 degrees Celsius. But that was considered cool as compared to summer time when it could hit 60 degree Celsius! Unfortunately, such a chilly weather made the mutated creatures more active.



In a short period of time, there was an outbreak of mutated beasts in the reconstruction area. It was one of the biggest yet. They destroyed a town along the border. Although it only took three days to kill them all, it had caused major casualties in the reconstruction area.

Some of them escaped into the area which made it extremely tiresome for everyone in the unit.

Luo Yuan was no exception, he was running everywhere.

The mutated beasts were not of high levels. They were mostly below level five but there were just too many of them coming out of nowhere and no matter how many he killed, there was barely anything happening to his experience points. It was irritating to him.

Just when Luo Yuan was slaying a dog mutated beast which was frozen by his aura, there was message beeping in his head. Another mutated beast was more than 10 kilometers away.

Luo Yuan accepted the mission, holstered his Zhanmadao and stomped on the ground. He made a deep hole in the ground and his body shot forward like a shadow, a hundred meters away in one breath. He disappeared over the horizon.

Within the one month, Luo Yuan had adapted to his newly gained Agility. He could control his body perfectly. Compared to his skills before, his was significantly faster and much stronger. He moved at 0.4 seconds per hundred meters. For ordinary people, it

was hard for them to catch his shadow even without blinking.

...

Covered in blood, Luo Yuan returned to Hope City in the evening.

Within a day, he went across half of the reconstruction area and killed more than 20 mutated beasts. There was no sign of exhaustion on his face. Just when he arrived at the headquarters, Chen Xinjie came to him and said softly, "There's someone looking for you."

"Who?" Luo Yuan asked while taking off his bloodied shirt.

Chen Xinjie took the shirt from him, handed it to a unit member passing by as if it was nothing out of the ordinary. The both of them were close and occasionally, they would do favors like that for each other. People in the department had got used to that.

"Someone from the high committee!" she whispered.

The High, or Supreme Committee office was usually short during times of war. It was the highest administrative office in the reconstruction area. As compared to the highest administrative office during the era of peace, this department had even bigger rights where the military administration was concerned. It managed everything in the reconstruction area while the office beneath it performed only with the permission of the highest

committee during the war.

Luo Yuan paused and said, "Wait, let me change."

"Don't take too long." Chen Xinjie said. She was really nervous.

Luo Yuan nodded and walked into the bathroom in his office. He had a quick shower, grabbed some clean clothes, put them on and left.

Chen Xinjie was waiting anxiously at the door. Seeing Luo Yuan come out of it, she said immediately, "Follow me!"

She turned around and led the way. While Luo Yuan followed her, he tried to guess what could possibly be the purpose of the meeting. Soon, they arrived at their destination. He shook his head, clearing his mind. The truth would be revealed soon anyway.

Two military police were guarding the entrance of the corridor, but there was nobody around. Chen Xinjie stopped before the conference room corridor and said, "The high commissioner is in the conference room, I will not be part of the meeting."

Luo Yuan nodded, walked along the corridor and entered the conference room. He glanced inside to see two people seated inside.

One was young and looked unsettled. Luo Yuan assumed he was an assistant who was here for exposure, while the other person was

a middle-aged man with a military vibe about himself. He was the person in charge.

As Luo Yuan approached, both of them stood up. "Hi Major Luo, I'm Gao Yuanshan from the Information Division. It's an honor to finally meet you."

Luo Yuan shook hands with the middle-aged man, smiled and said, "I have been swamped with work recently, sorry for making you wait."

"We didn't wait too long! Let's cut to the chase. To avoid any possible disclosure of today's meeting to the public, please place all your electrical devices on the table." said the high commissioner.

Luo Yuan nodded. Looking at the situation, he knew what they were here for.

He obeyed and placed his personal messaging device and satellite phone on the table. The assistant took out a metal box from under the table. From the look of it, the box seemed to be made of lead. He opened the box, put the electrical devices in and closed it.

"I'm sorry Major Luo, to avoid any other possible threats, I'll need to do a body scan." the young man said.

"Understood, proceed!" Luo Yuan said. He did not mind.

The assistant took out a device and scanned Luo Yuan's body. He

then nodded to the high commissioner.

"Now we can talk in private." The high commissioner said. "Major Luo, I am sure you are aware of the extraterrestrial civilization. With such a high-level civilization in existence, cautiousness requires very serious considerations.

"So, I guess you have already witnessed their abilities?" Luo Yuan questioned.

"Unfortunately, until now we still don't have any direct evidence. But through meticulous investigation and images we received from the satellite footage, we noticed some signs. That's the reason why we have come to you."

"Keep talking." Luo Yuan said, a serious look on his face.

"After some comparisons with the satellite images, we noticed there was a sighting of artifacts on an island in the South China Sea. Although, in that same location a year ago, there was nothing there." The high commissioner took out the two satellite images from his briefcase and showed them to Luo Yuan.

One was then was a picture of a forest. There did not seem to be anything odd about it. While in the other picture, there was a small part of the forest that had been cleared. In its place was a dark, crescent shaped building which looked like a giant rock at first glance. The trees around it were taller than the others. The building was concealed and would have been easily missed if one did not look carefully.

"The building is 202 meters wide and 105 meters tall. We suspect that it is an outpost of the extraterrestrial civilization on earth!" The high commissioner said with a noticeable tone of anger in his voice.

# Chapter 369: Intensive Training

---

At that point, the reason why they were there became quite obvious. Luo Yuan was silent for a moment and said, "It's too risky, why me?"

The journey would take more than a day. The island was located in Borneo, which was a few thousand kilometers from the reconstruction area. He had to cross a thousand kilometers of deep ocean regions to get there. He was not sure how many terrifying mutated beasts he would encounter along the way. The worse part of it all was that he might have to probe into the extraterrestrial civilization to obtain first-hand information.

Now that he was almost invincible, most of the mutated beasts could not do him any harm. The wilderness and forest were deadly to ordinary people but they were nothing to him. However, he was still a human. If he was discovered by the extraterrestrial civilization, the consequences would pose a threat to his survival.

The atmosphere became tense. The high commissioner looked down and said, "Major Luo, you're the best that we have. You have years of experience surviving in the wilderness. You're strong and you have some knowledge of the extraterrestrial civilization. Most importantly, you can fly. The most crucial part of this mission is to carry out surveillance without detection so we can't use drones. With the exception of yourself, there is no one who can go on this mission. Of course, we know the mission is very dangerous. I'm here to ask for a favor, it's not an order. So if you decline the mission, we understand."

Luo Yuan was not surprised that the high commissioner knew him and the reconstruction area so well. He was sure such information was very easily obtained by a person in his position. Luo Yuan frowned while tapping his fingers on the table. After a moment, he said, "I don't understand why you, Sir, would decide upon such a dangerous mission. If I was discovered, the extraterrestrial civilization would find out that we know about them. The consequences could be disastrous."

"The war started a long time ago, we have no other alternative. The explosion of the fusion device was not an accident like it was reported, it was an attack!"

The high commissioner hesitated and continued, "Although we have no idea why the extraterrestrial civilization is hiding, there must be something that we are missing."

"Perhaps they are not strong enough, or they have some special purpose or perhaps they have some other unknown agenda. We are guessing even if they're exposed, the possibility of the war is not certain."

High commissioner's voice became deep and stern. "Moreover, they have shown signs of hostility. Compromising is not an option. With a 200 year gap in technology, they will not just sit there and wait for us! War will happen sooner or later. If we get more information about them, then there's at least a higher chance for us to defeat them and win. Even if we die, we will not go down without putting up a good fight."

Luo Yuan sat up straight, an indescribable sadness rose within



him. He was never a saint. He was just an ordinary person from the start. He would never sacrifice himself for someone else. Although he had saved and helped many people since the apocalypse, he would never risk his life to uncertain odds. Putting the faith of the human race in his hands was way too much. He could not imagine how terrible it would be if a war were to happen. The reconstruction area would be burnt to ash, no human would survive. The human civilization would be extinct. Even if he survived in the end, would he be able to live in peace, with the knowledge that he could have saved the humans?

...

During the days that followed, he did not go to the work. At night he went with the high commissioner's assistant to New Capital City on the underground train for intensive training sessions to prepare himself.

In modern civilization, information retrieval was a very serious matter, and it could not be mastered by just anyone. He would be taught how to investigate, hide and handle all sorts of emergencies.

During that time, Luo Yuan showcased his astonishing learning and memory skills. He surprised all the trainers, to a point, he could basically memorize everything he heard immediately.

The training eventually became pointless to him. Apart from some special techniques that required professional guidance, they sent him reading material for basic knowledge of the mission.

‘Must Know for An Information Personnel’

‘How to Be An Outstanding Spy’

‘The Art of Camouflage’

‘100 Ways to Build Traps’

‘Defects and Blind Spots of Artificial Intelligence’

"How to Sneak Into A High-Tech Secret Room"

...

Those books were considered acceptable, but they came along with a few unusual ones too.

‘International Thieves - Tricks Used In Crimes - An Encyclopedia’

‘Fugitive Report’

‘Prison Break’

‘100 Ways To Fight Back In A Trial’

...

In three days, Luo Yuan had studied more than 10 books. He did not just analyze the information, he memorized them too. However, that was just the beginning of his training, what happened next was the crucial part.

The mission was important to both the reconstruction area and the survival of human beings. No matter how much he prepared, it was not enough as there was no guide to winning the war and preserving the existence of human civilization. In reality, before Luo Yuan started training, many were against it. Not only the mission but also the fact that he had been chosen to be their savior.

Luo Yuan, as a civilian, was considered unfit for the mission. Encountering the extraterrestrial civilization that had technology that surpassed what was used on earth, even a mini camera could pose to be a threat to expose who he was. Therefore, no electrical devices were allowed on this mission. There would be no images or videos for analysis. Critical solving skills and rational judgment were the only way. Without expert level knowledge of science, one would find it very difficult to handle such a mission.

An ideal information retrieval specialist would be an all-rounded scientist, who was also strong, with the ability to survive in the cruel wilderness. The same person would also require the ability to cross oceans and the islands along the way. However, it was apparent, such a person did not exist. Luo Yuan's stunning learning ability was a surprise to everyone. It felt like he was back in high school.

Metallurgy, High Energy Physics, Quantum Mechanics, Genetics, Relativity, Thermodynamics, Number Theory, Geometry, Fluid Mechanics...

The subjects that would have driven a high-schooler crazy, but they were just the basics. Next, he would have to learn about some unidentified theories of mankind including conjectures and hypothesis!

Millions of books that represented the current civilization were forced into his head. Although Luo Yuan had Intelligence of +15, all the studying gave him a headache.

However, he was not going to abandon the mission. Instead, he worked harder and tried his best to understand all the advancements ever achieved by the human race. Perhaps one day if the civilization disappeared and he survived, he could use that knowledge to give life to a new one.

Time passed by, from the tiresome reading, his studies had now become interesting.

As his knowledge increased, he got used to all the reading, and his passion for the information allowed him to read faster and faster. Eventually, it only took him a few minutes to finish a book. There were not many books that confused him anymore. He could have just flipped through them, cross referenced and compared theories in his mind.

More than 10 bookshelves were emptied in a matter of days.

When Luo Yuan was getting the last book from the shelf, he realized that the shelf was empty. Suddenly, he felt disappointed and laughed at the thought.

Soon after, he walked slowly out of the library. An assistant from the high commissioner was waiting for him as he exited. She looked up when she saw him and gasped.

Luo Yuan had a pair of captivating eyes that were filled with intelligence and he exuded a vibe of a higher-order intellect.

# Chapter 370: The Power of Knowledge

---

Unsure if it was a planned coincidence, the assistant that met him was a beautiful lady. She looked like she was in her 30s, soft-spoken and had warm, kind eyes. During the month that Luo Yuan was there, no matter where he went, she would follow him.

From doing his laundry to making his bed, he was always greeted with enthusiasm with guaranteed assurance whatever he asked would be done to perfection. If Luo Yuan requested, perhaps, warming his bed could be done as well. Sometimes he would turn down her aid to his menial chores, but he would always give in after she insisted. But why would they send a woman like that to care for him? Did he look like a boy who needed love from a mother? He felt an odd vibe coming from the reconstruction area.

Earlier, he had used his abilities on Chen Xinjie. Whether or not what she told him about her family or the tactics that were used by the reconstruction area based on his weakness were true, he knew everything. That made him furious.

Now, they attempted to trick him again!

This time, Luo Yuan chose to punish her. One month went by, he did not even utter her name. He glanced at her and walked towards the door like she did not exist. He took out his satellite phone and spoke out loud to be sure she'd hear him, "Hello, is this Jiahui? I'll be back in two days... Nothing much... Life here isn't bad at all..."

There was an invisible electromagnetic wave that shot up to the

sky via the phone antenna. He looked at it and jolted. His advanced Physique had given him unimaginably sensitive senses where he could observe energy that could not be seen by the naked eyes. As it turned out, it included radio waves that were like webs in the sky, higher frequency waves such as microwave, as well as infrared and many other electromagnetic waves. He could even see the geomagnetic field that surrounded the earth and a little bit of gravitational field too.

Before this, such an ability was nothing to him as he would roughly know what it was but had no knowledge of its advantages and effects. It was like having a treasure right under his nose but he did not have the proper tools to excavate them, which made it redundant. However, after he had gone through the training which filled him with the wonder of knowledge, everything changed. His vision widened and everything became crystal clear.

When he noticed the communication radio waves, the Principle of Communication techniques came to his mind. Through vibration in the eardrums, radio waves would trigger the fluctuations of a signal's current and load the electrical signal before sending the electromagnetic wave to the receiving party. Vibration triggered current signal fluctuations, and then the electrical signal loaded on the electromagnetic wave was launched it forward. Of course, there were encryptions in between them.

While he was talking on the phone, he observed the change in frequency of the radio wave carefully. It was based on the information encrypted by the Fourier transformer with an algorithm of Advanced Calculus. It was not difficult for him to solve. All he had to do was to change some constants and filter out the useless messages.

His +15 Intelligence allowed him to think at lightning speed. Within a few seconds, he managed to break the encryptions and get to the root of the message to compare the results. A few seconds later, he hung up the phone and kept it in his pocket.

The radio wave signal that was cut off was connected again within 0.1 seconds with his Will. Ordinary people would not be able to see that. Waves that were loading his messages in different frequencies were sent to Huang Jiahui's mobile phone via the satellite. After chatting for awhile, Luo Yuan disconnected the signal!

He turned his head and looked around. It seemed like he had found a new toy, his eyes sparkled with curiosity.

A massive amount of signal waves appeared in front of him. They were complexed and entangled with each other. Those were conversations, a variety of confidential messages, right before his eyes. They were just laid out, allowing him to browse through as he pleased. If he wanted to, he could talk to anyone at anytime. And at the same time, he could terminate the signals with just a thought.

The assistant who was assigned to him by the high commissioner was following him as always. She did not make a sound at all. She was not paying attention to what he was doing, and she was not aware that he could now access to any information in the reconstruction area with the invisible waves available to him.



Of course, via the wave signal, what he could retrieve was limited. Ever since they discovered the extraterrestrial civilization, all confidential documents were not sent by signals anymore but instead, it was handwritten and delivered.

Luo Yuan walked for awhile and stopped. He said to his assistant, "Get me a train ticket, I'm going back to Hope City today."

"But... But I was not informed about such an arrangement by my superiors," she said, hesitantly.

"No buts. I will be going back to Hope City for a month. If anything comes up, you can find me there." Luo Yuan waved off her pleas and insisted.

"This... I'll have to inform my superior." The assistant said in fear.

The assistant stepped aside and took out her phone. Her curvaceous figure caught Luo Yuan's attention for a moment, but soon he looked away. Temptations were everywhere, Luo Yuan thought to himself.

A month without sex started to affect him. Any slight form of temptation would be enough to seduce him. That was one of the reasons why he was eager to go home.

A minute later, the assistant hung up the phone, "The minister has agreed, but I will have to follow you as they need to know your

whereabouts and activities at all times. There might be new training modules scheduled!"

Even without her telling him, Luo Yuan had 'seen' the details of the phone conversation. It was accurate.

Now that the reconstruction area had their full attention focused on him, the pressure was on his head as well as the management. For the mission, no mistakes were allowed so such a request was deemed reasonable.

Luo Yuan hesitated but he did not reject her. He said, "Sure, but where will you be staying?"

"If possible, the best would be... your house!" she answered.

Looking at Luo Yuan's frown, she said immediately, "You don't have to worry about your family. We will talk to them and won't cause you any trouble. If you think that's inappropriate, we can get another male assistant to follow you."

"Nevermind, it'll settle for you then!" Luo Yuan said. If they really assigned him a male assistant, no fun would come of it. At least this assistant was pretty, and at her worse, he could consider her his nanny.

...

In the afternoon, both of them took the train to Hope City. It

took them another half an hour to walk to his house. True enough, Huang Jiahui and Zhao Yali did not mind the additional, beautiful assistant to their household. They were nice to her on the surface, but nobody knew what was going on in their scheming minds.

It was a different story for Wang Shishi. She did not lower her guard around her.

"Boss Luo, how long will she be staying here?" She pulled Luo Yuan over and said softly while holding his arms tight.

"Not too long, maybe one to two months," he said.

Looking at her pouting and unhappy, Luo Yuan laughed and said, "Don't be jealous, she's just here for work."

Hearing what Luo Yuan said, Wang Shishi was relieved. She continued, "I'm not jealous, I just think that this person might have bad intentions. I'm worried for you!"

# Chapter 371: The Earth Fountain

---

During the night, at the peak of his starved libido over the last month, Luo Yuan was a beast. He managed 3 rounds with his beautiful companions, and laid his sword repeatedly upon the 3 ladies, satisfying their lust for him, and sapping their juices as his reward. Their suspicion of his disloyalty to them was long gone by the time he finished. He had to prove to them that he remained true to his Chastity and had not been seduced in the one month of their absence.

...

In the early hours of the next morning, Luo Yuan got out of bed quietly. He put on his clothes and walked out to the underground city, with his Zhanmadao in hand.

The sky was still dark, and there were only weak beams of light that came from two factories that were operating all day and all night.

There were no street lights in this underground city as it was said that the light might attract mutated animals that attack the city. Also, energy resources were limited and as the street light was deemed unnecessary, the energy could not be wasted.

Luo Yuan inhaled the cool fresh air mixed with the pollution of industrial waste gases. He sneezed as the smell of the air was too pungent. His spirits were elevated from the release he had the night before and he felt like running. He took off in a run as fast as

lightning and stirred up the atmosphere, causing a sudden fierce wind behind him.

Ever since his floating sportswear was damaged, the surrounding airflow was violent and extraordinary powerful against his skin whenever he sprinted.

Normal people had nothing to worry about when it came to air resistance at the speeds they traveled. But he was running at close to the supersonic speed and the density of air was close to a liquefied state. Every step forward consumed a large amount of energy. Since he was reaching his maximum speed, it had become increasingly difficult for him as the air resistance increased for every meter increase in velocity.

He knew that in order to overcome the barrier, his Strength and Agility would have to be at least three to four times stronger and faster. The influence of buoyancy in the air was considered as well. He could make use the atmospheric pressure to balance himself against the forces of buoyancy by lowering his body close to the ground as he sprinted.

However, humans were not flawless beings or adjustable like machines. They were not able to perform the ideal motion that would perfect the theory of fluid dynamics like what an F1 race car could do. He needed to observe the surroundings and pay attention to the geological terrain of the areas as he ran. If his body was lowered too close to the ground, it would be even harder for him to run.

If no equipment was able to balance the airflow like the floating

sportswear he had, or an increase in Will, he predicted that his maximum speed limit would only be at subsonic speed.

Of course, this was just applicable to long-distance running. It was still possible for him to burst into an all out explosive sprint, anytime he wanted if he needed to.

...

About 10 minutes later, Luo Yuan had arrived at the Gobi Desert which he had already visited a few times. This was a place where no one would disturb him and it had become his personal training ground.

This time, he did not come here for the usual saber training skills.

Since he came back from New Capital City, he had a thought that kept crossing his mind. At the time it occurred to him, he did not have the time to examine it properly. As soon as he had cleared his mind of sexual thoughts, he felt more at ease and ready to pursue his theory. The thought that was initially brief, had gradually become clearer to him over time. That was why he could not wait any longer and came over to test his theory on his own before dawn.

After he had become an evolved man, Earth Stomp had always been his most powerful ability. He even considered it to be his ultimate skill.

As he grew stronger, Earth Stomp was no longer essential. After he realized that he had the ability to self-heal through Will and that it was even more effective in battle, Earth Stomp almost seemed useless to him.

Luo Yuan was an evolved man more in name than in reality. Perhaps it was his additional six points in Physique that really brought out Luo Yuan's true identity as an evolved man.

He had never thought about the extent of the true ability, and also did not have a clue of what it meant. He knew he was strong but rarely had any use for power beyond his usual capacity. He never knew what would happen if he further improved his ability without knowledge of his power.

The return from this trip to New Capital City was fruitful. The knowledge gained was merely the tip of the iceberg. It provided him with a wider field of vision and an open mind to all sorts of possibilities. An intelligent barbarian was still a barbarian, yet an elevated field of vision and an enhanced level of thinking could really define one's ability.

He might have gained some insight but from a different point of view, he felt he did not make a breakthrough and remained the same as he was before.

...

Wisdom could always generate great strength with minimum efforts.

Mechanical waves were propagated through vibration. Earth Stomp was one of the mechanical waves that transferred its energy through the movements in the earth. It was like when a stone was thrown into a lake, it created a continuously expanding circular ripple.

The attack was made with the power of Earth and it was intense and potent. However, the damage in an area like the desert was not as impressive as he thought it would be. With the energy was spread over a large area, it dissipated without estimation of how deadly the force might have been.

It would, of course, be deadly if he were to confront a low-level mutated beast. But the beast that threatened Luo Yuan now was those that were at level seven or more. These beasts were gigantic and their bodies were almost hundreds of meters long. The Earth Stomp could no longer harm them.

But if he could centralized the waves, he thought, it would definitely unleash a terrifyingly powerful skill.

It was as difficult as if a stone was thrown into a lake but had created water columns instead of circular ripples and these water columns must not be created randomly. The position must be controlled precisely, otherwise, it would be useless for an attack.

It was not until that moment he discovered that possibility, did he get an idea to solve his problem.



...

He gradually lowered his heart rate and entered the state he had to be to generate the Earth Stomp. He cleared his mind of all thoughts and held the darkness still. He looked stony and cold, with no expression on his face.

He could feel the movement of the Earth, its endless energy like how it always was. It resembled a volcano that was on the verge of eruption.

He fully exerted his aura and his eyes shot back in his head. The air surrounding him had instantly become motionless. He was exuding a horrifically powerful energy as if the entire space was covered by an invisible force field. The fine grains of sand and stones on the ground started to shake vigorously and levitated slowly.

Meanwhile, there was a static electrical force building in the area like growing inferno. It seemed like he owned the entire desert as various types of energy lingered in the area under his control.

He was granted a memory boost and inspiration points after he had upgraded his Saber Specialist to 7 points. He could now feel it all starting to grow after months of training.

In a matter of moments, Luo Yuan calmed his thoughts and everything around him subsided. However, it still felt like the storms were getting stronger in the silence.

Luo Yuan relaxed his mind and moved to raise his leg to walk forward. All of a sudden, the ground shook beneath his feet, like an earthquake, and the whole ground cracked and split in half! With caution, he laid his foot back on the ground.

The land masses and trees flew up to five or six meters high in the air. Not far from the ground of the Gobi Desert, a rock formation that was at least 10 meters high was completely destroyed and obliterated to just a few rocks on the ground.

Luo Yuan stood still and meditated to still his racing heart.

"This trial did not succeed, but it wasn't a failure. The rock formation in the Gobi Desert that had collapsed had proven that the power could be harnessed, controlled and directed for destruction. Unfortunately, he had not mastered the control and most of the energy was wasted."

"This trial must be continued."

The Gobi Desert had stayed flat and undisturbed for thousands of years but, it had been destroyed by Luo Yuan's with that powerful thought.

Numerous notions flooded his mind. "Will is too weak to have total control over such immense energy. As long as the seesaw effect can be demonstrated, I don't need full control over Will."

"The power of Will could only be exercised when the energy is

released. It had nothing to do with his own strength. This could be one of the ways to avoid too much of energy being wasted and reduce the use of his Will!" He looked at another rock as the thought played on his mind.

Subsequently, with every trial, he tried to adjust and reduce the amount of energy he released to his surroundings. Soon, he finally mastered the perfect way to control his power and he had completely cleared the area around him with each trial.

Ultimately, he raised his head aiming at the highest and largest rock formation that was about 50 to 60 meters away. It looked like a small mountain and was 50 to 60 meters high with a diameter of about 100 meters across.

With his sharp eyes, he focused at the point of attack. He raised his leg and stomped down hard with mastered intent!

...

Bang!

Dust shot everywhere like a shock wave. But other than that, no vibration was felt on the ground. Luo Yuan glanced around and saw that the Gobi had exploded, sending billows of smoke into the sky.

The rock formation which was insanely heavy weighed approximately 70,000 to 80,000 tons. Despite it being his full force

exerted on this rock formation, only dust and some small stones from the outer layer had fallen. The rock formation was able to sustain the damage from the shock waves.

He was not disappointed as he had expected that outcome.

He was satisfied as he could still somewhat cause a little bit of damage on the small mountain. Besides a speedy dash, the Earth Fountain could now cause a deadly high-frequency vibration. He could imagine the effects of such an attack on level seven mutated beasts when they had to confront him as mere flesh and bone!

...

It had been an hour and the sunlight was breaking through the night to bring forth the dawn. Luo Yuan frowned as he felt exhausted and had to get out of the state of the Earth Stomp to conserve energy for the journey home.

The Earth Fountain was only one of his tentative plans. There was a lot more waves could be manipulated to do, such as create resonance and superpositioning. To examine all of them, he would need more time.

The former required the gaining of insight into the ground's frequency. Every Earth Stomp would be regarded as one vibration. Through the formation of a sequence of stomps, he could bring forth a pattern of resonance, and trigger an earthquake. The Earth Stomp was based on the combination of the frequency of the Earth's crust, mantle, and core. It would require a very detailed

analysis of the geology, thickness, and topographical structure of the area he was at before performing the attack.

Of course, even that he had gone completely mad with rage, it would be impossible for him to cause a shock at will on the earth by forming resonance through the frequency of the Earth Stomp.

This was because to the Earth's crust consistently had a different frequency and would absorb all the energy before resonance was formed if he did not have a feel for the frequency beforehand.

He would only be capable of applying shock on a small region depending on the variability of the earth's crust, with the circumference of either a few kilometers or hundreds kilometers.

He wanted to try again but the crust plates of the ground were already relatively weak. A minor magnitude earthquake aftershock still rumbled beneath. He might have triggered a full-on earthquake if he had generated resonance here but he put the thought out of his mind as it would have been tiresome to try escape.

He was unable to clearly identify the speed he needed for superpositioning a wave, the latter option, even though he had 16 points for his Agility. The frequency of Earth Stomp was incredibly high as it would vibrate each stomp at over thousands of times per second. When the vibration was at its peak, the duration of each wave was approximately 0.1 seconds and the level of energy would fall rapidly. In order to be even stronger, he had to make two attacks in a row in a short period of time. The most difficult part was that the power of the Earth Stomp must coincide with each

other. The wave crests and also the trough must coincide with each other.

Besides, to make two consecutive attacks would certainly make them even more difficult to control and maneuver to his Will.

He knew he had to upgrade his Agility so that he would be able to handle this. The advantage of superpositioning was that as long as he was able to keep up his Agility and control the flow of energy, the force of the wave created would be limitless as he could increase the number of times of the superpositioned Earth Stomps until he was satisfied with it.

# Chapter 372: Agricultural Culture - Cultivation Area

---

In the days that followed, Luo Yuan visited the Gobi Desert more often to practice the Earth Fountain. He woke up before dawn to begin, and he returned home as soon as the sun came up.

At his level, the duration of each battle lasted only a few moments. It could have been a few seconds or even less than a second, to a point that all ordinary people would see were blurs of attacks and blood, followed by death and destruction.

But, it was almost impossible to execute a massive attack, like the Earth Fountain in high-speed battles. If he wanted to use the attack in such a fight, he would have to train tirelessly until he could produce the attack without a second thought.

Luo Yuan spent the rest of the time at home with his family to recuperate.

He did not know if the mission to come would be his last, and what life would be like if he would never get the chance to come home again. Even now, he had no idea what was happening outside his surroundings. He had not ventured beyond his home and training ground a long time, and even longer still since he left the forest. What if the dangers outside had not awaited his time of training, and grew worse by the day?

Ever since he came to the Reconstruction Area, he had only been to the wilderness a few times. He had only been to a distance of at

most 500 to 600 kilometers away. To be more accurate, those places that he had reason to be. The entities further on were much stronger. All their activities were recorded, closely monitored and documented.

The 'dragon' he had discovered earlier had been part of the records as well.

The nuclear weapons available at Reconstruction Area were limited and only sufficient for defense. Most of the top level mutated beasts usually had supernatural intelligence and they would never challenge others with nuclear arsenals. They had witnessed the power of nuclear weapons before and knew that a deterrent like that never ended well for anyone or anything.

It was a long journey for this mission. He had no idea how disastrous and dangerous the place would be and what terrified him the most was the knowledge he had of the top level mutated beasts. Furthermore, after it all, he would be encountering one of the most dangerous extraterrestrial civilizations upon his arrival.

He suffered and was under a lot of pressure, but he maintained a brave face when he was with his family.

.....

15 days later, Luo Yuan came back from Gobi Desert as usual. The officer who was usually still asleep at this hour, was awake and sitting up, awaiting his return.



"General Luo, I am here to inform you about the new training."

Luo Yuan nodded his head and answered coldly, "Lead the way!"

The officer, Wang Jing, had intentionally approached Huang Jiahui and Wang Shishi. These days, they spent most of the time together and were as close as biological sisters.

But, Luo Yuan and she were still like strangers, as he deliberately distanced himself from her.

.....

As both of them walked along the underground street, Wang Jing looked at Luo Yuan's face and suddenly bent her head and asked softly, "Do you hate me?"

"No, I don't!" Luo Yuan replied coldly and picked up his pace.

"Or is there anything that I did wrong!" Wang Jing asked again.

"Isn't this just a job for you? Stop asking questions." Luo Yuan said, the anger in his voice escaping with the fierce tone of his voice.

Wang Jing felt lost. According to the information provided to her, this soldier had an insatiable appetite for sex, and he lusted upon and was sought after by most women around him. She

believed it to be true as she saw the 3 women at his house. She now realized that it was not at all easy to seduce him.

Perhaps I am not the type of girl he liked? Wang Jing wondered.

Should I report this?

They remained silent as Wang Jing did not speak and Luo Yuan did not complain.

In a matter of moments, both of them had reached the 11th floor. The soldiers on duty checked their passes and allowed them through.

This was the place where they grew agricultural produce, as this was the main source of food for Hope City. For that reason, there was always a team stationed there to ensure it was safe and protected from any danger that sought to destroy it.

The Agricultural Produce Cultivation Area was brightly-lit and under the illumination of an incandescent lamp, were the growing lush colored plants that thrived. The growing crops were planted using the technique of soil-less cultivation. This method was clean and effective and at the same time. It could also prevent the breeding of mutated organisms in the soil that might threaten the plants.

The growth of the plants was influenced by the environment of the apocalypse, a land of decay and death. Although, within these

conditions, they grew luxuriously. They were harvested after 10 days and ready to sell at the market soon after.

All kinds of vegetables lay before Luo Yuan's eyes, the crops from a fresh harvest.

These vegetables were very different from those before apocalypse. There were many more new species discovered, with stronger genetic strains to allow them to grow faster and withstand the climate. Every one of them looked huge and juicy.

After walking for a few hundred meters, they saw groups of people were planting a kind of tuberous plants.

The branches and leaves were small but the tubers were as big as mandarin oranges. The tubers were filled with starch or what seemed to look like a glutinous powder. Luo Yuan had eaten a lot of food made of this powder and they were delicious. The glutinous powder was quite pricey and available with the welfare of the Sword Unit.

As they walked further, there were large areas of cactus plants lining their path. The cacti were huge and as tall as 11 to 12 meters off the rock wall. However, these were just the early stages of growth. The cacti would be well over hundred meters tall once matured.

The ground starch consisting of coarse fiber was what the people at Reconstruction Area would normally eat. Almost half of the crops here were these types of genetically altered plants.

A man who was wearing a military uniform came up to them when they were on their way. He greeted them respectfully. In his hands, he held a lead box.

They handed over their phones and other electrical devices and he put them into the lead box. The soldier used a device to check them again, saluted him and said, "General Luo, this way please."

Luo Yuan nodded and followed the soldier to a huge military tent.

"General Luo, please come in." The soldier standing right in front of the tent said.

Luo Yuan glanced around. He saw that the tent was heavily guarded as there were rows of troops at attention, stationed near the tent. He shifted his gaze and did not think any further. He believed that it was necessary to do so as the mission was of a highly confidential nature.

Luo Yuan had no fear. Even if they were planning a conspiracy against him, he was able to predict within two seconds ahead of time, so he'd literally be a few steps ahead of them.

Luo Yuan and Wang Jing walked side by side into the tent. The first thing they saw at the center of the tent was a model of a mountain. The entire model was around 20 meters long with a width of 17 to 18 meters. A building model of extraterrestrial civilization was located at the most central position.

There arose a heated debate among the soldiers.

It was apparent that the model was a hologram created with satellite imagery. The trees that were blocking the sight had been removed, roughly revealing the original topography.

"General Luo, you are here! We have been waiting for you. I am Yu Zheng, the staff officer from the Operational Intelligence headquarters, codenamed 125. I am here to explain the mission to you."

125? Operational Intelligence?

Luo Yuan immediately recalled from memory and understood that '125' was referring to the fusion device explosion that happened on the 5th of December the year before. "Thank you!" Luo Yuan replied when he returned to his senses.

# Chapter 373: Departure

---

As the date of his departure loomed closer, his training got more and more frequent and intense. He did not neglect even a single detail. Not only did Luo Yuan feel the pressure of the mission, even the Reconstruction Area was really tense.

Even though he knew how difficult the mission was, he knew time would not wait for him to be ready, regardless of how worried he felt.

Three days before his departure, a premium Honour Award ceremony was held at New Capital City. Only a small number of high profile guests attended the ceremony. Most of them were chancellors of the high council and members of the military service. Luo Yuan was promoted to the rank of Lieutenant general during the ceremony. At the same time, he was released from his duties as a Vice-Captain and appointed as the Vice-Minister of the unit.

The Vice-Minister was the highest position an evolved man could achieve in the unit. As compared to the previous two Vice-Ministers, he was seen as one of the most respected leaders in the Reconstruction Area. But, with all the awards bestowed upon him, his position within the office would only take place when he returned from his mission, alive.

After the ceremony, one of the officers led Luo Yuan to an underground warehouse. Both of them were asked to wear a protective hazmat suit before entering the warehouse.

The warehouse was very small with only 12 shelves. Each of the shelves was stacked with all sorts of rare treasures and a variety of weapons.

There was also thick glass cases protecting some of the high-order materials that emitted strong energy waves.

This lead-containing glass was used to isolate radiation emitted by those materials.

As Luo Yuan walked around the warehouse, he recognized that most of the weapons on the shelves were level seven weaponry, and some of them were level eight.

Basically, he knew each and every one of them from memory, as those were the weapons that Luo Yuan had seen before on the unit's intranet database.

To own a level eight weapon, he needed at least ten thousand counters. But now, he would be given whatever he chose, to the that he contemplated emptying the warehouse!

It was a matter of life and death to Luo Yuan and the Reconstruction Area. As long as it was within their capabilities, they gave not only the honor but every kind of benefit, generously.

"Please remove all the cases!" Luo Yuan said coldly, masking his excitement.

"Yes, General Luo!" The officer replied politely. He quickly stepped forward and flipped a switch. The system was immediately activated and the glass cases were all opened. The energy waves soon diffused and rippled through the air.

He evaluated the weapons and eventually picked up a long sword. The sword was black in color and had a shiny, sharp surface. It consisted of a blade and a handle. He gently waved the sword in the air, accommodating its weight and balance to his skill and expertise.

"Let's go!" Luo Yuan sheathed the black blade and moved toward the exit.

The officer quickly followed after him, surprised by his sudden instruction to leave. Suddenly, there was a crash behind them! It sounded like the shelves in the room, shattering. The officer spun around and realized that he had forgotten to turn off the switch to arm the security system, and had left the glass cases opened. The cases and shelves were broken into half.

He shivered as he glanced at the black sword that Luo Yuan was holding at the ready to kill, a dead stony expression in his eyes.

.....

The dinner before the day he was leaving was half an hour late.

The dining room was silent as the tense atmosphere petrified the



tongues of the people present. The sound of chopsticks hitting bowls echoed throughout the hall.

After Luo Yuan had finished eating, he sighed and said, "As you all know, I am in the process of secondment and I might only be coming home after a few months. Please take good care of yourselves and advise Shishi not to be reckless in my absence. Tell her to seek help from Fang Peibin or Chen Xinjie from the Sword Unit if she encountered any problems."

"Brother Luo, when did I act recklessly?" Wang Shishi whined with a pout.

He stared at her and recalled how Sun Youde died.

"I will take good care of your family." Wang Jing responded to assure him.

He felt relieved to have Wang Jing to look after his family as she was a representative of the high committee. Luo Yuan nodded and said, "That's good."

Luo Yuan's nod of approval overwhelmed Wang Jing and she was stirred as Luo Yuan had always been cold to her.

Huang Jiahui lost her appetite as she heard what Luo Yuan was saying. She was worried and couldn't let him go. She even forgot to think about Chen Xinjie who was obviously still an inexperienced girl. "Can't we go along with you?" She asked.

"The mining area is too dangerous. If you come along with me, I will not be able to concentrate, and be consumed by worry about you." This was just an excuse to keep everything confidential and also avoid his family any worry about his safety.

"I will not be able to take care of you as I will be away searching the mining area every day. It will be better for you to stay here. Perhaps when the area is less of a risk, I will be home in a month or two."

"You have to take care of yourself then. Remember to call home at least once every day!" Zhao Yali said as she stifled a sob.

Luo Yuan and Wang Jing exchanged glances with one another. "The mining area mines Magnetite and phone signals will have severe interference. I don't think he can make phone calls there, but he can write us letters. Mining areas will normally be equipped with courier services." she explained to Zhao Yali.

Those letters were of course not written by Luo Yuan but some professional that could mimic Luo Yuan's handwriting. Wang Jing stayed here for almost a month and was really fond of the 3 girls. She believed that with her protective instinct for them, and her intelligence, she could keep the secret for Luo Yuan.

"What lousy place is that? He can't even make a phone call." Wang Shishi complained but did not say more as she knew it was the truth. "Don't forget to write letters to use at least once a week. You must write more than one letter, for each of us. We will miss

you and I will miss you the most!" Wang Shishi said with tears in her eyes.

Luo Yuan felt bad. Still, he forced a smile and said, "Don't worry. I will write letters every day."

It was a promise he could make because he was not the one who was going to write those letters! He almost smiled at the thought but composed himself in time.

After dinner, the women cleared the plates and cleaned the table. Although, Wang Jing did not help them. As they were going into the kitchen, she said softly Luo Yuan, "All of the equipment needed is already here. I placed them under my bed. When are you leaving tomorrow? I will pass them to you!"

"That would probably be 3 am in the morning," he told her. He hated to face the sadness of leaving and decided to leave quietly, in the dead of night.

"Alright!" Wang Jing replied and quickly headed to the kitchen.

Luo Yuan walked into Huang Jiahui's bedroom and started to prepare his luggage. All of his necessities had been prepared, and he only needed a few pairs of clothes to pack for himself. One of them was:-

"The Green Hidden Creature's Sharp Horn"

"Rarity: Light green."

"Additional Properties 1: Absorbs various energy waves"

"Additional Properties 2: Creates visual illusions"

He still had no idea about how the small horn created visual illusions, but its ability to absorb various energy waves was very valuable. Other than its Sensory Perception ability, it could also shield radio waves, infrared, and various types of energy waves. It was impossible for any existing technology on Earth to detect its presence even if it happened to appear right in front of its radar. However, no one knew its effect if it was brought to other civilizations.

He shifted his gaze from the small horn to the eyeballs of the soul eater mutated beast that was at the corner of the room.

He did not know why they started to shrink rapidly since he brought them home. They were initially as big as a basins but they were as small as a fists now. Its weight nevertheless remained the same as it was still 2-3 kilograms heavy. In addition to that, its density was close to the density of steel.

It was said to have the ability to assist in dream walking, the ability to enter dreams. Luo Yuan had tried it a few times and felt it was useless to him. Ordinary people's dreams were constantly changing and could only be passively viewed. The dream would end if there were any interactions.

However, it might be useful this time as it was used in the investigation of mutants.

At night, Luo Yuan looked at the clock and got out of bed quietly. Wang Shishi who was still asleep suddenly shivered as if she dreamt Luo Yuan was going to leave. She tightly grasped Luo Yuan's shoulder and muttered, "Brother Luo, please don't go!"

The feelings he had for Zhao Yali and Huang Jiahui was a gentle affection. As compared to Wang Shishi, she was so attached to him. Among the 3 of them, Wang Shishi depended on him the most.

Luo Yuan sighed and gently removed her grip from his arm. He put on his clothes and took his Zhanmadao that he had just synthesized yesterday. He opened the door quietly.

Wang Jing was awake sitting on the sofa. Looking at the red in her eyes, he knew that the woman who had always struggled to get out of bed did not even sleep last night, worried she might miss him before he left.

As soon as she saw Luo Yuan coming out, she stood up and said, "Your backpack is here. Check if there is anything else you might need."

She tried to stifle her yawn, but couldn't help herself. Still, she was glad she managed to stay awake there to see him before he left.

It was a multifunction backpack that was around a meter long and made of tough animal skin. It was a waterproof bag and not easily damaged. He opened up the bulging bag to check what was inside.

There were 5 sets of clothes and 2 leather-made tents. Luo Yuan was curious and inspected its quality. He was surprised that they were all a Light Green Level.

Also, there was 20 jars of salt, a small water purifier, 3 bottles of drinking water, a foldable pan, a shovel, a box of lighters, compass, waterproof map, and also 5 bottles of pesticides.

There were some other daily needs such as toothbrushes, toothpaste, towels, and also razors.

"There are some additional items that I might need, but everything that I need is here, for now. I got to go," he said, as he zipped his backpack.

"Most importantly, you have what you need." Wang Jing replied and changed her tone of voice, "General Luo, I wish you all the best!"

Luo Yuan nodded his head coldly and picked up his backpack and swung it over his shoulder. He opened the door and glanced at the living room for what might have been the last time. He then turned away and left with a heavy heart.

## Chapter 374: The New Zhanmadao

---

Luo Yuan left in the dead of the night, at 3 a.m. and headed toward the southeast. He passed the Qinghai province, Tibet, Sichuan, and Guizhou and finally, he arrived at Guangxi. He then flew across the sea and landed in Borneo.

It was indeed a long journey, but to him, he hardly felt the distance. His mind was preoccupied with the dangers to come.

Three hours later, as the sky brightened, Luo Yuan landed on Borneo island. His face was wet with the dew drops of the morning, and he wiped them away with his sleeve. A small worm dropped off a branch and landed on his face. He grabbed the worm and flicked it away.

The forest was humid as the dew had accumulated throughout the night. It felt like it was raining from the canopy high in the trees as the dewy wet leaves fell to the ground. He was all wet. He felt his skin get sticky to the touch and he felt very uncomfortable.

He started to feel the fatigue of his journey as he settled into a walk through the tropical jungle.

The rocks at the side of the road were covered with lichen and weeds. He scraped away the carpet of moss on the rock with his knife, leaving a shiny and smooth surface and leaned against it to recuperate.

As he sat there, he stared at the insects scuttled about around

him, and lost himself to the calm feeling he saw in their mindless patterns.

He looked at the time after what seemed like quite a while. Huang Jiahui, Zhao Yali, and Wang Shishi must be awake now. Perhaps they just realized he had left.

He hesitated, but then concentrated his Will to form wireless communication waves.

"I have departed. I am on my way. Everything is fine, do not worry."

Messages were delivered back and forth with the wireless comm. waves. Neither Luo Yuan nor the women could hear each other's voices as the messages were conveyed through the encoder.

"Alright, stop crying. Don't stress yourselves out. I have to go. Bye"

Luo Yuan ended the conversation and sat there quietly, allowing himself to miss them for a moment. He then got up and flew through the jungle. As he arrived at the city, it was shrouded by a thick layer of fog.

He gradually slowed down to have a look around, cautiously studying the area.

He found a clearing in the area and rested for half an hour before



he resumed his journey through the forest.

He would take short breaks at intervals as he dashed through the jungle, to reserve his energy. In the evening, it started raining, and a gloomy atmosphere settled upon him. The rain got heavier, and thunder roared in the distance.

Luo Yuan planned to continue moving through the night, but the bad weather forced him to stop and find shelter.

The forest got even more dangerous during the thunderstorm. Tall trees were natural lightning conductors. They were most susceptible to lightning and one could easily get struck by lightning when walking under or close to the tree. Luo Yuan observed his surroundings. The ground was surprisingly flat and barren. He concluded that it was a flatland that was cleared before the apocalypse for a civilization. Since there were no caves found to escape from enemies, the people would clear vast areas of land so that they saw predators at a distance, to allow them more time for countermeasures.

He then sensed that there were a few hidden caves under a few bushes. He chose one of the bushes that were slightly higher and uncovered it.

He was not worried if mutated beasts would have jumped out him, and crouched into the cave.

It was only 1.5 meters high. He needed to duck low when he entered the cave. The cave got smoother as soon as he passed by a

thick layer of soggy dead leaves. There was a great deal of hardened soil on the walls of the cave. The wall looked solid and he had no worry of the cave collapsing on him in the night from the thunderstorm outside.

But, he had a bad feeling about the place. There was no trace of any living organisms in the cave. The smell of mutants beasts was almost non-existent. He thought that it might have been a long time since any living thing, human or mutants, had survived in the area. They probably died or moved to escape the horrors of the place. Abilities were always the key to survival. With the death toll on a rise, it was normal for the deaths of ordinary beings to be occurring every few seconds. Mutants or enhanced beings had an upper hand at the time of the apocalypse.

He continued to walk for another 20 to 30 meters deeper into the cave and reached the central area within it. He felt better as the area here was slightly larger and he could straighten up. He stretched in an attempt to get rid of the slight ache he had started to feel on his back.

Despite there not being anyone here, he found remnants of civilization in the area.

The cave was paved with a larger number of soft dead branches that Luo Yuan would have guessed was a bed of sorts. He could not set up his tent in the area as the cave was large, but not big enough for it. Anyhow, he still decided to spend his night there.

The nights were freezing cold. Although he could not stand the cold as he slept on his ice cold bed of leaves, he was glad as long as

there was a place for him to sleep. He did not mind that the floor was wet, hard and muddy too.

To him, he felt the place was clean enough and that was what satisfied him the most. There were no disgusting corpses or carcasses with pungent bones left to rot.

Perhaps the previous tenant of the cave was a vegetarian, or a herbivore if it were a mutated beast. If not, the owner must be really careful not to have brought food that had the odor of blood on them to avoid attracting other mutants. But, with knowledge of this, Luo Yuan knew that it was not a strong being, and he could easily kill it if it came back.

...

The rain got heavier and was starting to stream into the cave. Luo Yuan glanced at it and decided not to bother as he was comfortably off the ground on his bed of leaves. From his experience in jungles of this kind, he knew the storm would not last long.

He studied the map that he retrieved from his backpack. It was not a regular map. Instead, it was a high-resolution satellite map. Since the fall of civilization, he knew the city would be completely covered with vines and moss. So, it made no difference even if he owned a normal cadastral map.

The satellite map was two meters long and wide. It was printed on a thick, special kind of water and fire proof paper. It was

extremely tough and normal people would find it impossible to tear.

At night went on, the forest became darker and darker. The dim light was blocked by the bushes and obstructed by the winding cave. It was extremely dark at the center of the cave. In this darkness, Luo Yuan's pupils dilated, which made his eyes appear completely black. He could still see a little in the dark as there was a weak beam of light that illuminated the space.

"It seems like I am now in the region of Qinghai. If I maintain this speed, within 10 days I should be able to arrive at Guangxi." Luo Yuan thought to himself.

He would reach in less than three days if he were to run at full speed. But, seeing as to what might be awaiting him there, he was in no rush.

Running a short distance at the Reconstruction Area was totally different as running long distance outdoor. The former was relatively safe to run at his full speed but the latter was rather dangerous. Every two to three hours Luo Yuan would rest to recover his Strength. He had to conserve most of his energy so that he could protect himself from danger.

Furthermore, he had to be more alert as the terrain was getting rather complicated. He slowed down and maintained his movement at a speed of 70 to 80 meters per second.

...

He folded the satellite map, placed it back into his backpack and lay on the leaves.

The sound of rain as it poured outside was deafening in the silence of the cave. He stared into the darkness of the ceiling and started to feel lonely. He had just left home a few hours before and he already missed the city and the people.

He wished he had a companion on the dangerous journey ahead. There was no trace of the human existence the whole time he was traveling, only mutated beasts moved about around him. He could not describe the feeling of loneliness. It was as if he was the only human living on the post apocalyptic earth he knew.

Luo Yuan sat up as he felt that the atmosphere was getting more and more humid. He walked around the cave and found that the ground was all wet and muddy.

"F\*ck!" Luo Yuan cursed. The land was too flat here, the water streaming in had stagnated in the center of the cave. The water level had risen to about 20 centimeters. I should have walked further to look for a better one, he thought to himself.

He walked out of the cave with his belongings and got soaked by the thunderstorm outside. The pouring rain fell through the leaves, right on his face. He wiped away the raindrops, squinted his eyes and looked around. He could not find a large rock that could block the rain from entering the cave.

He then had an idea. The trees around him were massive, with diameters of around 2 meters. All he needed was a well-shaped piece.

He took out his Zhanmadao and headed toward the nearest tree.

His Zhanmadao that was initially white in color had turned black. It radiated a mysterious aura when he unsheathed. When rain splashed on the body of the saber, it merely slides right off the blade without as much as a watermark and fell to the ground. The knife was dry as if no rain had spattered on it at all.

"Space Cut Zhanmadao."

"Materials: 165cm of alloy; nails of a Clawed Turtle"

"Rarity: Light Purple"

"Weight: 31 kilograms"

"Power: ??????"

"Equipment Requirements: Strength (16)"

"Additional Abilities 1: Attack Speed +4"

"Additional Abilities 2: Sharp Cuts (passive) - Easily cut through any materials, even atoms (Advanced effect)"

"Remarks: A sharp Zhanmadao that contains subtle space energy."

...

The new Zhanmadao had been upgraded to level eight after merging with the level eight black blade, but he did not notice much of a difference. His Zhanmadao combined with his skill was powerful enough for him and deadly to anyone that dared oppose him. Although, the benefits from the upgrade were his range of attack, as well as the sharpness of his blade which greatly improved, and its Will complimented his own more readily. The attributes of the black knife were astonishing, even Luo Yuan was amazed.

In addition to that, the new Zhanmadao now had 2 secondary effects. It could even be regarded as a spiritual weapon.

The first effect was that it could now perform extraordinary slashes through space. A wavy light appeared on the body of the knife due to the refraction that occurred when it was used.

The next effect was way scarier. The blade could add an extended, invisible form of itself, increasing the range of attack to cover up to 4.5 meters

However, it would take some time to get used to.

Luo Yuan knew that gravity could warp space-time as well as smoothening the waves in space-time. These were the two ways space slashes could be defended against.

His Will was powerful and could resist almost any kind of cut and attack since the difference between normal and space cuts were not that significant.

Putting the force of the gravity aside, nearly none of the substances could resist its power. The new Zhanmadao was terrifying.

...

Luo Yuan chopped down the tree with just one swipe.

After a few seconds, the gigantic tree leaned on the tree next to it, cut clean away from its base.

Luo Yuan chopped off one meter from the initial cut tree and slide off fell to the ground. He then used his Zhanmadao to shave and shape the piece accordingly and placed it at the entrance of the cave to cover it.

Luo Yuan found a cave a little way off, blocked the entrance with the tree trunk and sealed the edges of the entrance with mud to prevent a water leakage.



The new cave was at least 60 centimeters above ground level. Regardless of how heavy the rain was it would not make it into the cave.

Luo Yuan relaxed, lay down and drifted off to sleep.

# Chapter 375: Sound Waves

---

The next day before the sky cleared, Luo Yuan was already wide awake.

In truth, he did not sleep well last night because he had not ever slept in a mutant cave with a thunderstorm raging outside. Moreover, he could not get a wink of sleep as the air was filled with the buzzes, chirps and the occasional roaring sound of beasts of the jungle.

Luo Yuan put on his clothes which had been soaked earlier. The jacket was made of a low absorption material, thus, even though he dried it out when the night was cool, his clothes were all dried by the time he was up in the morning.

He stepped out of the cave and it was still dark. Fortunately, a thick layer of humus on the forest floor had absorbed the rainfall and flooding of the area were avoided.

There were only puddles of water that accumulated in the lowland areas.

The water looked clean and clear. Luo Yuan went back to his cave and returned with his towel, toothbrush, and a tumbler. He decided he would clean up and refill his bottle with water from the puddle.

He squatted in front of the puddle. Just as he was getting water to fill his bottle, he stopped.

The water looked clean from a distance, but as soon as he got closer, there were a lot of small moving spots on the surface. Some of them were long and thin like pieces of string and some were shaped like an arrowhead.

He knew that a clean source of water was very hard to find after the apocalypse. After living so comfortably in the Reconstruction Area for too long, he had forgotten what it was like in the wilderness.

Luo Yuan frowned and sighed. He placed his hand into the pool of water and focused his Will into it. Ripples were generated on the surface of the water. In just a blink of an eye, the water particles squirmed vigorously and splashed everywhere.

Despite the motion of the water particles, the water remained still and undisturbed.

Luo Yuan drew back his hand. The small spots in the water had disappeared. He did not summon much that much Will, but it was more than enough to kill the parasites.

He drank the bottle of water with no worry for the parasites. He refilled his bottle once more and started washing up.

He did not feel hungry even though he had not eaten anything since he left home. As the sky brightened, he decided to put the meal on hold till the afternoon.

He packed his luggage and resumed his journey.

...

Four days later, there was a dark shadow lying in the dirt not far from Luo Yuan, who was secretly observing the horror was before him. It was a giant beast that was approximately 30 meters tall.

It looked like an enormous frog but it was lean and muscular. The length of its body was almost double its height.

It slithered on the ground, its muscles were contracting as if there were countless pythons moving under its skin. He could easily identify the power of the giant beast, and it terrified him.

Its flippered feet were different from that of a normal frog. Instead, it had a pair of sharp claws which were a bright yellow. It had brightly colored skin with vertical stripes from its neck, all the way down its back.

The belly was black in color and was covered with fine, shiny scales. Luo Yuan was amazed by the secret power the scales seemed to possess. He felt dizzy and nauseous after looking at it for a moment and had to divert his eyes to control himself.

The giant beast seemed to be sleeping as it was not moving at all, apart from the breaths that could be seen filling and leaving its body. Luo Yuan noticed that it was creeping on its belly. To him, it

seemed obvious that the giant beast had just had a meal. Oddly enough, Luo Yuan was a little relieved at the thought.

Luo Yuan wondered if he were lucky or unlucky as to encounter this mutant beast. He had no knowledge of what it was and did not anticipate to find such a force of nature so soon on his journey. The system information displayed that it was a level seven mutated beast.

The number of high leveled mutated beast increased rapidly as soon as he reached Sichuan. He came upon three mutated beasts on his way in, and this was his fourth one.

Among the three mutants Luo Yuan encountered earlier, he easily defeated two of them. One of them fled from Luo Yuan's attack but it was severely injured. There was, of course, a certain degree of risk to killing these mutated beasts.

One of the level seven mutated beasts had the ability to produce bolts of lightning. He did not know the ability before he attacked it, and as he had the element of surprise as the beast did not see him coming. The flash of lightning escaped the beast just before it died and the single bolt almost hit Luo Yuan square in the chest.

If Luo Yuan did not retreat right after he defeated the beast, he would have died. The power of these mutated beasts was extremely unpredictable.

Luo Yuan looked on for a while and walked forward, covering his body with a carpet of carefully dug up grass as a camouflage.

The giant beast seemed to have inherited the dynamic vision of frog as it was extremely sensitive to motion. It could sense any motions that were 500 to 600 meters far. It suddenly opened his eyes and stared at Luo Yuan, an ice cold look in its eye.

Luo Yuan did not dare move a muscle. In fact, this was the same technique used by the mutated beasts he previously encountered. After a short while, it closed its eyes and resumed its nap.

Human bodies were too small to satisfy the hunger of a beast like that. Moreover, the giant was still digesting the food that it just had and took little to no interest in him.

The behavior of mutated beasts varied accordingly. But, things like this would never happen at the Reconstruction Area. Anyone that got near the mutants that showed up would definitely trigger a battle between the two. Whereas in that jungle, it was rather difficult for them to realize the existence of human beings, let alone consider them a treat. It meant nothing to the giant beast even though Luo Yuan brought along the Green Hidden Creature's Sharp Horn.

A moment later, Luo Yuan continued moving and the giant beast did not bother to look at him. He smiled coldly and accelerated to build up his speed and momentum.

When he was about 50 meters away, something at the corner of his eye caught his attention and he immediately froze where he was.

He paused for a second and focused on his surroundings. He suddenly felt insecure, a chill running down his spine. Luo Yuan stayed calm as he understood that patience was the key to hunting. He knew that it would be ideal if he moved 10 meters closer but he was worried that he might trigger an attack.

He started moving again after 10 minutes. He was moving extremely slow and only after a few meters, he could predict the eventual outcome.

His ability to foresee how things would turn out two seconds in advance was perfect for him and could determine the victory of any battle, or severely sway it in his favor.

Beads of cold sweat dotted his forehead. He had never imagined encountering such a gigantic frog-like beast. He was too careless as his advance to attack was too quick, and he could not even respond to defend himself this close to the beast.

Before the apocalypse, the human knew how a normal frog would eat insects. The gigantic frog-like beast in front of him right now could make an attack that was easily a hundred times faster! He would not be able to react even with his 16-points of Agility.

His vision showed him that if he continued to move forward, a second later there would be an attack, and then his vision turned black.

He wondered if he should move forward or retreat a few steps

back.

The next moment, he decided to move a step forward. Possessing the ability to predict the future, resembling a God's premonition abilities, provided him many second chances to decide outcomes for himself.

He moved gradually and the picture he had in mind changed according to the current situation and mental awareness. He predicted that the attack would come after 0.5 seconds. His vigilance and alertness were increasing over time but Luo Yuan was confident with his abilities. With 0.5 seconds on the clock, he was well prepared for an attack. He would be able to dodge attacks and obtain the final victory in no time.

He tried his best not to make any changes and remain on the vision in his mind and timeline. The moment the giant beast tensed to launch an attack, Luo Yuan took a deep breath and he stomped his legs on the ground forcefully. The ground exploded around him!

At the same time, the gigantic beast struck forward to attack. His mouth dropped slightly open and a faint blur flashed and instantly struck Luo Yuan.

Before he was completely crushed, he was a shadow that flew through the air at his speed. Luo Yuan's was reaching the sound barrier! He fully extended his body and pulled out his Zhanmadao.

The air became unusually dense!



They were only 40 meters between prey and predator. The giant frog did not expect to encounter an evolved human like Luo Yuan. It could only defend itself as soon as the attacks missed its target.

The sound waves streaked through the air. He dove to avoid the attack and was injured. He fell before he could even feel the pain extending from its mouth to its forelegs.

Such an injury was not sufficient to kill him but it did give out a very serious warning to threaten him. It roared as in anger as the attack did not kill him instantly.

"Roarrrrrr!" The giant frog roared and the sound waves it was emitting were horrifying and echoed throughout the whole jungle.

In an instant, ripples formed in the air, and it suddenly looked like a surface of a body of water.

Even big trees and rocks were crushed under the intensity of the vibrations from the high-frequency sound waves. The surrounding air was stirred and dust was flying everywhere. However, the sound waves suddenly stopped. A streak of blood that was six to seven meters long oozed down from the back of its head. Eventually, blood oozed out of the deep, dehisced wound.

Slowly, part of the beast's head fell away. The part that he slashed fell away, exposing the brain that was cut into a clean half, sitting in its skull.

The giant beast was in so much pain after the hit Luo Yuan unleashed upon it. However, Luo Yuan who was standing aside was seriously influenced by its powerful sound waves.

It was so painfully agonizing and loud. His face turned a dead white pale. It took him awhile to regain his senses.

The giant beast struggled in pain and squirmed, swishing its body around knocking down trees and vegetation in its path. Luo Yuan dared not jump down as he was already injured. He held upon the beast body tightly and waited for a few moments.

He was only able to calm down after half an hour. He waited for a few minutes more and jumped off the beast's body. He staggered to his feet and almost fell to the ground.

## Chapter 376: Sudden Change

---

Luo Yuan tried extremely hard to endure the pain, and finally sat down to rest after walking for a few hundred meters.

He did not dare to delay the treatment. The body of the giant frog should be hardened by now, and the threatening vibe from its body had gradually disappeared, as it was hovering on the brink of death. The smell of the blood was airborne, which attracted many nearby mutated beasts.

Luo Yuan would not need to worry at all. If he was physically fit, however, he was severely injured, and even a light green mutated beast was life-threatening to him, at this point.

Fortunately, the result of the internal scanning by his Will showed a positive sign. The condition of the injuries was slightly better than expected, as there were only some minor ruptures on his internal organs and some vessels, which his Will could cure easily.

However, there were too many packed ruptures, as almost all his internal organs were injured. It might take at least two hours for him to complete the self-treatment. Apparently, he was not able to stay there peacefully for two hours, based on the current situation.

In such a circumstance, he could only prioritize his heart and vessels to restore his battle strength, before looking for another safer place for a longer treatment.

Luo Yuan tried not to be distracted by his thoughts and began his treatment. With the help of his Will, his heart was akin to a coconut surrounded by many vines, with a lot of ruptures.

Sometimes, he could even see the blood flowing in the blood vessels via the cracks. Surprisingly, no blood flowed out from the cracks, as it was being barricaded by a certain force.

The next second, many of the cracks began to heal, as the force of his Will had coated his wounds. Not long after, all the wounds had been recovered perfectly.

...

Luo Yuan's concerns had come to light. A fluffy beast which looked like a giant wolf came closer stealthily, right after he sat down. The giant wolf leaned behind a big tree and watched the giant frog with its cruel eyes. It was drooling as it inhaled the smell of blood.

However, it was very careful as it did not continue walking even after a long time. There were many creatures in the forest, and many of them could easily kill the giant wolf. The giant frog used to be one of the strongest ones.

The dog-eat-dog world of such an environment had taught it to be careful, as even a tiny, careless action could lead to its death.

However, it realized its competitor had arrived – a strong

mutated beast that it had met before. The mutated beast was twice its height, with its shadow big enough to completely block out the giant wolf. It was possible for the super-giant beast to even swallow it with only two bites.

It was afraid and subconsciously stepped back to the bushes. However, it realized that the super-giant beast had gone towards the giant frog, as it was braver than the giant wolf itself.

Luo Yuan was observing the surroundings, despite undergoing his treatment.

He realized there were more than hundreds of mutated beasts coming in just about 15 minutes. It was a mix of high and low-level mutated beasts; the strongest one was assumed to be at a green level and the weakest was only at a blue level.

As he listened to the sound from the surroundings, he was expecting more mutated beasts to come.

At that moment, Luo Yuan had finished healing his heart and was about to begin the treatment of his main arteries and veins. He did not have to worry about the possible danger when he entered the Earth Pulse, as long as his blood circulation could be recovered. Most of the mutated beasts were from low levels, and even if he bumped into the strong ones, he would also be able to kill them with his water powers.

The reason why he had to heal his heart and blood vessels first was that the Earth Pulse would bring about a high pressure and

might cause adverse effects. Although he needed to slow his heartbeat down upon entering, the blood flow was at least a few times more than the normal rate. He would not be able to withstand the high blood pressure without a healthy heart and perfect blood vessels, as the blood would be flowing too rapidly within the blood vessels.

By that time, he might not be able to multitask, even if he was able to control his blood circulation.

...

As time passed, the nearby mutated beasts were probing repeatedly. They were drawing closer, and one of the mutated beasts was just less than 100 meters away from him. Luckily, Luo Yuan did not attract the attention of the other mutated beasts.

His eyes were facing downwards with cold beams, and he had already finished repairing the main arteries, veins, and half of the peripheral vessels. He only needed a few more minutes to enter the Earth Pulse. In fact, he could already enter the Earth Pulse now, despite some minor injuries.

He was considered lucky, as most of the injuries had the potential to be healed, as long as he did not die immediately. As none of the mutated beasts dared to challenge him, he was able to continue the self-treatment.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan felt a strong palpitation. He opened his eyes instantly and his Will reversed from its healing condition, as he

sensed a sudden change in the air.

A leaf fell from the branch and slowly swirled down. It kept spinning in the air, as a result of an unforeseen force.

A small cyclone was formed near the ground, and some dried leaves and sand were drawn into the cyclone as well. He was worried and kept looking around.

This normal phenomenon seemed to be very strange at that moment!

He could feel a mysterious force in the surroundings. It was not a strong one, neither could it hurt anything, except to disturb the airflow.

The shocking issue was that the force was changing rapidly as time passed. From a meager one, it transformed into a huge cyclone in a very short time.

The strong wind was blowing in the forest and caused all the trees to sway from side to side, which made Luo Yuan feel worried, as he could see the geomagnetic force being altered, and some sparks were produced.

The sparks were as tiny as dust, and it disappeared instantly. He would not have realized it, if not for his sensitive eyes. Those mutated beasts had stopped moving and began to act frustrated as they sensed something wrong. The smarter ones had already

escaped!

"Damn it! We can't stay there anymore!" He exclaimed in his mind, as he felt insecure. He got up from the ground and ran away by enduring the pain again.



# Chapter 377: Meeting Level Eight Lifeforms Again

---

A chain reaction had been initiated just as Luo Yuan began to act.

Stimulated by an anxious vibe, the mutated beast which was able to go ballistic any second now had immediately turned to aggression when it saw Luo Yuan running towards it. Shooting him a vicious glare, the beast started to attack by throwing itself on this little creature.

Nevertheless, this mutated beast was not aware that this little creature, who did not seem to be any different from other ordinary humans, was actually a ferocious dragon in the form of a human being. No one would have dared to provoke him, albeit how severely injured he was now.

While this mutated beast was still in the air, it trembled and its body was split into two halves and slowly broke apart.

Luo Yuan took a step away to avoid the falling carcasses and continued to run swiftly.

Fresh blood and chunks of internal organs that laid scattered around the floor had completely crushed every last sense of rationality of the remaining mutated beasts. Surrounded by such a tense environment, those mutated beasts which were already furious prior to this, had turned violent thoroughly.

Within a short distance of 100 meters, Luo Yuan had already slaughtered six beasts with his extremely sharp level eight Zhanmadao. It was a piece of cake for Luo Yuan, who possessed one percent of the power that could predict an opponent's move by reading their minds.

Not only did the beasts attack Luo Yuan, more of them also started to attack each other. With blazing red eyes, they became insanely ferocious. It seemed that they viewed each other as their greatest enemy, and they kept biting and tearing each other apart, not the least bit bothered by their own injuries.

Luo Yuan frowned as he looked at these mutated beasts which kept attacking him. He got impatient and really upset with these beasts, as they had greatly delayed his journey.

At this point of time, the nearby air was already extremely disordered. Cyclones were everywhere and some of them had already reached seven to eight meters high. They swirled along with a vast amount of broken stones and dead leaves, producing an incredibly loud sound as a result.

On the other hand, the geomagnetism of the ground was also in chaos.

The changes in the magnetic field had soon generated an electric current. The static electricity that was densely scattered around the air had managed to raise the fur of the beasts. At random, there could be electric arc flowing in the air, causing crackling sounds in the atmosphere.

Luo Yuan then had a brainwave and his heartbeat slowed down rapidly. He forcibly entered the earth pulsation mode. At the very next second, he raised his leg and stomped onto the ground, producing a large roaring sound.

The earth shook vigorously akin to the movement of rolling waves. The beasts within a radius of 100 meters were about to all come tumbling down. A large majority were instantly killed by the earthquake, bleeding from their mouths and noses. Some smaller-sized beasts were even broken into pieces, leaving only their bones falling from the air.

There were only a few light green level beasts which survived, only sustaining minor injuries.

The one and only green level beast in this attack was not affected at all, apart from a slight concussion.

In fact, if Luo Yuan was not severely injured where he was left only with only less than 30 percent of his powers; his Earth Stomp would have instantly killed all the green level beasts and below.

The green level beast was shocked by this attack. The very moment it awakened, it turned around and ran further away. Luo Yuan coughed for a few times before a mouthful of blood spewed from his mouth; his face turned pale and ashen. Looking at the escaping beast, Luo Yuan had no intention to give chase. He did not dare to stay on for too long, as he was prepared to flee again after returning from the Earth Stomp mode.

At this point, his body turned stiff and stopped all of a sudden.

A mysterious and strange living creature then appeared abruptly. It could either have just arrived or been standing there for quite some time. Luo Yuan sank into despair, realizing that he did not even know how exactly it showed up.

There was a rapid turbulence of ionizing electric light in the air surrounding this super creature; it looked marvelous. Along with his presence, a dreadful aura had engulfed the entire space. Luo Yuan could hardly breathe and felt as if a rock was pressing against his chest.

Its whole body seems to be shining, with numerous pieces of neatly arranged prism shield-like scales, covering its body. Every piece of the scale was transparent and bright green, emitting a certain force of energy rather vaguely. Under the shade of the tree, this halo displayed peculiar and almost indescribable colors.

Its appearance was extremely strange and that astonished Luo Yuan even more, sending chills down his spine whenever he looked at it.

Putting aside its frightening height of 50 to 60 meters tall, it had a horse-like body, with its feet almost similar to that of a horse's hooves. If it was not for its hideously demonic head and thick neck being densely covered by red spherical gemstones that could induce trypanophobia, it would have passed off as a tame and harmless hooved mammal.

It sized up Luo Yuan, who aroused its curiosity, possibly because he looked rather similar. It had a pair of big yet transparent and clear eyes, exuding a gentle vibe. There was a naive look beneath its hideous and ferocious demeanor.

It then moved its four hooves and began walking. Its pace, neither slow nor fast, paced the ground leisurely and gracefully. Following its footsteps, all four hooves got off the ground. A strong fluctuation of energy had made its body slightly alight into the air, resulting in quiet footsteps. Being big and tall, but its nimbleness created a strong contradiction.

Those frightened beasts which did not have enough time to escape had turned completely limp, becoming incontinent and could not stop shivering on the floor. The super creature could not care less about those beasts which were frightened and stunned along the way. It would simply go the other way round, should there be another beast standing in its way.

When it passed Luo Yuan with closer proximity, it would stop again and look at him with curiosity for a second. The strong air turbulence that resulted from the movement of this super creature had made Luo Yuan sway slightly. Following each other, the electric arc was bursting, releasing a foul smell beside him. In order to get a precise look at Luo Yuan, the super creature even went the extra mile of bending his head down, getting closer to him.

With just about ten meters away from this super creature, its powerful warm breath fanned Luo Yuan's face, waving his hair as a

result.

The tension between them had made Luo Yuan firmly grip the handle of his saber subconsciously. He almost sliced through its neck, but he restrained himself eventually, as he already knew how the ending would be, thanks to his Prediction ability.

The saber which was powerful enough to kill all the level seven mutated beasts was unfortunately not able to cut off the super creature's head. The moment the saber reached its neck, it would already have been shielded by the repulsive force created by its multiple layers of gemstones. Right there and then, his vision turned pitch black.

It was fortunate that this stress soon dissipated. The super creature turned his back and began to walk again towards the giant frog. There was a strange fragrance in the air, and it was not the usual stench of mutated beasts.

Luo Yuan was relieved and leaned against a tree beside him. He rested his hands on his knees and felt his body going limp. He did not hurry with his escape because he knew that this super creature did not harbor bad intentions. In other words, as long as one does not provoke it, it had no interest in getting involved with all these low-level creatures.

After just a few steps, it was already near the giant frog. The latter, which originally looked gigantic, now seemed so much smaller in front of this super creature. It lowered its head and sniffed, resulting in a huge sneeze which blew away all the dirt and dust nearby. Soon after, it chomped down the giant frog's hard

head in just a single bite.

Just when Luo Yuan thought that it was going to swallow the head, it spat it out instead. This was followed by a few times of spitting after biting, sometimes even a few times of continuous spitting. Seemingly, it was very much disgusted by the smell of the frog.

Luo Yuan looked at it strangely and was full of doubts.

He was not familiar with this super creature and was unable to comprehend its odd behavior. In truth, this was the first time he ever saw a level eight living creature with his very own eyes. Back then, he was busy searching for ways to escape and dared not even lay eyes on the ‘dragon’

Bite by bite, the whole head had soon disappeared. It carried on biting its chest, and at that time, there was already a pile of flesh next to it. A few seconds later, it seemed like it has bit something off. It gently pulled out a chunk of flesh from the frog’s chest.

With Luo Yuan’s sharp vision, he noticed that it was the heart of the giant frog. The super creature did not immediately spit it out this time. It slowly bit while spitting at the same time, and visibly gulped it down its throat. It had clearly swallowed it.

Luo Yuan had finally understood that this creature was finding an energy gemstone. A majority of the level seven mutated beasts actually owned energy gemstones. As long as a mutated beast was strong enough and was sufficiently satiated, the sustainable energy

of this gemstone can be accumulated continuously. Certain mutated beasts which were significantly stronger had a tendency to have a much stronger sustainable energy in their energy gemstone, which was located inside its body rather than externally. Apparently, this super creature was coming for this.

At this moment, this super creature started to act again. He sniffed gently, before walking towards the tallest tree nearby. Under Luo Yuan's curious vision, it raised its head and bit off a tree branch that was full of leaves. It chewed and swallowed, then growled a few times; seemingly satisfied with the food. It carried on feeding itself with numerous, large helpings of leaves.

Luo Yan hardly believed his own eyes, as he witnessed this deadly creature eating leaves. It felt silly to be worried prior to this. Nevertheless, he can now finally put his feet up, and take a breather.

He felt an energy deficiency in his heart, and his body was totally drained. He then leaned against a tree and slowly slid down to the ground.



## Chapter 378: A Dangerous Move

---

Since the apocalypse, the one who was able to adapt could survive, and the stronger ones would be dominating the weaker ones. In this environment with such fierce competition, the creatures had to keep evolving for its survival. Not only should the predators evolve, but the various herbivores including plants would need to keep evolving to be stronger. The latter two would have to evolve even faster, as they face the harsh environment and was in more danger and pressure to survive.

In this forest, there were more mutated plants of a light green level and above, as compared to the various mutated insects. Even the higher level seven of mutated trees could be seen everywhere. As for the herbivores' survival, they either had a faster reproduction system or were extraordinarily powerful. For example, to have a stronger defense, quicker speed or be larger in size. It was just like how it used to be before the apocalypse, where the king of the jungle was not the tiger, which was naturally at the top of the food chain, but instead, were tame elephants, merely as a result of natural selection.

...

Luo Yuan was quite lucky today, as most of the mutated herbivores were good tempered. As long as he did not instigate them, there would not be any danger even if he stood beside them. Of course, there was a risk of being stepped on them as well. It would not be the same if they were the predators. Although the size gap was huge, and they might not have noticed the existence of Luo Yuan, he still needed to suppress his power when they passed through.

In Luo Yuan's sight, the super creature that was somewhere not too far away was like a shining sun, blazing with light. The power generated by its high-speed movement could easily make his injury even more serious.

Luo Yuan took a look at the two notifications in the system.

One was the notification telling him that he had successfully completed in killing the giant mutated frog, while another one was the task notification that appeared ten minutes ago.

The first one was nothing special, but in succession to complete a few grade D+ tasks, his experience had now been accumulated to 101,520/307,200 points.

The experience that was vital for the upgrade had been completed by one-third now. However, it could have been completed by half, if one of the level seven mutated beasts did not escape successfully. From that incident, not only did he fail to gain any experience points, but had to pay the penalty of deducted points as punishment.

When he thought of it in all seriousness, in just a few days, this area that stood far away from the Reconstruction Area was really dangerous. Though he could rapidly accumulate experience, every fight was very risky and brutal, so any carelessness would put his life in jeopardy, exactly like what had happened today.

As for the second notification, Luo Yuan canceled it immediately

after reading it. This task would definitely take his life, so he did not want to take any risk by even trying.

"Level C task: Kill the Demonic Horseman. Period: Three days. Accept / Cancel."

...

The Demonic Horseman was standing beside the giant tree, raising its neck while it kept eating the leaves.

The giant tree was very huge. By visual estimation, it was 15 or 16 meters wide in diameter, and the branches that formed a canopy shape could envelop anything beneath it for few kilometers in radius. With the quantity of food intake required by the Demonic Horseman, it could probably eat all the leaves until the branches were bare.

It seemed like it would not be leaving anytime soon. Luo Yuan thought for a while and decided to stay on to continue healing his injury.

With the existence of the super mutated beast, this place became extra safe. By looking at the mutated beast which was still limping on the ground and struggling to get up again, he could determine how powerful and brutal a level eight mutated beast was. This was the place where the Reconstruction Area would need to use a large-scale attack with a nuclear bomb, in order to completely extinguish all the creatures here.

Ten minutes later, all the fine vines had been completely repaired by Luo Yuan. To accelerate the healing process, he stood up and entered the state of the earth in order to get support from its unlimited power.

Of course, this kind of healing was not perfect, but more likely to cause hidden ailments. However, he had too many visceral injuries, which were not able to be healed within a short time with his Will. As for the formation of capillary blockage due to self-healing, it could be slowly repaired when he had sufficient time to do so.

In just a short while, his pale face had blushed and turned lively, as his injured organs had been restored to its original state. The weakness of his body had gradually subsided, while a powerful force was bred in his body. He gripped his fist so tightly and fast, forming shockwaves in the air.

He turned to look at the Demonic Horseman, which was not far away from him. Even if it was just a fluctuation of unconscious energy, its body was surrounded by a turbulent airflow and countless whirlpools appeared in the air, before disappearing instantly. There were also a lot of electro optic-like snakes wandering about in the air.

Luo Yuan was in a rational mind and felt no fear. All these extra feelings were only to evaluate his strengths and weaknesses. Suddenly, a bold idea flashed through his mind.

The 15 points of Intelligence had helped Luo Yuan possess a great memory. He could still clearly remember the scene when he first

saw the Demonic Horseman. It was so huge in size and naturally exuded a threatening vibe in the forest that absolutely could not be suppressed. The only thing that impressed him was that it could move at an incredible speed, although it could be due to his lack of attention at the time of the battle.

However, with his 16 points of Agility, it was faster than the speed of sound at the very least, since it had left such a visionary effect on Luo Yuan.

Of course, he would not be so concerned if was only about the speed, as a lot of level seven mutated beasts were faster than he was. After all, the size gap made a lot of difference, not to mention that this was a stronger version of a level eight mutated beast. He was more confused about how the Demonic Horseman was able to not emit any sounds when it ran at such a high speed. Other than the airflow surrounding its body, there was not a single trace of wind when it galloped at top speed.

When its speed had reached a certain limit, air resistance had become the biggest obstacle. Even one meter faster would not only increase the resistance but also cause some buoyancy to the target of the run. It consumed physical strength and had a large impact on its running speed.

If he could weaken or even eliminate the air resistance, his speed would be enhanced again. Also, he would also be able to kill with a much faster speed during a battle.

After the clothing which aided him in air flow balance got scraped off, he had always been looking for a replacement but his

efforts were in vain, until today, when he met this Demonic Horseman.

Unfortunately, his abilities proved incapable of fighting against this super mutated beast. It was totally impossible to get such a material by first killing the Demonic Horseman. Although it was just a gap of one level between level seven and level eight, this gap was akin to the distance between the sky and the earth. nature and quality were completely different between both levels.

However, the fortunate thing was that this mutated beast had a mild temper. So, as long as he was careful enough, making dangerous moves will not be pointless. In addition, he still had the ability to predict the future, which he could stop in time if he sensed any imminent danger.

His mind was spinning fast, under this rational state and without any weakness, he immediately made a decision after weighing the risks and rewards. He took his Zhanmadao and cautiously, slowly walked towards the Demonic Horseman.

At this point of time, the Demonic Horseman's horses were enjoying themselves, while nibbling the leaves. It neighed with glee while eating the leaves, seeming like it was in a pleasant mood and failed to notice that Luo Yuan was actually hatching a plan against them.

Luo Yuan successfully went closer, to all the way to the front of Demonic Horseman. This mutated beast had a shocking size! It had a four or five to a six-meter length of legs exuding a blurred glow. Its body was like a thick layer of the wall that could frighten

people. Any human being who stood in front of it was as small as an ant. The closer he went, the more tension he could feel from the Demonic Horseman.

This kind of creature had a very strong Will, even if it was just a drop of its blood. The strong genetic erosion made every other creature stay away from it.

Luo Yuan was now developing his ability in this aspect, however, it was still incomparable to the strength of its level. His Will, which was more unified, could not be compared to that creature's Will, which was developed by nature; chaotic and full of wildness.

Even so, the breath it exuded was still extremely menacing. If Luo Yuan did not have a strong Will and was not in a state where he was connected to the earth, he would have been frightened and end up collapsing in fear, like the other fragile mutated beasts in the area.

He stopped at a place five meters away from the Demonic Horseman and floated towards its back. The Demonic Horseman sensed something and turned around to look at him before it continued to eat the leaves without a care in the world.

In his prediction, there was no imminent danger. Thus, Luo Yuan did as planned and continued to fly all the way to the horse's back. There was a strong static electricity seemingly attracted by the Demonic Horseman and surrounded its body. Suddenly, a spark burst onto Luo Yuan's body too.

Fortunately, these geomagnetic disturbances that were automatically generated by the Demonic Horseman might seem scary but in actual fact, its attack power was not a strong one. Luo Yuan only felt some numbness on his skin and experienced no pain. Instead, the turbulent airflow lingering around the Demonic Horseman posed a bigger challenge to him.

The airflow was as complex as a rapidly flowing river, as it had unpredictable patterns and could generate hidden whirlpools. When he came into contact with the airflow, he felt it was hard to be handled. The airflow kept pulling in and out, sometimes softer and sometimes harder. At times when he wanted to move forward, he was blown away, and was flung backward. Sometimes when he wanted to fly to the left but was dragged to the opposite side.

His flying speed was not fast at all, only at a maximum of 20 meters per second. The thrust from his Will was not strong enough when in contact with gravity; it could only retain at 20 meters per second, at most. With such a resistance, any strong wind could have easily blown him away in the sky.

Within its ever-changing, unprovoked airflow, this flight was a considerable challenge. With a mere distance of less than 100 meters, he needed to fly for several minutes before landing on its back safely.

But alas, something strange happened when Luo Yuan landed on its back. The very second he did, all the air turbulence disappeared – to his relief! The back of the Demonic Horseman was fairly broad, almost 18 to 19 meters in width and more than 100 meters long, which was bigger than the size of three standard basketball



courts.

This mutated beast was simply a miracle of evolution. If it existed before the apocalypse, it could have starved to death. Only the current environment and ecosystem could sustain and nurture such a giant creature.

It was rather slippery under his foot, so he had to rely on his Will to stay afloat. He looked down and found that his feet were not exactly stepping onto the beast’s back. The soles of his feet were at least an inch away from the scales. There was an invisible force in between that lifted his body up.

He stepped into this force field. It was quite elastic but the stronger the force, the greater the power of resistance. It was extremely slippery so he was not able to stand still. To prevent any uncertainties, Luo Yuan did not dare delay any further. He turned towards the one meter wide green translucent scales and analyzed:

"Demonic Horseman scales"

"Purpose: Material"

"Rarity: Light Purple."

"Weight: 18 kilograms"

"Additional Abilities: Able to resist the interference of

geomagnetic force field with flexibility"

"Remarks: The Demonic Horseman was the perambulator of the forest. As a vegetarian, it usually seems quite harmless, but do not try to provoke it. The vengeful Demonic Horseman will fight with until the enemy is dead. Only the corpse of the enemy can calm its anger."

All information flashed through his mind. Luo Yuan looked calm, and in the state of the earth, he could not care less about the evaluation of the vengeful Demonic Horseman.

Seems like this scale is not the right one. Luo Yuan thought.

He had no interest in this scale. Although the scale was also extremely rare and could be synthesized as bullet-proof vests, the hard texture had made its value limited to a fighter like Luo Yuan.

He looked away and laid his eyes onto other parts. He noticed that its mane that was about 100 meters long, extending from its head to its tail and was much easier to be retrieved as compared to its scale. The mane was quite fluffy and colorful, which kept swishing along with the movements of its body. It looked just like a magnificent dragon.

Luo Yuan could sense an indescribable unknown power exuding from its mane onto its body. His eyes flashed, as he immediately carried the Zhanmadao and headed towards that chunk of mane, which was swirling gracefully in the wind.

The mane was quite long, with each of them about five to six meters long, but they were very fine, several times finer than those on a human head. He got closer only to find that the mane was not as colorful from afar; it was completely black instead. The ethereal colors were actually an illusion created by light.

Luo Yuan gently touched its mane and he could feel a weak air flow between his fingers as if its hair was not actually tangible, but made of air. By feeling this unusual form, he could confirm his thoughts. He immediately used his Analysis skill.

"Demonic Horseman's mane"

"Function: Material"

"Rarity: Light Purple."

"Weight: 0.2 grams"

"Additional Abilities: To offset powers of a force field"

To offset powers of a force field. It seemed like this was the one he had been looking for! A thought flashed through Luo Yuan's mind. Despite being in the state of the earth, a mild sense of joy lingered in his heart.

In particular, this mane was extremely light; almost weightless! After synthetic, this would certainly not restrict his movements. It was simply the perfect material for a synthetic coat.

He took a deep breath, and immediately restrained the mood swings in his heart. When he was about to brandish his Zhanmadao, his face suddenly changed and he quickly stopped moving.

The result from his prediction was not a good one. Once he chopped off its mane, whether or not it was small or big in quantity, the Demonic Horseman would immediately unleash its wrath.

Fortunately, however, it had not happened. He hesitated for a while and used his prediction to test it again and again. Through the imagery in his foresight, Luo Yuan found that no matter which part he chose, even if it was the Demonic Horseman's tail where it could not see him, the horse would throw a huge fit. It seemed like as long as he touched the mane, it would immediately trigger its anger.

Luo Yuan was in doubt and repeatedly looked at the imagery again. Finally, he saw a clue. He did the trial again, this time only brandishing his weapon but the result was still the same. He finally came to the realization that the Demonic Horseman was not triggered by its mane being cut off, but rather, the Zhanmadao itself. It was his carelessness for disregarding the fact that his Zhanmadao was a level eight weapon. When put in its scabbard, it could slightly shield its power, but once he brandished it, it was undoubtedly a huge threat to the Demonic Horseman.

He then quickly gave up using his Zhanmadao, and discovered that his Will could not be used too. The level eight creatures seemed to be very sensitive to threat. Any potential harm could stir its attention and keep it extra vigilant to its surroundings.

After excluding all other options, Luo Yuan found that pulling the mane off with his bare hands was the safest way.

The mane was too thin, but the amount of hair the Demonic Horseman had was innumerable. It was very dense too, thus no matter how sensitive the horse was, this slight pain would not spark its attention too quickly.

Luo Yuan immediately started his course of action. The mane was very tough and extremely strong. With every pull, he had to exert an excessive amount of power. He was smart enough not to pull from the same spot, but a different spot after a few pulls to avoid the Demonic Horseman from taking notice.

The process was quite smooth, and after half an hour, he managed to pluck out a significant amount of its mane. The mane collected was about the size of one's wrist and weighed about four to five kilograms. With this quantity, it was more than enough to synthesize a brand new set of clothes.

He bundled the mane into a cord and tied it in front of his chest inside his underwear. This underwear had a protective layer made of plasma, one that could isolate the fluctuation generated by the mane, and avoid piquing the attention from the Demonic

Horseman when he left.

After completing his plan, he did not dare to stay on its back any longer. He gently leaped into the air rapidly and passed through the air turbulence. He made a few jumps upon landing and immediately reached his speed limit to escape from this place.

The Demonic Horseman turned to look at Luo Yuan, it tilted its head and seemed to harbor some suspicious thoughts. However, the temptation of food in front of it quickly expelled all suspicions, and it continued to enjoy devouring its leaves.

# Chapter 379: Meeting A Mutated Human

---

After Luo Yuan left the area, he did not even take his backpack that he left somewhere nearby. Instead, he ran at full speed and only stopped after ten kilometers. He chose a tree hole and immediately drilled into it.

Apparently, this tree hole had an owner. There was one low level mutated beast taking a nap in it. It was a bit stunned when it saw the uninvited guest in its territory. Just as it was about to warn him, Luo Yuan released his force field. The mutated beast immediately perished and was left limp on the ground.

Luo Yuan stepped forward to grab its neck before throwing this half-ton mutated beast out of the tree hole. He was in a good mood today, so he had no intention of killing anything. Of course, the main reason was that he did not want to make a bloodbath out of this tree hole.

He sat in the tree hole for about ten seconds. His shortness of breath was getting better but his heart was still racing.

He took a deep breath to calm himself down, before lifting up his underwear to remove the Demonic Horseman's mane. Without the coverage of the plasma underwear, the tree hole was immediately surrounded with numerous vortex, and small cyclones began to appear in the air. The tree hole acted as an entrance for the wind, with turbulent air surrounding it.

The color of the mane had now turned a few shades darker,

compared to the time before he pulled it off. It was not as colorful as before and was restored to its original black color. The illusion that it produced was a world of a difference, and almost incomparable to when it was still on the Demonic Horseman. He had already expected such an outcome. After all, this amount of mane paled in comparison to the quantity of the mane on the Demonic Horseman. The power held within it would be greatly diminished after leaving the body.

Fortunately, its powers had not completely disappeared. Luo Yuan's size was so much smaller than the Demonic Horseman, thus this amount of mane was more than enough to produce material for his suit.

Although he was excited, he still needed to restrain his impatience to process the mane, to avoid hidden dangers. A level eight material was different from any normal material. This material had a very strong Will embedded into it. Just like how the Zhanmadao was with Luo Yuan, the Demonic Horseman would have a similar kind of bond with its mane, regardless of its intensity.

Removing the original Will and imprinting his own were the necessary steps to be completed in order to avoid any potential danger. It also enabled him to use the material more comfortable.

Fortunately, this mane was too insignificant to the Demonic Horseman, as the Will imprinted was far too inferior. It was not only incomparable with the level eight power chip, even the black knife was much better than this mane. Each of the Will marks was almost negligible, once he had imprinted his own Will, the original



one was immediately expelled.

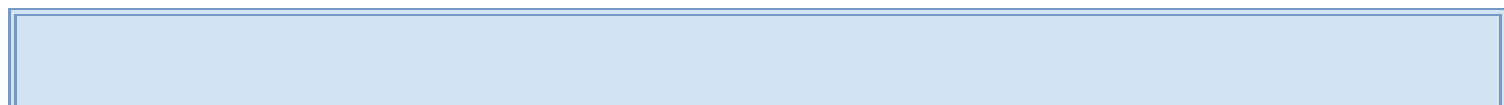
It helped Luo Yuan to complete the process more efficiently, as the mane were processed in under ten minutes. He was slightly relieved and thought that even if the Demonic Horseman stood right before him, it would not be able to sense its own mane anymore.

Of course, the mark of such a Will was still very weak and might be dissipated anytime. If he wanted it to be as handy as the Zhanmadao being an extension of his body, it would require a much longer time to polish and grow every day.

He took off his jacket and trousers and started the synthesis. He was all too familiar with this process. As the mane disintegrated into powder, the camouflaged combat uniform gradually turned black and an invisible force was fluctuating in his clothing.

Once he completed the synthesis for a new set of clothes, there was still one fifth of its mane left. Luo Yuan looked at his soft-soled running shoes. These shoes were synthesized by the skin under the feet of a level seven mutated beast. It had only one capability which was the Silent Walk.

He hesitated for a while and decided not to change it. The Silent Walk was quite useful for fighting. It would be a waste to get rid of this ability. He decided to keep the remaining mane to use it as a belt instead.



"Air Vortex Combat Uniform"

"Material: Demonic Horseman's Nylon Mane."

"Rarity: Light Purple"

"Weight: 0.4 kilograms"

"Defense: 38-45"

"Additional Abilities: Speed +6, Whirlpool Force Field Deviation"

"Equipment requirements: None."

"Remarks: This is a combat uniform that can deviate and split air resistance. It creates a resistance-free air when you run. The level eight material makes it an extremely robust and durable combat uniform."

...

"Air Vortex Combat Trousers"

"Material: Demonic Horseman's Nylon Mane."

"Rarity: Light Purple"

"Weight: 0.3 kilograms"

"Defense: 35-42"

"Additional Abilities: Speed +6, Whirlpool Force Field Deviation"

"Equipment requirements: None."

"Evaluation: These combat trousers can deviate and split air resistance. It creates a resistance-free air when you run. The level eight material makes it an extremely robust and durable combat uniform."

The system's notification flashed through his mind.

After the synthesis, the whole set of combat uniform became a lot lighter as the fiber was now more compact. The jet black outfit was glowing slightly under the light. However, the glow was very weak and could not be seen by average human beings.

Luo Yuan put on the combat uniform and tied the remaining mane around his waist. He walked out of the tree hole to put it to the test.

First, he walked at the speed of an ordinary person. With this speed, it was no different as it was before the synthesis. He could still feel the breeze in the air and the turbulence surrounding it seemed to have no effect.

However, when he sped up, the effect became more obvious. A strong wind was supposed to appear, but it was deviated by the turbulence, and the strong air stream was gushed out by the whirlpool.

The more he ran, the faster the turbulence surged, even more violently under the intense air pressure, creating more swirls. No matter how fast he ran, he could only feel the breeze.

Luo Yuan stopped slowly and looked surprised. After the training of New Capital City, he had widened his eyesight. When he looked at the turbulence surrounding him, he discovered that the mane of the Demonic Horseman had an extremely delicate and complex air pressure balancing system. The mane only triggered the turbulence; it had not much strength but the air pressure was the real power that pushed and drove the system.

If the principle of this mechanism could be applied to crack the cottage crack and onto the aircraft, human beings would have probably conquered a territory in the sky already.

But then again, this was easier said than done. The development of technology was always gradual; it could not be improved overnight. There were many level eight mutated beasts that were

killed in the Reconstruction Area. If it was this easy to clamp down their abilities, the Reconstruction Area would not be in such a difficult situation.

...

Luo Yuan did not return to the initial place immediately to look for his backpack. In fact, he was still somewhat nervous to face the Demonic Horseman. He stayed in the tree hole for the night and only adjourned back carefully the next day.

The Demonic Horseman was gone, and the tree had also completely damaged. The whole tree was lying on the ground with bare branches, after being devoured by the Demonic Horseman. Luo Yuan was relieved. However, just as he wanted to look for his backpack, it was no longer there.

Luo Yuan frowned and cursed in his heart.

Other things in the backpack were insignificant, but the satellite map was of great importance. Without the help of the satellite map, he would not be able to locate any destination with his own sense of direction.

However, although he was anxious, he did not run around like a headless chicken looking for it.

He recognized the smell of the backpack. After he sniffed the air a few times, he immediately detected the familiar scent. It was only

missing for one night, so the smell was still very apparent. He started to track by following the trail of its scent.

The more he tracked, the further he went, and soon, he found himself climbing a hill. It was already more than ten kilometers away from where he first stood.

Luo Yuan noticed that there was no debris of the backpack on the road along the way. This was undeniably good news to him. It indicated that the mutated beast did not bite or tear it along the way; depicting that the map was still safe, at the very least.

He continued to walk for a few minutes and gradually felt the scent getting more and more concentrated. Finally, he stopped and looked up at a big tree.

Luo Yuan pleasantly found that the backpack was being hung on the tree. However, the strange thing was that there was not a single mutated beast nearby, and he did not see any habitats of mutated beast anywhere around the vicinity.

Luo Yuan guessed that the mutated beast had lost interest in the backpack, thus throwing it away. He immediately jumped up onto the tree to retrieve his backpack.

When he opened it for a check, everything was intact, but it seemed to have been rummaged through by someone.

Deep in his thoughts, he suddenly sensed a peep behind him. He

quickly turned around only to find that there was a shadow fleeting more than 100 meters away, shaking the branches along its way. This distance was not within his range of senses. When he decided to have a look, a medium-sized mutated insect suddenly sprung out from the leaves of a tree.

Luo Yuan looked back but he was still suspicious.

He had a very good memory and could remember the specific place of each item in the backpack. Even if the backpack had gone through some tumbling when it was dragged around, it caused the items to be slightly haphazard, but it would not be turned upside down, and the map would neither be folded nor stained. It might be rummaged by some kind of creature before zipping it back up.

He also examined if there were any bite marks on the surface, but he found nothing.

This indicated that this mutated beast had a pair of flexible claws, or hands, and had a certain level of wisdom. Luo Yuan estimated that its size should not be too big and was almost human-sized, or else it would not have been able to delve through the backpack.

Other than the primitive kind of mutated beast, it might also come from a more intelligent species.

Suddenly, his face lit up. The prying eyes appeared again and it was still from the same direction, with only a deviation from its position.

He moved his body quickly, accompanied by numerous cyclones nearby. He instantly moved like a flash and immediately reached 100 meters away in a blink of an eye. Suddenly, a branch above snapped, and a blue shadow fell down from the top, resulting in a loud scream.

It was a humanoid creature, about 167 centimeters tall. Beneath the black hair unveiled a pretty face. Other than the snake-like pupils and a body that was completely covered with blue scales, this creature looked no different from a human being.

Luo Yuan took a look and his heart was shaken. He stopped the subsequent attack.

Before that woman fell onto the ground, she flexibly turned over with surprising agility. After landing, she rapidly stepped back and looked at Luo Yuan intently with constricted pupils, and screamed fiercely as if to warn.

When she crouched down, she revealed a long slender white gold necklace with a delicate heart-shaped pendant, which kept swinging between her breasts.

This necklace had proven her identity. She was a mutated human, without a doubt.

Luo Yuan heart sank. The mutation allowed her to survive in this terrible environment but also cost her her human identity. He did not know if she was considered fortunate or not.



Luo Yuan sighed, inserted his knife into the sheath and turned back. He picked up the backpack by the road side and continued his walk. However, after a few steps, he stopped in his tracks.

Possibly curious about Luo Yuan or wanted revenge, the mutated woman had been surreptitiously following him. When she saw Luo Yuan stopping, she quickly stopped and hid in the bushes. Luo Yuan helplessly shook his head and began to pick up his speed.

He found out that this mutated woman was not slow too. She was probably used to living in the forest, which trained her to act fast and quick. She grabbed the vine to help her move faster in the chase, making her look like an ape swinging from tree to tree.

Luo Yuan could not stop her from following him but hoped she would stop eventually when she grew tired.

However, she was still tailing him until noon.

...

Luo Yuan cut off its head, peeled off the skin and cleaned the internal organs up. After simply mildly processing the prey, Luo Yuan grilled the prey over a fire. After a while, yellow grease gradually seeped out and the air was filled with an enticing aroma.

Luo Yuan helplessly looked at the mutated woman, who stood not too far away. It seemed like she was persistent enough to keep

following him.

A mutated beast was already torn off by her sharp claws, and now she was gobbling down its meat.

At this very moment, she seemed to smell the aroma and subconsciously stopped what she was doing. The aroma of cooked food seemed to have triggered some of her memories of being human. She loosened her throat and her face was slightly stunned.

Luo Yuan pretended not to see it. After he grilled it until it was medium rare, he stepped on the flame and tore off the thigh, then disregarded the heat and started to eat.

It was still fine at first, but soon, he felt a little bit uncomfortable. His eye sight was too poor, even his sharp ears could clearly hear the sound of non-stop swallowing.

Luo Yuan ate a few bites, stopped and turned around. He asked, "Do you want to eat?"

After all, he was a man who enjoyed admiring svelte appearances. Although the vertical pupils and scales frightened others, she had an enchanting face and a stunning body figure. If she had a vicious look, Luo Yuan would have killed her or would not care enough to bother her.

When Luo Yuan looked at her, she immediately became alert and emitted a hissing sound.

The mutation had destroyed her vocal cords. No one would know what she was trying to say, except for herself.

Luo Yuan smiled. He tore another thigh and threw it towards her direction. She probably did not care at all whether the food was dirty or not.

## Chapter 380: The Journey

---

The mutated human was shocked and suddenly stepped back ten meters away. Her action was similar to that of a frightened beast.

She was staring at Luo Yuan for a long time, and after a while, she began to go closer to the food. As she saw that Luo Yuan did not react, she quickly took the food and climbed up to a big tree nearby. She sat between the branches and began to eat.

She was very alert, as she was still watching Luo Yuan while she was busy eating.

She stuffed all the food into her mouth without chewing it properly, as she understood that the food only truly belonged to her when it is in her stomach.

She was acting like a beast, as Luo Yuan could not see any human-like mannerisms and behavior on her.

A five kilogram of the big thigh had turned into a white bone in less than a minute; even the cartilage was cleared! She then broke the bone and licked the juices inside. After a few seconds, she finally willing to throw away the bone.

The mutated woman licked her lips to clean the last drop of oil. She then took a glance at Luo Yuan, and moved her gaze onto the other half of the roasted meat again.

As she was either too hungry or was assured that Luo Yuan meant no harm, she was not as alert as she was before. The scales on her body were small and packed, with each of the scales as big as a green bean. The scales on the hands, buttocks, joints were even smaller. However, the skin on her face and chest was just like a normal human being's.

The mutated human was squatting on the tree branch, unaware that she was exposing her lower body. Luo Yuan quickly looked away after taking a glance.

Luo Yuan lost his appetite, as the mutated human was watching him eat. He smiled awkwardly, before throwing the leftovers aside.

Since he had the energy now, the food was not a necessity to him anymore. The main function of food was to maintain his metabolism, and also to satisfy his taste buds. Apart from that, it did not matter to him if he did not eat.

Besides, it was a low level mutated beast, and it had no effect on its energy, no matter how much he ate.

When the roasted meat was still flying in the sky, she took a big leap and caught it in the air before landing on the ground again. After that, she quickly climbed up to the tree and enjoyed her feast again.

He could see that the mutated human was quite powerful, excluding the evolution power she had. Her Dexterity was

estimated to be in the range of 14-15 points. If she had suddenly attacked them in the Reconstruction Area, Luo Yuan might be the only one who could escape in the Bureau of Firearms.

In order to survive in such a threatening forest, she must have a certain level of power. Luo Yuan rested for about ten minutes and checked his map, before finally resuming his journey again.

The mutated human looked at Luo Yuan from the back and just as he almost disappeared from her gaze, she looked at the strange surroundings and decided to follow Luo Yuan after a short hesitation.

She could not understand why she had to follow him!

Perhaps, she was curious seeing someone that looked similar to her. Perhaps she thought she might be able to find delicious food again. Or, she could have been lonely for too long and enjoyed the familiar feeling that she could sense from him, as another human being.

From the best of her memory, her home was the forest. She had no idea where she came from, and never saw anyone who looked even remotely like her. She hunted carefully during the daytime and then hid in the small cave at night. She listened to those scary roars from many different beasts and waited for the break of dawn again.

Sometimes, she would have strange dreams. However, she could not remember her dreams until she laid eyes on the creature who

looked like her. She finally realized why it felt like déjà vu upon seeing him.

...

In fact, that area was very dangerous. In the evening, Luo Yuan bumped into a level seven mutated beast again. The main reason why he departed from the Reconstruction Area was to investigate extraterrestrial civilization. His major concern was to arrive at his destination as soon as possible, instead of killing the mutated beasts. But since he bumped into them, he had no choice but to kill them.

A level seven mutated beast was able to earn him 19,200 - 38,400 experience points. Despite being upgraded to a Level 11, the large amount of points was still very important to him. Perhaps, when he lands on Borneo, he might be able to upgrade himself again.

Since he was already notified from the system, he could already set a trap from ten kilometers away. He spent half an hour to get close to the mutated beast, but he only spent two seconds to fight.

It was a very smooth battle compared to killing the giant frog. Besides that, the new synthetic battle suit had helped him increase his speed. He inserted his saber into the brain of the mutated beast even before it could generate its power.

The ground shook vigorously for a second, as the giant carcass fell onto the ground.

Luo Yuan waited for it to stop breathing and shaking. He then jumped onto the dead body. He opened its thorax and dug out its heart.

The heart weighed half a ton, and it was still pumping, displaying strength.

Luo Yuan opened the heart with his Zhanmadao and took out a tiny body of energy. The heart had stopped beating immediately after he removed it. He wiped away the blood stains and looked at the energy crystal under the sunlight, it was yellowish red, and was only as small as a thumb. It was flawed by some impurities, compared to the energy crystal from the level eight mutated creature.

Luo Yuan was not too concerned on lower level energy crystals, as he had consumed a level eight's energy body before. Therefore, he did not keep the energy bodies even after killing a few mutated beasts recently. He suddenly realized that he had missed out on something good when he saw the grimacing horse.

Since it was attracted by a level eight creature, the energy crystal might have a more useful purpose other than supplying energy. Luo Yuan threw the energy crystal into his mouth and it melted immediately. The energy crystal slid down his throat and his stomach felt warm. He slowly felt the heat circulating inside his body, before gradually disappearing again. Other than the level eight's energy crystal being enhanced in his heart, he did not experience any other changes.

Luo Yuan was not disappointed, as the energy crystal was too



small. Perhaps, a bigger energy crystal was needed to see a major change.

He heard some noises coming from the bushes, as the branches were shaking. Suddenly, a scaly hand came out from the bushes and pushed the branches aside. The mutated human appeared, trembling, and looked at the giant beast in the distance, before looking at Luo Yuan again.

She was shocked, scared and perhaps curious. Her body was trembling like a frightened little beast.

However, she recalled the creature who gave her the food. She was naïve; her simple mindset was able to calm herself down, and hence, her fear had subsided when she looked at Luo Yuan.

She hesitated and then jumped down from the tree. She used her limbs wisely and in just a few seconds, she could almost reach Luo Yuan.

She was running very fast and she finally stopped when she was about 40 - 50 meters away from him. She took a glance at him and was attracted by the heart beside him.

Luo Yuan understood her body language, as the low-level creatures were always eager to get the flesh or blood from the creatures from higher levels. He smiled and cut a piece of the heart and then threw it further away. Before the meat fell on the ground, she had already leaped into the air and caught the meat. She stuffed all the meat into her mouth the very moment she landed.

The heart was very near to the energy crystal, hence, the density of the active energy was very high. Her face was blushing and her body slowly turned red even after eating just a small portion of the heart. Despite that, she was still stuffing the meat into her mouth, as she did not want to waste any morsel.

After a few minutes, she was frightened as she felt dizzy. She quickly shook her head in hopes of regaining full consciousness again. Luo Yuan could not stop laughing when he witnessed the scene.

Luo Yuan realized that the mutated human had made his journey less boring and lonely. It seems like he wouldn't need to suffer too much throughout the rest of the journey.

# Chapter 381: The Night Scene

---

Luo Yuan had found a shelter to stay the night, about ten kilometers away from the night falls.

There was a cave at the side of the cliff, where the entrance was camouflaged amongst the vines, making it very difficult to distinguish.

Luo Yuan pushed the vines away and entered the cave. He was immediately greeted by a rotten, musty smell which made him take a few steps backward. At the same time, a few low level rat-like mutated beasts swiftly fled his side. He took a glance and was not the least bit bothered about their escape.

He walked into the cave after adapting to the smell. The ground and wall of the cave were all covered by the vines; trodding on them felt soft and bouncy.

It could be the vines that helped hide the cave well, as none of the big-sized mutated beasts were found taking shelter inside, except for some low-level mutated beasts.

It was a very deep cave, and for safety reasons, Luo Yuan continued to explore deeper.

As the light got dimmer, the vines under his feet began to reduce, revealing the original appearance of the cave.

Luo Yuan kicked away one of the almost fully-decayed wooden sleepers. Above the sleeper were two semi-rusted iron railings. A small, completely destroyed car had appeared after several ten meters of walking. There were two half-rusted iron wheels which laid beside it on the ground. A few skeletons were also seen scattered next to it.

All these signs depicted that this was an abandoned mine cave. Prior to being abandoned, there could have been a raid there too.

About ten meters down, a concrete wall stood as a barricade to the cave.

Luo Yuan presumed that this piece of wall had been built when the apocalypse first struck. Now, after two to three years, the wall was now severely corroded. Furthermore, it seemed to be swelling and its surface was covered in abundant cracks due to the exposure to the humid environment. The wall would have just crumbled down with a mere gentle push.

He used his Prediction ability to examine what was behind the wall, but alas, nothing was found, and so he retraced his steps.

Luo Yuan was not someone driven by insatiable curiosity, and he had no interest to get to the bottom of it. Based on his strength today, he would not be afraid even if there was anything terrifying behind the wall. Despite how strong the beast could possibly be, it would not be a level eight mutated beast.

Apart from the level eight ones, only the level seven beasts would

pose some form of danger to him. All beasts below that level which attacked Luo Yuan would be far too inferior, as he would have been able to kill them off with ease.

Next, Luo Yuan used his magnificent presence to clear away the insects at all corners of the cave mine. Also, he collected a lot of dry branches as well as fallen leaves and brought them in.

Hidden not far away in the treetops, was a mutated human. She held her head with a confused face while looking at a very occupied Luo Yuan. She saw him walking into the mine cave without a trace. Gradually, she got very restless and uneasy after waiting for a good amount of time.

She looked around as she wandered, and hesitated for a moment, before jumping towards the entrance of the cave. She constantly stared it after jumping over a nearby giant tree, in hopes of discovering what this living creature of the same breed with a strange appearance was doing. She then peeked at him through the gaps in the vines.

Unfortunately, the exterior of the cave mine was very badly covered with masses of vines. Hence, she could barely see anything.

...

Luo Yuan gathered the fallen leaves. He solidified his Will and what looked like invisible air motion, flashed through the leaves. The combustion occurred without so much as a spark of flame. He

placed a few thin, dead branches on top, and before he knew it, a bonfire was ignited.

In fact, the flame was not a must for him, as he can see very clearly, even in complete darkness. However, Luo Yuan had a habit of raising a bonfire during nightfall, probably due to human nature of always yearning for light.

The sky was getting darker, and it seemed like the wind was blowing hard outside.

The position of the cave mine was not the least bit ideal, as it was situated in the draught of several mountain peaks. The sound of wailing ghosts and moaning demons could be heard whenever the wind blew into the cave.

In the wake of the strong wind, the vines that were dangling over the cave entrance were dancing in the wind, leaving countless shadows, akin to a devil with bare fangs and brandished claws.

The clear cracking sound of broken branches could be heard outside the cave at this moment. Soon after, a slender shadow appeared outside.

She kept wandering around the cave entrance, and occasionally peeped through the gaps in the vines.

A tiny smile was etched at the corners of Luo Yan's lips. Without thinking, he knew who was outside. He picked a dead branch,

placed it on top of the fire and had no intention to bother her. He believed that this cowardly mutated human would eventually come in.

As expected, the vines that hung outside were pulled away, and a nimble figure was seen flashing into the cave mine gently. She hunched and moved along the wall slowly. She constantly stared at Luo Yuan like a frightened kitten, that would explode like a ticking time bomb.

Soon after, she walked towards the corner and squatted down.

Apparently, this mutated human was not afraid of fire. After all, she was formerly human. Though she did not have any memories of being once human, there could be some fragments of memories left in her subconscious mind.

Luo Yuan did not take any action that could possibly raise her guard, nor did he talk to her. After throwing a few dry firewood into the ember, he closed his eyes and trained his entire body with his Will. He certainly did not dare to let his guard down completely just yet. So, he reserved a little energy in him to allow him to sense the ongoings in the external world.

The reason why the mutated human was no longer classified as a human being was not merely due to its evolution, but it was also because of their qualities, characteristics, and ideals, which had already been influenced by its beastly nature. Even though she tried to remain harmless all the way, she was no different from the carnivorous mutated beasts out there. The law of the jungle will always be her true nature now.

The reason why she remained harmless, was because both of them looked similar, aside from how Luo Yuan seemed to have demonstrated a more dominant presence than she did. If not for the circumstances, he would be safe particularly because they were both from the same species. However, when a mutated human faces another being from the opposite sex, compulsive behaviours could occur due to innate lust, triggered by natural instinct.

...

Luo Yuan realized that his Will had improved rapidly these days. It could be the result of his evolution to a fourth-dimensional being or perhaps, the hardship of travels. It was not shown obviously when he was flying, but how he could see tiny, subtle things during the endoscopy.

In the old days, all he could see were textures similar to capillaries and lymphatic vessels, subjected to only a small section of the front part. However, he was helpless when it came to the tail end.

But now, he could see the whole capillary clearly, including the red blood cells that were flowing inside.

If the microscopic state of the red blood cells were still not clearly seen using his Will, then the somatic cells would have been much clearer, as they were larger than the red blood cells. The sesame seed sized somatic cells that were neatly arranged in a layer – like soldiers in formation – were all clearly visible to the naked eye.



However, just like a leaking reservoir, the Will could be depleted in a truly astounding manner, when used for such cell observance. More than half of his Will would have been dissipated after approximately ten minutes. Although there were millions of endoscopic cells, the usable area that was involved would not be any more than a small piece of muscle.

Luo Yuan opened his eyes while touching one of the fine muscles on his arm. He clenched his hand into a fist, feeling agile and quicker in his actions. Of course, this could be a wrong impression.

Perhaps, the effect could be seen only after soaking all the cells in the body with his Will.

He looked at the mutated human who was still sitting idle in a corner, polishing her nails. She looked at her nails for a second, before she continued polishing them again.

Her scale-like fingernails were blue, very dark blue. Her fingers were sharp and slender, about five to six centimeters long, extending from her nails. Such fingernails would usually be growing in a curled shape if it were to be on an average human body – but not in her case. Her fingernails were straight and sharp, eerily resembling a tip of a cone.

This was obviously her weapon. Although it may seem useless when fighting big sized mutated beasts, but it was definitely more than enough to take down smaller beasts.

The mutated human turned stiff when she noticed something stirring nearby. She looked at Luo Yuan for a second once more, before focusing back on her nails.

The wind was getting stronger, with its noise almost engulfing the roars and moans of the beasts in the jungle. The crackling sound could be heard when the winds blew over a few of the vines hanging at the cave entrance. Fortunately, the cave entrance was not facing the force of the wind direction and was thus, unaffected.

He looked at the time; it was already close to eight o'clock. He then started to build the tent that he took out from his backpack. He laid down right after.

Unlike before, the color of the tent had already changed. Ever since he stepped out of the city, he assembled almost all his belongings, including his tent. This tent was not to be underestimated and judged by its mere lack of appearance, as it was practically a level seven, especially the poles that were supporting the tent. They were made entirely out of the hardest skull bones of level seven mutated beasts.

Even if Luo Yuan was in deep sleep during the night, it would be proven futile for ordinary mutated beasts to even attempt to invade the tent stealthily.

Snoring sounds were heard not long after he laid down. It was getting later into the night. Unsure of how much time has passed, the mutated human who was originally huddled up in a corner, stood up without so much as a squeak.

A yellow dim light was reflected through her pupils in the dark night. She took a glance at the tent before walking softly towards the cave entrance in a slightly hunched posture. She stopped and listened attentively.

Her face looked anxious; her eyes full of fear.

This cave was in fact, too big for her, as compared to her former nest which was just enough for one person. Even if there were to be mutated beasts invading her nest, it would have been just about her size, one that she was capable of fighting.

This cave was, however, too large and empty. Not only did those smaller sized mutated beasts come in, but the horrifying giant creatures would also be able to come in easily. Due to such a condition, she did not feel the least bit secure.

Awful peals of monsters and its moaning sounds that were constantly coming from outside had terrified her. She was uneasy and had thought about leaving to hunt for another cave, but in fear, she hesitated. After pondering for a while and moving closer to Luo Yuan's tent, she laid down to rest, as she managed to earn herself some sense of security.

Luo Yuan opened his eyes in the dark and closed them again, gradually.

...

There were no interactions throughout the night. Apparently, the mutated human had woken up much earlier than Luo Yuan, as she already shrank back to her corner when he came out of the tent the next day.

He kept the tent properly into his backpack, after grabbing his bottle to drink several mouthfuls of water. While closing the bottle, he suddenly thought of the mutated human, who did not seem to drink any water yesterday, for an entire day. He then looked for a bottle of purified water in his backpack and threw it towards her.

This is one of the three emergency bottled water that the Reconstruction Area had prepared for him. It was still sealed properly until today.

After several times receiving food from him yesterday, she caught it naturally, drawn by reflex action. A trace of disappointment flashed across her face when she realized that it was not food. But with fair intelligence, she quickly noticed that it was filled with fluid.

Her curiosity has led her to shake the purified bottled water she was holding, for a few times. She looked at it repeatedly before she bit through this plastic bottle, which was rarely seen before the apocalypse.

Luo Yuan who was also holding the same purified bottled water intended to demonstrate the correct way to use it. But as he

witnessed the scene, his jaw hung open as he did not know what to say to her exactly.

Fortunately, she knew that the fluid inside the plastic bottle was water. She then placed the broken part onto her lips, as she poured the water into her mouth.

The clear liquid spilled out of her mouth and dripped onto her large, firm breasts before leaving a puddle of water on the floor. It was indeed an arousing sight to behold. Luo Yuan looked away quickly.

# Chapter 382: Evolution

---

After walking for half an hour in the morning, the ground started to get wet. There were lakes and streams everywhere in this area and even more puddles that were merged together. They continued to walk for another ten minutes, even when the ground started to become even more damp, as many places had been diffused with water.

The abundance of water had also helped the plants to grow extraordinarily strong.

Other than the sky-high trees, even the water plants on the ground had grown two to three meters in height. When they walked inside, it was difficult for them to find their bearings.

Inside these plants, there were poisonous snakes and insects everywhere, thus Luo Yuan never had the chance to stop attacking along the way.

These only posed a little inconvenience, but what was more troublesome was the groups of mutated insects with long sharp needles that occupied a radius of several kilometers of the road, darting about.

The mutated insects were about the size of a disc, and were only at a dark blue level. However, they moved in swarms and were connected like bees. If he killed one of them, he had to face an overwhelming attack from the entire army of insects.

Although it was not threatening enough to Luo Yuan, he felt disgusted to deal with them.

Of course, if he kept up with his momentum, this would not be a problem. However, the momentum did not come naturally, it would dissipate one's spirit, sense, and will. Even if he had a strong will and sense, he could not afford to keep deploying them along the journey.

He reluctantly walked for a while, and finally had to jump from tree to tree, like the mutated woman.

He tried to cross the jungle via the trees several times before, but was not as skillful as the mutated woman who survived and lived in the wilderness. At first, he was somewhat awkward and his motions seemed somewhat jerky, but with amazing agility and control over his body, he was quick to learn any challenging movements. After a short while, he had soon gotten used to it, and was now even more nimble than the mutated woman.

Luo Yuan noticed that there were quite a lot of bird's nests around. They had departed since dawn and the sky was now getting brighter. It was the time when the birds fly out for food hunting, resulting in a forest full of chirping and tweeting.

Suddenly, something black fell down from the sky. Luo Yuan was shocked, immediately leaping to another tree. Without the need to turn around to see it, he already knew what it was. He looked towards the front and witnessed the scene of numerous bird droppings descending from the sky like bombs. If he did not pay more attention, he would have been hit by the droppings.

These mutated birds were not like the regular birds before the apocalypse. Even the smallest mutated bird was as big as an adult-sized one. Averagely, the birds were five to six meters in height and weighed three to four tons. If they were hit by the droppings of these giant mutated birds, they would be drowned and showered by their feces.

However, both of them were very alert, so that the tragedy did not come to light.

...

The further they went, the more ponds they noticed. From the original wetlands, it gradually turned into a swamp, and finally, it led them to the direction of a lake. If it was a lake in front, it would be a huge one. They had been traveling for around half an hour since the first time they saw the dampness. With their speed, it had been more than 100 kilometers of distance traveled, but they had only managed to reach the outer ring.

Throughout the last two days, Luo Yuan had been traveling across Chuan Shu and even passed half of Gui Zhou, approaching Guang Xi. With the assistance of a compass and the terrain analysis of a satellite map, he had never gotten lost before. From his memory, there was no lake in this area on the satellite map.

Luo Yuan thought that the lake might have just been formed, or that it was still too shallow to submerge the trees, thus it was not picked up on the satellite map.



Since the apocalypse, temperatures spiked first, then the sea level began to rise and then, the climate changed. Plus, there were various seismic volcanic movements, which resulted in the change of terrain. Some of the original presence of rivers and lakes had disappeared, but there was also an emergence of new rivers and lakes in the area.

As he had expected, the water was getting deeper and the grass on the ground had gradually been replaced by water plants, with groups of mutated fishes swimming amongst the plants. It was close to noon now, and the glaring light shone through layers of leaves and shed numerous light reflections on the surface of the water. The colors kept changing, in accordance to the waves of the water.

Suddenly, there was something in the water which rapidly moved towards his direction. Both sides of the water were separated by an invincible force that raised the waves by about half a meter.

The mutated woman was chasing after Luo Yuan to the point of exhaustion. She was not as strong as he was. The journey of a thousand miles with Luo Yuan yesterday had consumed all her strength. In addition, she did not sleep well the night before due to the bad and unfamiliar environment. She could only run for a few hours today but was at the edge of giving up.

Her tired body and low spirits had made her less alert than before, and was unaware of the change in the water. Just when she jumped to another twig from a branch, she heard a loud bang

when she was still mid air.

The waves were as tall as ten meters and held many threats and dangers in it. A ferocious ten meter-long mutated fish with a mouthful of sharp teeth had suddenly leaped into the air towards the mutated woman to bite her.

Things happened so quickly, so when danger approached, she felt an intense feeling of fear until her pupil contracted and body turned stiff. She could not react anymore.

At that critical moment when the mutated woman was almost bitten by the mutated fish, a broken branch fell onto the mutated fish like a spear. The branch hit the mutated fish directly on its head, smashing it into pieces.

The remaining kinetic energy thumped the headless mutated fish back into the water. The next moment, water suddenly simmered, and numerous whirlpools appeared. Blood splashed out from the surface of the water soon after.

In just a few seconds, all that was left of the previously fierce mutated fish were only bones.

"Are you alright?" Luo Yuan instantly jumped next to the mutated woman, completely disregarding the fact that she would not comprehend his question.

She did not respond; her body tightly holding a twig like a

frightened rat, shivering in fear. She was still in immense shock from that near-death incident.

Luo Yuan caressed her head to comfort her. His touch gave her a fright and drove her to jump onto another branch before climbing to the top. She hid behind the tree and looked at Luo Yuan vigilantly.

Luo Yuan awkwardly withdrew his hand. He looked at her shocked and tired face and knew that she would not be able to continue the journey anymore. As compared to yesterday, her physical strength had obviously declined.

He had to work on an alternative solution, as it was extremely lonely to travel alone. Anyone who had a slightly vulnerable mentality would go crazy should they embark on a similar journey. Of course, he had a strong Will so it was still bearable for him. However, with the company of this mutated human, the journey was certainly a more enjoyable one.

"You wait here. I'll be right back." Luo Yuan said and walked away.

Just as he took a few steps, the mutated woman followed him again. Luo Yuan quickly gestured to encourage her to stop and rest instead.

The mutated woman had a much higher intelligence than other mutated beasts. After several gestures, she finally understood and did not follow him anymore.

But she seemed to feel blue. She curled up and squatted on a branch like an abandoned kitten.

As the time passed, she was feeling more and more depressed. She ran to another branch and looked towards the direction where Luo Yuan headed to as if she intended to find a familiar face. However, she did not see anything except layers of leaves, akin to a dense green network.

Then, she looked towards the direction where they came from.

It was no longer a familiar environment. The nearest hill was very strange in her eyes. She was not sure how far she had come. What she knew was that she kept running since yesterday without stopping. They ran after filling up their stomachs; they ran after waking up from their sleep.

She had left her safe nest and the familiar environment. At this place, she felt extremely uncomfortable. She squatted on the branch and looked down at the waters below with a frightened face. There were many horrible monsters rapidly swimming in the water looking like they would jump up to bite her anytime. The more she thought about it, the more frightened she was, so she immediately climbed higher onto the highest branch to hide.

The feeling of fear and loneliness rose in her heart.

She suddenly wanted to go home. This was not a place she wanted to be in. Although the road was far, she should be able to

find a familiar environment if she went in the direction of where she came from, back to her turf and reassuring nest. Inside the nest, there was a corner where she buried a lot of nice shiny treasures that she had collected, just like the necklace that hung around her neck.

A soft sound came from somewhere not too far away. She immediately kept vigil and arched her body slightly. She quietly sneaked onto a branch amongst a thicker bush of leaves. She could feel the creature moving at a very fast speed.

From the distance, it only took three blinks. It was coming towards her.

The mutated woman felt uneasy and quickly moved onto a thinner branch. This was the valuable experience she learned from surviving in the jungle. The thinner branch was able to withstand her lithe body, but any creatures larger in size could very well snap it in half. Even if she did meet a hungry mutated beast, she would jump further with the support of branch bouncing.

Unfortunately, before she climbed up to the top of a tree, the shadow had instantly appeared in front of her.

She was scared by the strong wind and immediately held on tight to a branch, and did not move. The next moment she blinked her eyes and finally saw it clearly. This was not an enemy, but the weird companion that had left before.

The fear and anxiety in her instantly dissipated. A kind of inner

joy was rising from the bottom of her heart and spread throughout the body, the upper and lower body seemed to have become limp and numb.

She did not know if this was a surprise, but a joy of a high-intensity overwhelmed her.

She noticed that he was carrying raw flesh in one of his hands. She now finally understood that he did not leave her but went to hunt instead. She looked through the leaves and saw the rays of the sun on her head. This was really the time when the weird companion wanted to eat.

"Take it," Luo Yuan looked at the stunned mutated woman and threw an energy chip to her. He completely oblivious to the fact that there was such complex mental activity going on in her mind, and also totally did not realize that the mutated woman had a human-like structure of a brain herself too.

The mutated woman subconsciously reached out to take it. She looked and took a whiff of the little pill with a foul odor. By nature, there was a desire to make her swallow, and so she swallowed, obeying her instinct

Suddenly, she felt electrocuted. Her pupils rapidly dilated and shrunk, while her whole body instantly became red and burned up to a high temperature.

This was a level six energy chip from a mutated bird. It was killed by Luo Yuan at its nest. Although the level was not high, this was

the best he could find in such a short time. Despite that, it seemed to be effective on her.

Not only was it effective, but the change was just about to begin. The genome of mutated humans was not as stable as that of an ordinary human. After mutation, the genes of this type of creature had become extremely unstable, that it now made her not resemble a human, and could easily evolve like a mutated beast.

With her body turning red, her scales were also getting darker in color. After a while, new scales grew and the old scales dropped off from her body.

The newly grown scales were a shade lighter, and they looked denser than the previous ones, with no gap in between. From afar, she seemed to have normal skin like that of a human's, but not covered with scales. But soon, the scales became darker and harder, before finally turning pale blue.

The change of the scales was just a little painful, but the next change brought about more sufferings until Luo Yuan could empathize the pain. He could hear the sound of her bone cracking and she was in so much pain until she kept ripping the bark apart under the tree, like a maniac.

Perhaps it was the energy chip that accelerated this evolution process without any buffer, or it could also be due to the lack of food intake that caused the evolution process to be an extremely short one. Her body did not enlarge like the other mutated beast, but contracted in size instead, during the evolution process.

She was originally around 170 centimeters in height, but now, she kept shrinking to about 10 centimeters. After half an hour, the fluctuation of her height finally stopped and maintained at about only 50 centimeters tall. The petite size reminded him of Wang Shishi, when Luo Yuan first met her.



## Chapter 383: An Easy, Fruitful Day

---

The mutated human went limp after it evolved, her body drenched with sweat and was completely soaking wet. To add on to that, her petite body made her look weak and feeble.

However, Luo Yuan, with his perception had already noticed that the dimmed light that usually accompanied her had become a few times brighter. A tremendous strength was hidden beneath her delicate, harmless appearance.

Within a few seconds, her breathing gradually returned to its regular rhythm. Her fatigue reduced and every single cell in her body became vibrant and alive.

Her attention shifted as the pain from her evolution dissipated. Looking at the changes that had occurred to her scales curiously, she tried to stand up. An action that seemed so simple was particularly difficult for her at this very moment as she almost fell down after she staggered for a short while. She was frightened, so she grabbed onto a tree branch immediately.

Her fingernails easily dug deep into the tree bark even when she used only a minimal amount of energy. As she pulled out her hand, she attempted to do it again several times. Looking attentively at her fingernails which have gotten a lot sharper than it was before, excitement could be seen gradually appearing on her face as her eyes exuded a light of amazement. She moved carefully, clutching onto the branch of a tree as she tried to adapt to the power within her body.

She still staggered from time to time, nearly falling down a few times but still, she was able to react quickly during all the critical moments by holding onto tree branches.

Her awareness of the changes that had taken place in her body was probably the reason why she became bold, unafraid of making mistakes.

In the very beginning, she only jumped carefully on one single tree branch.

Soon, after about ten minutes or so, the area which she dared to move on expanded as she jumped from one tree to another.

She could be seen jumping repeatedly without getting tired as her face was covered with excitement.

However, due to her properties that had skyrocketed, her actions were quite jerky compared to her previous actions. With each jump, she either used too much or too little force. Fortunately, there were sufficient layers of branches around her that even if she were to fall down, she would be able to find a foothold somewhere with her Agility. Luo Yuan was also paying close attention to her from the sidelines.

Her evolution had vastly increased her primary attributes, with her Agility now close to 15 points and her Strength being estimated to be at 16 points. It was hard to tell whether her attributes had increased or not just by looking at the surface, but it was estimated that there were some increments.

Mutated humans like her were really favored by nature in aspects like these. If these things were experienced by the evolved humans, they would already have been listed as super-evolved humans. Amongst others, there were several such evolved humans in the reconstruction area. As a matter of fact, just two months ago, Luo Yuan was slightly stronger than her at this point in time.

However, for a mutated human like her, this was just the result of a sixth level energy crystal.

The other regret was that aside from these, the mutated humans did not seem to be gaining any abilities but instead, seemed to be evolving into mere carnivores.

...

Of course, the combat capabilities of Luo Yuan could not be simply measured by these attributes alone. His expert-level competence in sword skills, the effective use of every single muscle fiber in his body as well as the aid of his Will made up a large portion of his capabilities.

Luo Yuan's punch would weigh an amazing 20 tons and it would increase even further if he augmented his punch with his Will. Ordinary people with the same attributes may not be able to reach even seven or eight tones of energy if they had not gone through any sort of training in the past.

To top it all off, seventh level mutated beasts would also have

been easily killed if they went up against the Zhanmadao, which was able to destroy nearly everything.

...

The lake was crystal clear as aquatic plants could be seen on the move. Fish were swimming in groups and blooming trees were covering the sky while they absorbed the sun's rays. The sunlight passed through gaps between the leaves, casting numerous shadows that were neither light nor dark on the ground.

It must be said that this place was indeed very beautiful, even it was potentially dangerous.

However, both the mutated human and Luo Yuan who were here were not in the mood. They have had enough rest today, and they continued their journey after having a simple lunch.

As they moved further ahead, the water in the lake got deeper. The gap between two trees also became wider. Typically, it was one to two kilometers away from each other. However, at times they were even five to six kilometers apart making it look rather spacious and empty.

Nearby the area they were at, one can occasionally get a glimpse of debris from dead trees. These trees were rotten, and the bark had been peeling off, revealing a black hazy color. They looked very much like giant stone pillars, standing on the lake.

There were also some trees which have completely collapsed. The extremely distorted roots looked like [Qiulong](#), a horned dragon and they were barely hanging in midair.

Qiulong 虬龙: A mythical Chinese dragon that is frequently interpreted as an immature dragon, at times being referred to as a horned or hornless dragon, which is rather contradictory.

Certain trees were still stubbornly alive, but they will not likely live long without the presence of sunlight.

All the trees here were extremely large, with luxurious branches and leaves. One big tree was already sufficient to form a green and luxurious forest. The tree canopy was also incredibly huge, its circumference had a perimeter of up to a few kilometers. However, at the same time, they were difficult in a survival situation.

It would appeared that this piece of water was considered dangerous, just by looking at these dead trees debris and fallen trees.

He had seen it many times along the way. Whether it was a sudden massive whirlpool that appeared suddenly or a silent shadow that skimmed across the bottom of the lake would result in Luo Yuan having a dignified look.

Although these aquatic mutated beasts were not of a high level, they grew large because water was more buoyant than air and it could offset gravity in an aquatic environment by a substantial amount. Said like that, the size of the terrestrial creature would never measure up to the size of an aquatic creature which was also

of the same level. Each one of them was appeared to be very large in size. The limitations of their size were believed to be only the depth and area of the water as well as, the richness and amount of their food.

They were particularly difficult to deal with in addition to the unique characteristics of an aquatic environment. Luo Yuan would have had a hard time fighting back in the event of an attack.

When it was three o'clock in the afternoon, Luo Yuan witnessed the fight between two, seventh grade mutated beasts from far away.

One of them was an giant aquatic beast, with a flat tail and limbs and sharp teeth with a big mouth, looking like a lizard. Another one was a vigorous, robust golden bird that looked mysterious with its three tail feathers which exuded a blue light.

This giant golden bird kept hovering midair with a wingspan that approached nearly 100 meters. As a result, the sky was shrouded by its shadow.

However, the size of this bird was still considered to be petite and dainty as compared to the lizard-like giant beast. Without taking its wings into consideration, its body size was perhaps only as big as the lizard's head.

Nonetheless, this giant golden bird was moving at a very fast speed, similar to the speed of lightning and electricity. It was in a more favorable position to win this battle.

Every time the giant golden bird dived, a cone-shaped cloud was created from the sonic boom and lingered in the air for a long period of time. Even in the eyes of Luo Yuan, its speed was as swift as a shadow and as quick as lightning flash. It was just mere seconds before its claws reached the eyes of the giant beast in the water. Although the giant beast was trying hard to evade the giant golden bird's attack, there was still blood that the bird drew from its body with every attack.

Luo Yan had noticed that the giant beast has become blind in one eye after it was scratched directly in the eye. Its scalp had also being torn by the giant bird's needle-sharp claws and blood kept dripping from its head, revealing its jade-white skull.

Intense pain had caused this lizard-like giant beast to go on a rampage above of the lake. Each of its movements came was made with enormous force and had a gigantic motion. More than 10,000 tons of lake water was shot up into the air and did not fall down for a long time. It seemed like the whole lake had exploded that just a few kilometers away, it seemed like it was raining.

While the golden giant bird appeared to be in an advantageous position compared to the giant beast in the water that was unable to fight back; it was actually not the whole truth. Although the giant aquatic beast looked miserable, it was not fatally injured. Even if it eventually lost, it could still hide in the water. However, when it came to the giant mutated bird, it could possibly be cast into eternal perdition even if it made only one mistake.

And this giant aquatic beast was not as manic as it appeared to be.

Otherwise, it would not have been so passive with its attacks. Luo Yuan had observed attentively that the giant aquatic beast would move its mouth, which was full of sharp teeth, away from the direction of the giant bird's attack furtively.

It was a very patient hunter. Its manic act was just a bait, an attempt to weaken the opponent's battle awareness and it seemed that the giant aquatic beast was waiting for the perfect time to strike. After half a minute, as expected, the giant aquatic beast suddenly flung its head back and bit its opponent after the giant golden bird had once again, pounced on him like a lightning bolt. It was the one and only attack from this giant beast that Luo Yuan had witnessed and it had remarkably demonstrated the and it had remarkably demonstrated the saying 'One shot. One kill.'

The moment the giant bird realized something was wrong, it flapped its wings furiously but it was already too late. Its lightning-fast speed that initially gave it an edge when it was attacking, also made it difficult for it to stop. It would only watch as its body approached the wide, deadly mouth that was beneath it.

In a flash, both its feet were bitten by a deadly mouth, open wide.

The golden bird was so frightened of what had happened that it flapped its wings to the best it could. This caused an exceptional amount of wind to blow and the surface of the lake was pushed down several hundred meters, forming a bowl-shaped surface. At the same time, the giant bird was pecking at the giant beast's forehead, trying to kill it with its beak that was as sharp as a spear.

It was a fatal attack by the giant bird as a crisp, crackling sound



was heard and a hole appeared in the head of the giant beast in a moment. Luo Yuan who had sharp vision, noticed that there was a grayish-red colored liquid flowing out of the hole.

The initial situation where the giant aquatic beast made the perfect move had suddenly changed to a situation where both sides were losing.

The giant aquatic beast suddenly flipped over, pulling the giant golden bird into the water. The water in the entire lake stirred vigorously as both of them carried out the remainder of their fight in the water.

Luo Yuan had a gleam in his eyes. Originally, he was just planning to be a bystander without getting involved.

Because after all, both flying and aquatic creatures were extremely difficult to deal with. There would be a chance to fail miserably. However, they were now both embroiled in a battle underwater. It was very hard to determine the outcome of the fight in a short period of time as a seventh level mutated beast was extremely strong, even in nature. It was a pity for Luo Yuan to miss such a good opportunity.

He looked at the task information that was on the system. Fortunately, the opportunity was still there as the task had not disappeared yet. He quickly took on the task. He then exerted a small amount of force against the tree branch with his feet and his body instantly shot away like a rocket.

Realizing Luo Yuan had fled away, the mutated human who was in close proximity, quickly produced a hissing sound and kept on jumping on tree branches as she used both her hands and feet, trying to catch up with him.

...

Half a minute later, Luo Yuan was already at the top of the two giant beasts who were still locked in a fierce battle. The swelling waves were surging sky-high, and an abundance of water fell down, splashing heavily on the surface of the lake just like an enormous fountain, producing waves of more than 10 meters high. The lake water which was previously clear had now become turbid.

Luo Yan dared not hesitate and quickly came down to the surface once he got a whiff of a mild smell of blood.

Luo Yuan used his abilities to determine the location of these two giant beasts below the water. It was a very deep lake that even he, with all his abilities, had limited vision that he could use to predict what would happen in the deepest part of the lake. However, the two giant beasts were still within his sight. They were just around ten-plus meters away from the water surface.

Nonetheless, such distance was still considered quite far for Luo Yuan. To mount an effective attack, he had no choice but to risk himself going into the water. This whole body of water had been stirred into a concentrated porridge as both beasts fought fiercely in the water. It was fairly dangerous as the violent impacts of waves was the equivalent of numerous bombs exploding in deep

water.

It was close to impossible to get closer to the fight after he entered the water. Fortunately, their positions changed rapidly. No matter how anxious Luo Yuan got, as a hunter he could only wait patiently for the right time to strike.

Finally, after about ten seconds or so, there was a sudden surge on the surface of the lake. A great pillar of water soared beside Luo Yuan and rose into the sky. His eyes lit up and his Zhanmadao was drawn in the blink of an eye. He leveled his saber to the water and started slashing rapidly, almost a hundred times in just a single breath.

The next moment, there seemed to be a high-frequency wave that happened to the surface of the lake, followed by a massive surge of blood coming from within the lake, turning the lake blood-red.

Accompanying the surge of blood was a small part of the golden wing. It had a smooth straight incision which was apparently slashed by the Zhanmadao.

More and more have appeared in just a while as the feathers were quite buoyant. The majority of them belonged to the golden giant bird.

The lake began to gradually calm down after around ten minutes. Everything had remained peacefully in their place. Luo Yuan was relieved after he got a notification that his mission was

accomplished. Looking at the increasing amount of shadows that approaching from afar, he went up into the tree branch above him immediately.

# Chapter 384: The Fourth Dimension

---

Luo Yuan glanced at his experience and felt happy. After the experience upgrade, it had reached 197520/307200. After another three or four tasks, he would be able to upgrade one level higher. Unfortunately, the giant aquatic beast was not killed perfectly and he got only the basic experience amount, else the experience would have increased by another 19,200 points.

Anyway, this task was basically a bonus to him and did not cost him a lot of effort, so he did not care much about it.

At this moment, the calm surface suddenly stirred again, making it look like boiling water. There were large and small fishes swam that towards their direction and each of them looked ferociously grim. When he looked down from the top, the lake had become black in color as if it was dyed with black ink.

The giant golden bird was very miraculous. Its three tail feathers that glowed blue impressed Luo Yuan. He thought of taking up the piece of tail feather which was floating on the lake so he could identify it. However, once he saw the shadows approaching, he made an informed decision to give up his efforts.

Whether it was in the air or water, it greatly reduced his ability to move. A simple careless mistake would put him in danger. In this wilderness, there were much more materials as precious as this while he had only one life. Therefore, he would not want to take the risk unless it was absolutely necessary.

...

Luo Yuan waved at the mutated woman who hid behind the bushes. The mutated woman hesitated and only after a while did she bow down her body and climb over carefully.

"Sit." Luo Yuan said as he demonstrated the posture to sit.

She blinked and did not give a response. Instead, she stepped back.

Luo Yuan thought that she did not quite understand and patiently demonstrated the action several times.

The mutated woman looked hesitant. After a long pause, she slowly sat on a branch like Luo Yuan. She was not really sitting with her hip on the branch as her body was tensed while she looked around nervously.

Luo Yuan looked at her and suddenly he came to understand that she had lived in the wilderness for too long and was very alert to the danger in her surroundings. This posture of a human that was so relaxed in the face of danger would slow down her movement and put herself in danger. That was why she was so insecure when Luo Yuan asked her to sit down.

Luo Yuan did not force her. Instead, he opened the backpack and threw a bottle of water to her.

The mutated woman quickly came over and squatted down instead. She peeped at Luo Yuan and saw that he did not continue to correct her so she finally felt relief.

Luo Yuan did not bother her. He pulled out a map from the backpack and carefully studied the next journey and the time they would reach the sea.

While he was still on land, he could walk freely as long as he could reach the destination. However, the sea route was totally different and he could not afford a single mistake. The sea was too vast and there was nothing to be used as a reference point.

He had to be strict in following his planned direction in order to avoid any changes to the schedule and to find the island that could accommodate them.

The mutated woman looked at the bottle. She saw Luo Yuan's actions before. With the experience she had, this time she did not bite the plastic bottle but instead, tried to twist the cap. She found that it could be opened and was very excited about it. She continued to twist and in a short while the cap was removed.

She gently shook the plastic bottle. Like she learned from Luo Yuan, she lifted up the bottle and opened her mouth to drink.

And then she secretly glanced at Luo Yuan and saw that he was not paying attention to her, so she secretly hid the bottle behind her.

Unfortunately, nothing could be hidden from Luo Yuan's abilities. He was speechless with the intelligence level of a mutated woman. Even if she could hide it now, when they depart later, she would hold the bottle in her hand and everything would be revealed.

Of course, he would not mind the plastic bottle.

...

After resting for a while, they departed again. An hour went by and they passed through the lake and a hill before they finally reached a jungle that Luo Yuan familiar with.

He finally relaxed a bit after being tense for some time. As a living creature on land, he could only feel secure in this environment.

The Guizhou Mountains had many mountains and valleys in it. In a glance, he could see the tall mountains and deep valleys that riddled the region and some peaks were even surrounded by clouds all year long.

Even before the apocalypse there were very few people he visited as the land was karst with many sinkholes. Luo Yuan was not interested in exploring, so he only passed by in a rush.

As they were on the way, Luo Yuan suddenly felt dizzy and felt a kind of tiredness arising from within his heart.



His Physique was over 17 points and as long as he was connected to the earth via his Earth Stomp, he had an endless supply of physical strength in added up to a tremendous total of 23 points of Physique. Since he left the reconstruction area, he had never felt exhausted as he did now.

He immediately realized something was not right and quickly stopped to look at the system.

With just a look, his face became serious. Unknowingly, his Four-Dimensional Brain's capacity had already dropped to 2%.

"Four-Dimensional Drain"

"Dimensional Depth: 2%"

"Additional Abilities 1: Foresight (2 seconds)

"Additional Abilities 2: Four-Dimensional Visual Perception"

"Remarks: The four-dimensional world is colorful. Ordinary people can't look at it with their eyes because they have simple brains. However, you who have the path of four dimensions opened for you, you're no longer a simple minded human."

He felt slightly relieved when he saw that his unease was due to his Four-Dimensional Brain. During his journey, his ability to predict what would happen was very useful. He benefits from this ability several times by predicting what would happen when he was in great danger and was able to avoid risky moves that finally allowed him to kill his enemies.

However, he had no idea what this four-dimensional visual perception was.

Literally, it should be understood that it would be associated to his ability to see or access the four-dimensional world.

All this while, his ability to perceive the fourth dimension had no use to him except to provide him with useless information that made his brain slower. There were times when he felt enormous emotional and mental pressure with such an amount of information that flowed through his brain. In order to mitigate the effects of this, he had to do everything in his power, including his search for the wisdom heart to improve his Intelligence.

Even now, his four-dimensional vision was the biggest threat that he felt in his heart. It felt like it could explode at any moment.

Through the headband he was wearing on his forehead, Luo Yuan could vaguely see an incredible scene but it was not that clear because of the headband.

He started feeling stressed, he had to find a safer place. Moments later, he managed to find somewhere to stay for the night located

just under a cliff.

There were caves everywhere in the area that was connected by a road that was covered with dense bushes and lush trees. When Luo Yuan found the cave, he thought he had found the home of an intelligent race but later realized that it was once the home of a human being.

Looked at the enamel bowls and plates that were still pristine even after several years, it would seem that people once stayed here.

There were only a few tribes that lived in the Guizhou Mountains. Some of them were isolated and inaccessible, so they were hardly influenced by secular civilization. Some of them still had a primitive, matriarchal society being practiced. Luo Yuan discovered that this cave definitely belonged to one of the tribes.

However, the human that once lived here should have already died, leaving only the cave here to continue its existence.

After checking the safety of the cave for around 10 minutes, Luo Yuan took off his headband, disregarding the fact that the mutated woman was still around.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan's vision became a blurry mess and he could see a strange light.

"So this is the fourth-dimension."

A new world unfolded before his very eyes. He stood up unconsciously and at the same time, an extraordinary aura spread out from his body.

Vast amounts of information from the fourth-dimension flashed in his mind. He suddenly came to understand the true nature of the world that had unveiled itself before him. The amazing part was, he did not feel a blockage in his brain after his four-dimensional visual perception was activated.

"So my previous guess on the fourth dimension was is wrong. This is the real deal. We have been living in a four-dimensional space all this while." He sighed and finally understood the theory of it in his heart.

Based on what he initially understood, a three-dimensional view was beyond the two-dimensional world. If there was life in a two-dimensional world, beings from the third dimension would be able to perceive them.

Anything that two-dimensional beings would want to hide would not be a secret to three-dimensional beings. According to that logic, beings from the fourth dimension that have access to four-dimensional vision could also see through everything in the three-dimensional world.

Luo Yuan found that such a logic was indeed true. However, his interpretation of the dimensions was different from what it really was in reality, so he did not see what he expected.

It was akin to the lack of two-dimensional beings in a three-dimensional world. Luo Yuan found that there were no specific three-dimensional beings in the fourth dimension. Specifically, the stones and soil on the earth were not the only things that were from the fourth dimension, human beings were also from the fourth dimension. It was just that, the fourth dimension was almost negligible as they could not perceive it. However, this negligible fourth-dimensional had totally changed his view on the three-dimensional world.

A single dot would be zero dimension. A line was in the first dimension. A surface was in two dimensions and space was in three dimensions, which also happens to be the environment that human beings lived in. The fourth dimension adds an additional dimension to that environment. Before his four-dimensional vision was available to him, he could only make guesses on what the fourth dimension actually contained. The only thing he could see were groups of phantasmagoric colors which he was finally able to see with his four-dimensional vision.

Luo Yuan found that what he saw was not what human beings understood of the fourth dimension. There was no strange, unpredictable presence there but only a warping of space-time.

For example, a two-dimensional surface could be turned into three-dimensional mountains and even valleys. A two-dimensional strip could be twisted 180 degrees to become a three-dimensional Mobius band. Similarly, three-dimensional space could be twisted to become a four-dimensional Klein bottle.

The warping of space was the additional dimensional that the fourth dimension added to the three-dimensional world.

Everything had gravity, but gravity creates spatial distortions. So, even in the third dimension, humans would still experience a certain amount of spatial warping. There were no clear boundaries set between the third dimension and the fourth dimension. The only difference was the degree to which people were subject to spatial warping as well as the existence of a sense for the fourth dimension.

Luo Yuan thought of Xu Zhiqiang who was a pseudo four-dimensional being.

His previous speculation of him was wrong, as he realized after his four-dimensional vision activated and the fourth dimension was unveiled before his eyes, removing all confusion.

He realized that the transformation by Xu Zhiqiang was not really him becoming a giant. Regardless whether he transformed or not, his three-dimensional length, height, and width had always been the same.

The only thing that changed was the spatial warping in the fourth dimension. When he triggered his ability, the space his body inhabited twisted and warped in the fourth dimension, resulting in the

As the space in his body shrank, the space surrounding him seemed to elongate and expand, resulting in the illusion of a giant

body.

Of course, it was also due to the fact that humans still only possessed three-dimensional vision and was only able to perceive a sliver of what the fourth dimension had to offer. After Xu Zhiqiang went through his transformation, there was still a huge part of him unseen to human eyes.

However, it was not what humans understood of length, width and height so the changes cannot be categorized as big or small. From the perspective of a three-dimensional perspective, the size did not change. The only thing that changed was the spatial warpage in the fourth dimension.

Luo Yuan walked out of the cave and looked at the sky. He was shocked. At this point, to his eyes, the universe seemed to be infinitely larger. The sun had yet to completely set and through his four-dimensional vision, he seemed to perceive the sun to be bigger than when he only had three-dimensional vision. All celestial objects such as planets and black holes also appeared in the fourth dimension. Perhaps the world existed in the fourth dimension instead of the third dimension.

However, this was not something human beings could perceive and measure. What more could they do but speculate on the facts with mathematical equations?

In this vast, borderless space, planets were not the only things that filled the space but also an endless energy that was constantly surging, rolling in space like stars and clouds that constantly changed the color of the light they gave off. Luo Yuan came to a

sudden realization. Perhaps this was the dark energy, unknown to human beings and was still currently being studied by the scientific community. This energy accounted for most of the mass that exists in the universe.

With his four-dimensional vision, space no longer held any secrets from him.

In his current state, he found that he could see farther than he ever could. His eyes could look beyond the mountains, the curvature of the earth and see beyond thousands of kilometers. However, it was a blurry image and he could only see a rough terrain.



# Chapter 385: Warp Drive

---

The three-dimensional space was not smooth and was slightly distorted. On occasion, there were ripples that came from the space, far in the corners of the universe that affected the entire earth from time to time. There was no room for any resistance so space twisted to some extent, becoming distorted.

However, it was akin to small ripples in the water that would not even draw attention from fishes swimming in it. Humans on earth would not have been aware of the changes that had taken place.

The existence of distortion in space had completely subverted the concept that the shortest distance between two points is a straight line. In his perspective, a straight line in three dimensions was a curved arc in his four-dimensional perspective.

Luo Yuan even discovered a space not too far away that was extremely distorted. The distance, initially 700 to 800 kilometers long would be less than 100 kilometers if he traveled in the fourth dimension in a straight line.

Unfortunately, he could only observe as he could not act on his knowledge. His four-dimensional vision was just like an organ that allowed him to see in the fourth dimension. He did not gain the ability to shuttle himself across the fourth dimension. He lacked a four-dimensional body.

Luo Yuan sighed a little as he had witnessed what the real world held within it. Looking at the situation, it seems he had no choice

but to continue his life as a being of the lower dimension. It was as if he had to take one step after another and though unwilling, he knew he had to do so despite knowing the things he now knew. He could not help himself from feeling a little lost.

The distorted space that contained boundless dark energy was like flowers in a mirror, like a moon that was reflected in the lake because although they seemed within reach, they were separated by an insurmountable natural moat, of sorts.

His sense of the fourth dimension simply could not break through the gap that exists between the third and fourth dimension. Well, that being said, nothing seemed to be impossible.

It was as if good fortune had come to Luo Yuan, his mind suddenly becoming clear as he got a good idea. He remembered an important piece of information, a speculation on the progress science has made regarding extraterrestrial civilizations during his training in New Capital City. Among them was information regarding interstellar travel.

From the very basic plasma propulsion to chemical fuel-injection, the usage of light as a source to trigger nuclear fusion as well as warping through space using a warp drive to jump through the curvature of space, which was still considered to be in the realm of science fiction.

Luo Yuan thought that the means of transporting by using the curvature of space was perhaps, not something impossible.

An object that flew utilizing the curvature of space would be wrapped in a bubble of sorts as space contracts in front of it while the space behind it expanded at a certain distance. The object has no acceleration based on the frame of reference nor is it limited by the limits set on it by the theory of relativity. As long as space could be distorted behind it, with sufficient energy a warp drive like this could easily break the speed of light.

He had a gleam in his eyes as his heart grew ablaze with hope.

Perhaps, jumping through space could only be possible in the fourth dimension. However, using the curvature of space to fly was not impossible for Luo Yuan as he was able to observe the fourth dimension.

The operations of this warp drive was not as complicated as other methods. Space was clearly visible to him with his four-dimensional vision. The only thing he needed to do was to shrink the space in front of him, causing the space behind him to expand, propelling him forward.

In this case, the energy powering this drive would be his Will.

He had no need to fly at the speed of light. Instead, he only needed to surpass the original speed at which he flew at. The only uncertain issue now was that he was not sure if Will could interfere with spacetime curvature. It could trigger tangible and intangible forces like electromagnetic waves of various frequencies and even gravity but it remains unknown if it could interfere with spacetime curvature. This has never happened before. His mind was blank.

His Will was the ability of his mind to interfere with reality, directly. In philosophy, this would be the ideal ability to have. If there was only one word to describe Will, it would be the ability to grant all wishes. Certainly, this ability was still considered to be something very weak and limited compared to other abilities that existed nowadays.

It was just like the fact that he could not create something from scratch and perform wonders, turning stone to gold with only a touch; he still could not make all his wishes come true. Until this very day, his Will only served to augment his already amazing Strength. He had absolutely no idea if it would interfere with spacetime curvature.

Everything needs to be tested.

The very next moment, he concentrated his mind as his body slowly floated up into the sky. His eyes shone with a soft light and a dim light shrouded his body. He looked at the motions of space around him which fluctuated ever so slightly in the presence of his Will that actively interfered with the space in front and behind him.

He looked around, realizing that he had not moved at all. He was not disappointed and neither was he impatient as he had seen space fluctuate around him. It could have been considered to be successful.

The reason why he did not immediately move was that the

warping of space was too negligible and he needed some time to accelerate. He waited patiently like a statue as his body floated in mid air while he continued to warp the space around his body.

Time passed second by second and he finally felt himself moving. At the same time, the space in front and behind him gradually fluctuated, propelling him forward. In the beginning, the movements were slower than a snail but as his Will continued to push on, it had a snowball effect. Space began to expand and contract even more and his speed gradually increased.

His speed reached 50 meters per second after five minutes.

His speed reached 60 meters per second after ten minutes.

After fifteen minutes, his speed reached 80 meters per second. It was, in no way a constant acceleration but he could control the amount of acceleration. At this moment his speed already exceeded the speed at which he previously flew at, and it was still rising rapidly!

It was even more intriguing to observe that the air around him did not seem to have much movement though he was moving at such a speed and it remained so even as he was stationary. It seemed that the space around him was completely independent of the three-dimensional world.

The truth was there and it was fact. Luo Yuan had found out that the spacetime curvature bubble around him was operating independently of the three dimensions.

It was even more intriguing to see that the air movement around his area did not seem to flow much at this speed and this has made no difference when he was staying put. It seemed that the space around him has been completely independent of the three-dimensional world.

The truth was there and it was also the real fact. Luo Yuan has found out that the curvature bubble in his area has been semi separated from this three-dimensional world which caused a spacetime phenomenon he had not noticed. His body had grown from his height of 180 centimeters to four or five meters, making him look like a giant.

In reality, the curvature of space would continue to enlarge along with his Will that had increased over time. Luo Yuan would also continue to appear bigger and before long he would be completely detached from this world.

Of course, this was not a literal detachment. He still existed in the universe, he would just no longer be able to observe and be observed by three-dimensional beings.

...

Luo Yuan no longer moved forward and got ready to return when his speed reached 200 meters per second.

He discovered that his Will was running out and felt fatigued at the same time.

This was the price he had to pay to evolve to a fourth-dimensional being. Whether his ability to predict the future or to observe the fourth dimension was needed to process and analyze the information, it was considered to be a massive endeavor for humans. Only astronomical figures could be used to describe the information.

If the information available to him was to be processed by a computer, all the computers before the apocalypse in addition to all the smart devices, multiplied by thousands or even tens of thousands would not be enough. If all the energy consumed to compute the data was used in a nuclear bomb, it would be powerful enough to destroy the moon.

Using such a comparison, such efficient use of energy in his four-dimensional brain was incredible though the energy consumed was still considered high for an individual like Luo Yuan.

Although he was faintly aware of the four dimension when he had his prediction ability in the past, his 23 points in Physique could sustain him fully. Even the hurried fights and his usual journey, coupled with his use of his abilities did not drain him to such a level.

However, he noticed something when his four-dimensional brain increased to two percent.

It was still fine when he wore his headband. Most of the information coming from the fourth dimension was shielded by it.

He could still maintain his strength even when his four-dimensional vision activated with the band on. However, once the band was removed, the amount of physical strength he consumed greatly increased. He already felt tired within a span of three hours, his body feeling exhausted and empty.

Luo Yuan did not dare to stay outside for too long in such conditions. He got hold of the space fluctuations immediately and quickly turned around, heading back to the return path.

His speed became faster during this period. As he moved forward at high speed, the scenery passing by became an illusion of sorts, a myriad of lines that formed a colorful abstract painting which looked strange and unusual.

He no longer had the ability to judge the speed at which he moved at.

At the very least, it had already surpassed the speed of sound. To top it off, since he was flying in this manner, there were no sounds made by his movements. He did not even create a sonic boom when he moved faster than the speed of sound and only created slight fluctuations in the air around him.

Luo Yuan had no idea how fast this flight could take him as he had not reached the limit yet. However, his acceleration seemed to have slowed down, unlike the previous double in speed every 50 to 60 seconds.

He spent 20 minutes on the way out but it did not even take a



minute for him to come back.

He quickly got rid of the curvature of space around him as he approached the familiar cave. Along with the space around him that gradually became stable, Luo Yuan, who was originally flying faster than the speed of sound, stopped within a few seconds. Even with his acute senses, Luo Yuan did not feel any change in his inertia during the deceleration. It was as if he just stood there, not moving a muscle in his body.

Luo Yuan landed and put his headband back on after taking it out from his pocket. The fourth dimension was promptly insulated and he could feel the power of the earth that had been flowing into his body constantly, recovering his strength gradually. He exhaled and a trace of excitement was evident on his face but as he walked into the cave, he found that the mutated human had disappeared. The cave was a small and shallow one where he could see all of it at once.

He even used his prediction ability to check out the neighborhood in the vicinity of a few miles but found nothing. Slapping his forehead, he realized that he had been too engrossed in his exploration of the fourth dimension earlier and had completely neglected the mutated human. Luo Yuan knew at once that it was the reason why the mutated human had gone missing. Based on her behavior the past two days, she should have chased him when he left the cave to go outside but how would she have been able to do so based on how fast he accelerated?

He did not seem to be bothered as the sky was getting darker and the cowardly mutated human would get scared once the sky grew

dark and she would come back.

He returned to the cave and purposely lit a fire at the entrance so that the mutated human, even from a distance, would be able to know that he had returned. He then sat down and waited patiently.

Soon, the sun set on the horizon and the sky darkened. He looked at the time and half an hour had passed without him noticing. He stood up and as he got impatient, he paced back and forth, frowning as he glanced at the forest far away from time to time.

However, after some time, he decided to sit back down and a self-deprecating smile appeared on his face. He consoled himself, "She's just a mutated human. There's nothing to worry about even if she really didn't return. It doesn't make any sense to have feelings for her just after being travel companions for two days. Without having her to slow him down, he should be able to reach the coast of Guangxi by tomorrow noon based on his current speed."

Having said that, he was still getting more worried as time passed.

"She couldn't probably have died, right?" He talked to himself, "It's better for me if I find her and do what a decent human being would do." After all, he was the person who got her to tag along on his journey here. He would still be the guilty party if she were to die because she would not have died otherwise.

"So much trouble." He took his saber and quickly jumped from

the cave into the jungle. He took a whiff of the scent left behind by the mutated human and moved quickly towards that direction.

"Why did she run so far away?" Luo Yuan spoke to himself sounding depressed after half an hour had passed. It was already beyond the distance he took to fly here but there was still no sign of her based on her scent. It seemed that she just ran blindly without noticing him.

Looking at the jungle which was already buried in darkness as well as the roars and growls of beasts nearby, Luo Yuan had no choice but to continue forward.

Time flew and soon, an hour had passed. However, Luo Yuan still could not find any traces of her. She had seemingly, without stopping in between, continued running forward. He did not know what this silly, mutated human was thinking!

Soon, he squinted his eyes while he was running and he immediately came to a stop. He lowered his head and picked up a plastic bottle. To be exact, a pure bottle of water.

This was the bottle that the mutated human stole quietly this afternoon. Each time Luo Yuan looked at her, she would stay wary enough to hide this pure bottle of water behind her body. She had treasured this bottle very much but now, it seemed that the bottle which was then so precious to her, had been thrown on the ground.

Obviously, she was in danger. He rose with a dignified look on his

face.

Fortunately, there was no traces of the smell of blood that he came across. She probably succeeded in her escape.

He became anxious and quickly increased his speed. The system triggered a seventh-level task while he was shuttling across the jungle like a shadow. However, he was not in the mood now. He carried on searching and kept his distance from this area.

The jungle in the night was of gloom and horror. Numerous eyes, in blue and pale yellow colors, were lit in the dark, like lanterns. One would be terrifying just from looking at them. He did not know how could this coward of a mutated human even dare to come here, to the extent of coming out this far. Does she not know how to hide?

She was really a person with a one-track mind.

Luo Yuan was looked as if he had a burden on his shoulders and got more worried than he was before.

As he passed by a place with messy grass, he let out a curious, "Eh?" Some of the weeds had been torn while others were ripped out by the roots. The mutated human seemed to have struggled here and the one thing that made his face change, was the fresh blood that flowed not far away.

Although the amount of blood was not much, it obviously

belonged to a humanoid after he took a whiff.

Out of the corner of his eye, he suddenly noticed that there was something hanging from the tree. He turned around to look and discovered that it was a rattan rope that hung from a slender tree branch.

## Chapter 386: A Sanctuary For Humans

---

Later, Luo Yuan discovered a pile of branches lying on the ground. It was obvious that this was a trap, but the question was... Were these created by intelligent creatures? Were there humans living here?

The ground was blanketed by yellow grass and dried leaves. Luo Yuan had not seen traces of footprints but instead, knew from experience that the scent he could smell came from an evolved human. It had a very strong odor which was very similar to burnt rubber.

Luo Yuan looked to be deep in thought and after some pondering, he decided to run swiftly towards the source of the smell. Luo Yuan's expression quickly changed after running for only a few minutes as he was shocked to find that there were signs of humans living in the area! There was a broken metal spear, numerous rusty bullet casings, and even human bones!

Based on the degree of corrosion on the spear and bullet casings, these items were probably left here for less than a month. Luo Yuan then ran even faster to survey the area to find out if there were any survivors. After 10 minutes of circling, he chose a rock that lay on the higher ground to squat on and looked into the distance.

There was a base located on the hillside, covered by growing vines and moss. Luo Yuan predicted that it was probably a military base before the apocalypse as there were rusted metal fragments of a helicopter visible in the vicinity. For the sake of security, the

main entrance was reinforced with many layers of thick and heavy wooden boards. There were also a few small holes at the side that Luo Yuan believed to be the actual entrance to the base.

The sky was all dark by now. There was complete silence in the surroundings and it was pitch black. Luo Yuan took this opportunity to quietly maneuver into the small holes on the side of the base. The path was quite obscure and he had to hunch his body slightly as he walked along the winding path. The path to get there was around 1.8 meters high and the surface of the two sides of the wall was rough and uneven. People who walked along this path had to be aware of the sharp canine teeth embedded into the wall for protection.

This was obviously a man-made cave. It must have been a huge project seeing that it was done without the use of machines. After venturing a further 10 meters, Luo Yuan found that his path was blocked by a thick board. Luo Yuan pushed the board with brute force but it did not move at all. He immediately knew that something was behind it.

He knocked on the board and shouted, "Please open the door!"

"Are you trying to get yourself in trouble? Why are you coming back so late?" Someone responded from the other side in an angry tone.

"Just open the door. Don't even bother saying anything else." Luo Yuan answered coldly.

The entire place went silent. After a long pause, a person could be heard mumbling but Luo Yuan had no idea what he was talking about. He then heard chains being loosened followed by the sound of gears turning. It took a good 10 minutes before the door was eventually opened.

Due to his impatience, Luo Yuan entered the cave abruptly even before the door had completely opened. He looked around and it was not dark at all. A few rows of lamps lit the place up and cast a light on the walls of the cave.

"Who are you people?" Luo Yuan asked. He was greeted by mumbles again.

There were four men wearing animal skin around their waist and holding an old rifle. They looked extremely tense when they saw a foreign figure in their midst. The men looked like cavemen and the resemblance was so striking that Luo Yuan even wondered if the rusty rifles they were holding were still usable. They were not wearing any other clothing besides the animal skin around their waist.

Luo Yuan was curious about the texture of their skin which seemed to be coated with a thick layer of translucent gel. Besides their faces, their entire body was coated with a kind of gel that seemed to have a strong and pungent smell. Luo Yuan was intrigued by their attire as it looked exactly like they used to be a group of civilized people who went back to living like a primitive tribal society.

These people were frightened at the prospect of an unknown



'civilized' man being in their presence. They suddenly noticed that there was a streak of light in the air and before they were able to identify what was happening, they felt pain at their throats. They subconsciously touched their throats and realized that there was blood on their hands. They were frightened and their faces turned dreadfully pale.

"Stop spewing nonsense and answer my questions! You won't be so lucky next time if I'm not satisfied with your answer." Luo Yuan said in a deep voice.

The four of them stood there silently and felt their limbs go numb.

"Nod your head if you understand me!" Luo Yuan said coldly.

The four men nodded their heads immediately.

"Well... How many people are there in this base?" Luo Yuan sat on one of the rocks and questioned them.

One of the guards took a look at the rifle that he was holding and glanced at Luo Yuan. He subconsciously gulped and before he was able to act, Luo Yuan stared at him. He was shocked and almost dropped his rifle on the floor!

"You, answer!" Luo Yuan screamed at the man.

"Around... two hundred!" He replied.

"How many evolved men are there? You, answer me!" Luo Yuan pointed at another person this time.

"Around... 15?" One of the guards answered cautiously. Luo Yuan raised his leg and gave him a kick. The man flew and crashed against the wall. He coughed up blood and slowly slid down to the floor.

"Here is another chance for you to be honest. How many evolved men are there in this base?" Luo Yuan smiled coldly as he walked towards the guard who was still coughing blood.

"Please, don't kill me... Please, don't! There are 18... 18 evolved men!"

In order to save time, Luo Yuan used his abilities to get them to speak the truth every time he asked a question. Soon, Luo Yuan could briefly understand the military base's operations.

.....

The facts all seemed to align with Luo Yuan's predictions. This was initially a military base situated on the cliff. After the apocalypse, the conditions had gotten worse and most of the troops and weapons were pulled out of these areas. With the gradual fall of Guizhou, this military base with a strong defense had become the sanctuary for the humans here. It provided temporary shelter for 50,000-60,000 refugees. Many people had undoubtedly died due to hunger, disease and the threat of the mutated beasts. The

scariest part was any internal strife that occurred which eventually led to humans killing each other. The population numbers decreased drastically to the point where they are left with less than 300 survivors.

The people here were divided into three forces. The leaders of these three forces were Li Wang, Cao Cao, and Xie Ziliu. Among the three of them, Li Wang had the most evolved man under him whereas Xie Ziliu was the strongest and Cao Cao managed most of the weapons and recruited most of the regular people that were under him.

# Chapter 387: The Crowd

---

The barrack was emptied of its furniture that even the beds had been disassembled and removed. This particular military base was located within the inner parts of the mountain - thus, the place was dim and damp. Corroded walls were regularly seen besides the mosses that had been growing all over the walls. A familiar odor suddenly filled the air. There was a mutated human struggling on the floor. She was wrapped in a net and tightly tied with a rope. It seemed that there was no way for her to escape.

She did not know why they would catch her as she thought they were of the same species. Suddenly, she heard footsteps approaching and she stopped struggling abruptly. She held her breath and shivered as she was terrified.

"Boss, the mutated human is really pretty. I've never met such a beautiful woman in my life!" A perverted-looking man spoke. "I guess she's still a virgin as her skin is as smooth as silk!" He continued describing their new prisoner.

The audience could not help but swallow a mouthful of saliva. They would have sexually pleased themselves if the boss were not here. The reason why they reacted this way was that there were only a small number of women who survived. The dark side of human nature was always exposed under such extreme and undesirable circumstances. For example, as soon as they were out of food, they would eat each other for the sake of their survival. It was one of the hardest times the people in the sanctuary had encountered.

Dead bodies had become their source of food for quite a long period of time now. The elderly, ill and disabled were their first targets to be eliminated and eaten. Most of the time, this would be the women that were not capable of protecting themselves. Eventually, the weak were eliminated one by one as the survivors became hungry cannibalistic wolves.

When hunting for food had become too difficult for them and the stress was beyond what they could cope with, they shifted their attention to other things like sexual desires. Only then did they realize that not many women had survived and the ones that did probably did give them any lustful thoughts. Among the survivors, only 20 of them were women and most of them were strong. Hence, it was easy to understand the value of a beautiful woman to these people. They are a rare gem and if they were pretty enough, they could easily trigger the sexual desires of the remaining survivors.

Going back to the boss, he was short with rather dark skin and always carried a smile on his face. Due to this, he did not look like an ordinary boss. However, he was one of the leaders of the sanctuary. This was Cao Cao!

As he listened to how these people described the beauty of their new prized possession, he was slightly turned on and was very intrigued. "Is she really that beautiful or is there something wrong with your eyes? How could describe this mutated woman like a gentle female human? Open the door and show me how pretty this mutated woman is!" The boss teased him.

"Boss, why don't you trust me? Anyway, you'll understand real

soon. However, you should know that she's very strong and agile. You have to be careful. Brother Chen was injured as he wasn't aware when it happened!" The man replied.

"She was caught alive by you, how could she threaten our boss? Monkey Wang, how can that be?" One of his subordinates spoke.

"Don't get me wrong. Our boss is certainly the strongest..." The pervert who was addressed as Monkey Wang said immediately as the boss scowled.

"Stop spewing nonsense and open the door!" Cao Cao ordered impatiently.

The pervert immediately zipped his mouth shut and opened a rusty lock. The door was subsequently opened. The room was dimly lit by a flickering torch but with just one glance, she caught everyone's attention. Cao Cao's expression changed as well. Even though was the boss, his woman was only considered to have average looks as compared to their new prisoner. Because the place was damp and dim, most of the people here were suffering from skin diseases. Therefore, he had never met any women that were as healthy as her since the apocalypse. As soon as he managed to gather his thoughts, he coughed when he saw that his subordinates were acting foolishly. "Stop looking and get out," he smiled as he spoke.

They looked away despite their reluctance and hesitantly walked out of the cave. They looked back at the mutated woman from time to time and secretly gulped. Suddenly, there was a person running in a panicked state and shouted, "Boss, something bad has

happened!"

Cao Cao gave him a slap on the cheek and said, "What's wrong? Relax. The sky isn't going to fall." The person was only able to recover from shock after a few seconds, which felt like hours given the circumstances. He gulped as Cao Cao frowned and spoke, "Someone has invaded our base!"

All of a sudden, one of his subordinates suddenly fell in front of him. The next moment, he saw a man dash swiftly towards him. A thrill flashed within Cao Cao's head as he witnessed the person's attire and strength. The way this person was equipped meant too much to them and he had not realized that there were evolved humans that were so powerful living this near to them.

Maintaining a neutral expression, he calmly signaled to one of them. That person immediately left the room. He breathed a sigh of relief and smiled as he said, "Hey friend, where are you from? Why did you come here?"

This person was Luo Yuan, of course. He looked at the crowd in front of him and slowly walked forward. These people were skinny and dirty. Some of them wore animal skin on their waists while others walked around naked. Most of them were holding rifles while some of them held guns. Even the military forces at the Reconstruction Area were better than them. Besides the evolved humans in the base, as long it was Luo Yuan's intention, he could definitely conquer all of them in no time. Fortunately, he was not here to kill. Many people died after the apocalypse. It was rare to witness a group humans that managed to survive until this day.

Luo Yuan was standing 20 meters away from Cao Cao and said in a deep voice, "I believe you're a wise man and I'm not looking for trouble. This mutated human is from my group. Can you please hand her over to me?"

"Mutated human? Did I miss something? I've never seen an evolved or mutated human before. Perhaps, I can help you ask around. Probably some other people might know of it as I'm not the only leader here." Luo Yuan could already sense the existence of mutated and evolved humans in the area. He felt sickened and was growing a little impatient so he asked, "So, I guess you're not willing to be honest, huh?"

Cao Cao's face turned gloomy and said, "It is well said that if you're a friend, we have fine wines to serve; if you're a wolf, we have shotguns to hunt with. You're welcomed here if you're here as a guest so shall we take the time to talk if there's anything you want to say?"

Luo Yuan smiled coldly and slowly pulled out his Zhanmadao. He was getting even more impatient and said, "This is your last chance to hand her over to me. Otherwise, it'll be too late to regret."

Cao Cao's face darkened. He did not know why but he felt a sense of insecurity. Looking at Luo Yuan slowly pulling out a long black saber, he shivered as he hesitated to hand over the mutated woman to him.

His thoughts were disrupted as he heard the sound of footsteps. His team of snipers had arrived. There were over 10 of them and each of them had a rifle in hand that was ready to shoot through



the narrow passage. He believed that there was no way anyone could survive regardless of how strong an evolved man could be so he commanded in a cold voice, "Kill him and let's have a human feast tonight!"

"Damn!" Luo Yuan cursed.

Before he had finished his speech, Luo Yuan had disappeared. In a blink of an eye, blood splattered all around them.

Among the people, Cao Cao was the only one who barely managed to witness the shadow that killed everyone. It shocked him to the core and he retreated a few meters backward. His vision gradually went black with a sudden dizziness and a coldness in his throat. He then fell to the ground.

Luo Yuan did not want to kill too many people. He kept his Zhanmadao after killing a few of them who were standing in front of him. The rest of them were terrified and looked as though they were on the verge of a mental break down. They had no more fighting spirit within them. They threw away their guns and ran away in a panic. Soon, the passage was emptied. Looking at the dead bodies, Luo Yuan sighed and headed towards the barracks.

## Chapter 388: Decision

---

As he was making his way to the barracks, the mutated human stared at him and did not even blink. She did not move at all and allowed Luo Yuan to untie the net and rope that was around her body. She quickly got up after that and cautiously hid behind Luo Yuan as soon as she was freed.

Luo Yuan shook his head and smiled. Then, he strode out of the barrack and the mutated woman quickly followed him. There was no one in the passage to stop them. She and Luo Yuan passed through a crumbled training ground and canteen. All of the survivors hid behind the doors in fear.

There were also people that were opposed to this, "He's too arrogant! Are we letting him go?" Asked a man in the crowd at the weapon storage depot. He gazed at Luo Yuan angrily as he strolled around their territory freely. The man covered his body with a layer of a shade to blend into the darkness. He looked creepy and even though he was the only rebel who voiced out, he was stronger than the crowd.

"If you have a death wish, keep walking!" The man said with a smile. Now that Cao Cao had died, there were only two forces left. Without a doubt, only Li Wang or Xie Ziliu had the right to speak this way so it was either one or the other.

"Don't you think we can beat him if we attack as one?" Li Wang wondered. Xie Ziliu had always been a solo man as he has the strongest abilities among the three leaders. The rest were never really close to him. They only knew that he was once in the army

and that he was the first hunter among them to hunt in the wilderness. He was essentially lonely and odd. Li Wang and Cao Cao's power at the sanctuary would have been diminished if Xie Ziliu was a power-hungry man. Xie Ziliu laughed at Li Wang's statement as if he had heard a joke and said, "I think you have been here for too long. You have no clue where this man comes from!" Li Wang had Goosebumps as he heard Xie Ziulu's laughter.

"Where's he from?" Li Wang asked in surprise. All of the electronic devices at the sanctuary were damaged. Even the wireless devices, microcircuits, and electronic components suffered the same fate. Therefore, they did not have much knowledge of the external world.

Xie Ziliu smiled at Li Wang sarcastically and said, "Civilization still exists. Looking at the manner in which he is dressed, I guess he must have come from the only place which can still manage to have ongoing manufacturing efforts. After the signs of the apocalypse were confirmed, the government had gathered forces from the whole nation to build the largest reconstruction project called the Reconstruction Area. It is located in the Taklamakan Desert in China. The Reconstruction Area is so far from us and he walked all the way here. How are we going to stand up against him?" Xie Ziliu could still clearly remember the place where some corps were dispatched to. He was quite certain that it must be the Reconstruction Area. Destiny kept him alive during the past battle. He went through the darkest days of his life just like the rest in order to survive.

"How do you know he came here on foot? Perhaps, he took a flight..." Li Wang retorted and stopped as he suddenly remembered no more flights were taking off as mutated birds now occupied the

skies. He couldn't come to his senses for a long while. Before the apocalypse, he was just an ordinary farmer. Even though he did not have good knowledge of the surrounding geography, he knew that both places were far apart. Luo Yuan's abilities must be terrifying as he could pass through the outskirts and arrive at this place while still looking clean and tidy.

Xie Ziliu did not bother with how shocked Li Wang was and said, "I thought that the Reconstruction Area would no longer exist but your presence has proven that the city was not damaged. There's no hope here as the sanctuary is dying soon. Probably after half a year, nobody would survive. I don't want to spend my time waiting for death here. I want to leave this place!"

"What!?" Li Wang asked in shock. As soon as he understood what Xie Ziliu meant, he knew he would be the only leader in the sanctuary after the death of Cao Cao and the departure of Xie Ziliu. He instantly felt that he was lost and the little joy that he had left within him faded away. One of the strongest men decided to leave and the future of this place was uncertain. As the second-strongest man, Li Wang was happy and scared at the same time.

"I'll leave now. We shall meet again someday!" Xie Ziliu said.

"You're leaving now?" Li Wang sounded as if he did not want him to leave immediately.

"I don't know which way I should go, so I'm going to follow him." Xie Ziliu answered coldly. He turned away swiftly and walked towards Luo Yuan.

...

Luo Yuan stopped as he was walking out of the exit of the small cave and said, "Come out!" The mutated woman quickly hid behind Luo Yuan as she heard it. Xie Ziliu then appeared from the shadows. Before he could even tell Luo Yuan his intention, Luo Yuan asked, "Do you want to go to the Reconstruction Area?"

"How did you know?" Xie Ziliu asked in surprise.

"I heard it just now. I have something else to do so I'm not going back to the Reconstruction Area yet and you can't come along with me. You will have to go there by yourself." Luo Yuan could listen to their conversation clearly as his hearing was highly sensitive. Luo Yuan was curious about this evolved man as his body could form shadows to help him blend into the shadows. He wondered how this phenomenon was possible.

Xie Ziliu was disappointed that Luo Yuan rejected his company on the journey. He was one of the strongest men in the sanctuary and was ashamed to ask for help from Luo Yuan but he knew that it was useless to feel so. He then begged Luo Yuan, "May I know which direction I should go if I'm heading to the Reconstruction Area?"

"I'd give you a satellite map but it's not with me right now. You'll need to follow me to where I'm staying today." Luo Yuan said even though he had two satellite maps with him.

"Alright!" Xie Ziliu answered.

Luo Yuan looked at the time and realized it was already eight o'clock. He then said, "We have to speed up, it's a long journey. Let me know when you can't run any further." Xie Ziliu felt insulted. Nobody ever dared to speak to him like that and in fact, he used to be the one saying these words to others. He was left standing there for a while and then Luo Yuan disappeared. The beautiful mutated woman followed closely behind him.

Xie Ziliu panicked and sped up. No matter how hard he was running, the distance between them did not get any shorter. Luo Yuan did not intend on making him feel inferior but he was already running at a slow speed of 50 to 60 meters per second. To him, this the speed he jogged at. Of course, a speed of 50 to 60 meters per second was astonishing to ordinary people. Those who could reach such a speed at the Reconstruction Area must be at least a Level 4 evolved human with the potential to be a member of Firearms Bureau reserve team. Only a fraction of all the evolved humans had such qualities and abilities. It was even harder for the sanctuary to have strong evolved man like them as the population size was small.

The fights he got into previously were extremely fast. Luo Yuan had forgotten that the evolved men at the sanctuary were relatively weak as he usually dealt with super evolved humans or mutated beasts. He then consciously reduced his speed so that Xie Ziliu could slowly catch up to him. Luo Yuan's speed had reduced to around 30 to 40 meters per second. Xie Ziliu found the mutated woman turned back to look at him from time to time as though she wondered how could he be so slow. He avoided her gazes and hurried on.

It seemed to him like the road was endless. His legs went numb and he was panting vigorously. He had no idea how long he had been running. The only thing he knew was that the surroundings were getting more and more isolated and odd. This place was far beyond the area that he had explored when he stayed at the sanctuary. Meanwhile, there were all kinds of creatures that appeared one after another. He was amazed at Luo Yuan's power and strength as he was still capable of killing the mutated beasts while running without decreasing his speed. Some of the mutated beasts were around 10 meters tall. They were sliced in half merely because they blocked his path. Xie Ziliu slowly got used to the strong smell of blood that spread throughout the air. He had never expected that an evolved man could be so powerful.

Luo Yuan spent a total of five hours to return to the cave.

"The Reconstruction Area is still too far from here. I would advise you not to go as you may encounter danger during the journey that is not within your abilities to manage. If you were to stay at the sanctuary, you could live longer." Luo Yuan advised Xie Ziliu as he was completely exhausted. He then took out a satellite map from his backpack and threw it towards Xie Ziliu.

Luo Yuan did not explain the full story. Even if Xie Ziliu got back to the Reconstruction Area, it would not be safe as well. The extraterrestrial civilization could invade them at any time and the safety of the people would be compromised.

Xie Ziliu was now gasping and lying on the floor like a fish out of water. He forced a smile and said, "Yes, of course. I do understand

you. However, I'm not willing to die without any hope! I would rather take the risk!"

Luo Yuan sighed as he had the exact same thought during the fall of Hedong city.

"Can you tell me about the condition of the Reconstruction Area?" Xie Ziliu asked.

"It's still fine there. The society was rebuilt and the mutated beasts were isolated from the Reconstruction Area. There are active industries and underground cities developing rapidly everywhere." Luo Yuan said.

Everything would go well if the extraterrestrial invasion did not happen. Perhaps, before he died, he could witness the scene of humans recovering their lost territory. Xie Ziliu got excited and said, "I wish to see it." Luo Yuan shook his head and kept quiet as he was not very optimistic. He picked up the small mutated beast that he killed and peeled off its skin. He then started grilling the meat.

"Can I help you?" Xie Ziliu asked.

"No, it's not necessary!" Luo Yuan rejected him immediately. "You will have to go there by yourself tomorrow. Take a good rest."

Luo Yuan could not keep him company as he had to perform his duty. The mutated woman squatted beside Luo Yuan as she



listened to their conversation quietly. She seemed to feel completely comfortable in Luo Yuan's company now. The reason why she kept her distance from him in the first place was probably due to the way she lived when she was in the outskirts. She had gotten used to being like that.

The cave then went silent. Everyone seemed to have something on their minds but nobody uttered anything. They ate their dinner in a hurry and left a pile of white bones on the ground. Luo Yuan threw a spare tent towards Xie Ziliu since the mutated woman would not need it and said, "This is for you. You might need it."

"Thanks!" Xie Ziliu was thankful. He touched the tent gently and it was as smooth as silk. He felt that there would be something amazing inside.

...

Luo Yuan could not sleep as he had troubles in his mind which gave him a dilemma. After a while, he had made up his mind. It was undeniable that Luo Yuan felt a mild affection for the innocent woman but he was still going to leave her behind. He would be putting her life at risk if she were to follow Luo Yuan to the dangerous seaside that he was heading to. The duty he was assigned to had been delayed for a very long time and it concerned the life and death of the human race. There would still be some hope for the human race if he could get the information out earlier. With his ability to fly in a curved arc through the fourth dimension, he had to rush to Borneo.

## Chapter 389: Apart

---

"I'm leaving!" Xie Ziliu said. In the early hours of the next morning, Xie Ziliu folded the tent and got ready to leave. He had nothing with him aside from the satellite map and tent that was given to him by Luo Yuan. Perhaps, there was nothing else he could prepare anyway. He was not that strong after all and without any equipment with him, he was just trying to get himself killed.

Luo Yuan was not trying to persuade him not to go anymore. Xie Ziliu had probably fallen into despair and needed an escape. Going to the Reconstruction Area might be the only meaningful thing to his life right now. After a pause, Luo Yuan continued speaking, "Be careful!"

"Yes, I will." Xie Ziliu answered energetically. "What's your name?"

"I'm Luo Yuan." Luo Yuan answered. He hesitated for a while and continued, "If you encounter any difficulties at the Reconstruction Area, tell them Luo Yuan from the Firearms Bureau sent you. This might be able to help you."

It had now been almost two years since the apocalypse. It was getting more difficult to enter the Reconstruction Area nowadays as there were people wandering around the area trying to sneak in. Most people would sneak in from a tunnel or by falsifying personal information. They had tried all kinds of approaches to enter and those who were in-charge of preventing this faced difficulties doing so. Therefore, they enforced stricter rules and now anyone who was trying to enter the Reconstruction Area would be checked

thoroughly. If they did not have any documents on them to identify themselves, it was almost impossible for them to enter.

The Firearms Bureau might not sound familiar to the folks out there but it is a rather influential part of the military right now. It might help Xie Ziliu to reduce the period that he will be under review by mentioning Luo Yuan's name to them. But of course, the biggest challenge for him now was to arrive at the Reconstruction Area.

Similar to the day he left the sanctuary, Xie Ziliu left without a second thought. Looking at his shadow gradually disappearing from the forest, he sighed and shifted his gaze to the front. The mutated woman woke up early in the morning and was sharpening her claws. They were sharper and tougher now. After a short while, she stopped to observe her nails. She stared at them with her head slightly tilted and did not seem to be satisfied with them so she continued sharpening. She was so focused on this process that it was as if she was completely immersed in her own world. Her eyes were shining like crystals reflecting weak beams of light.

Finally, she looked around and could see that Luo Yuan was leaving the cave out of the corner of her eyes. She immediately ran out and followed him.

"Stay here. I'll be back soon!" Luo Yuan pointed at the cave and said.

He repeatedly pointed into the cave before the mutated woman understood what he meant and went back into the cave in disappointment. As soon as she saw Luo Yuan's tent and backpack

still left behind, she knew that he would be back soon. In fact, in just a moment, the mutated woman saw Luo Yuan coming back! He came back with meat and a small knife. The knife was so small that its blade was not even a meter long. It would be useless for a normal human to use it in battle. The knife was made of wood and the teeth of a level six mutated beast. Its blade was very thin and fine which made it light and sharp. Initially, Luo Yuan had wanted to hunt down a level seven mutated beast that he found on the system last night but it was no longer there. That was why he settled.

He threw an energy crystal to her and she leaped forward and caught the crystal with joy. She smelled and swallowed it immediately. However, she did not evolve or mutate further though her energy level had recovered slightly. Luo Yuan then handed over the white jade-like knife to her. A doubtful look appeared on her face. She walked a few steps forward when Luo Yuan nodded his head and she took the knife from him. After she held it in her hand, she immediately returned back to the place where she was sharpening her claws.

She was very clever and imitated the way Luo Yuan was holding the knife. The blade was able to pierce through one of the big rocks on the ground and the rock was cut in half immediately. She threw away the knife as she was shocked and retreated a good 10 meters back. She realized that she was overreacting and picked up the knife from the floor carefully. She hesitated and touched the blade with her sharp nails softly. Her nails were chipped instantly! She dashed backwards out of shock and was sad looking at her broken nails which she just sharpened. She was as innocent as a kid and had forgotten that her nails were very fragile. Looking back at the white jade-like knife, she was as delighted as a kid who had a new toy.

Looking at her, Luo Yuan subconsciously smiled. He then turned his attention to other things and built a fire. He picked the heart out from the level six mutated beast and grilled it. After they had their last dinner, Luo Yuan took out the last bottle of drinking water he had from his backpack and gave it to her. She removed the cap and finished the whole bottle of water in one go. She then secretly hid the bottle behind her when Luo Yuan was not aware.

Luo Yuan sighed, stood up, and then folded the tent and put on his backpack.

"It's time to leave!" Luo Yuan said.

He turned back and looked at the energetic mutated woman that was getting ready to follow him. He stopped her again and said, "You should stay here and stop following me." She blinked her eyes with her head slightly tilted and looked doubtful. She understood that Luo Yuan was going to leave as soon as she saw that Luo Yuan was wearing his backpack. However, she did not understand why he did not want her to follow. Luo Yuan turned away but was still followed closely by the woman.

He acted like he was going to give her a kick and that startled her. She stepped a few steps back but quietly continued to follow Luo Yuan again. Luo Yuan frowned and stopped. He did not want to speed up to get rid of her because he knew that she would definitely keep running toward the direction where he was running to. He had to take more drastic measures.

"Do you really think that I won't kill you? Get back to your place!" Luo Yuan pulled out his Zhanmadao and said angrily. It was scary and there was only silence between them. The woman's face turned pale and she immediately moved back into the cave. She was shivering out of fear at this point. This time, the woman did not follow after him as he left. He felt relieved and down at the same time. He quickly removed all of the distracting thoughts he had in his mind and increased his speed. Very soon, he disappeared from sight.

After some time, the woman carefully walked out of the exit. She looked around and started to get nervous. She leaped to the top of a big tree and stretched her neck out attempting to look for something or someone. To her dismay, she found nothing. She jumped down, chose a direction, and ran madly while lifting her head again and looking around. Eventually, she sat down on a tree branch in disappointment. Looking at the small knife in her hand and the water bottle she was nibbling on nervously, a thought suddenly struck her. She then ran swiftly back to the cave. Her movements got slower as she was approaching the cave but when she entered, things did not turn out the way she expected. The kind man who rescued her and gave her food had left and did not come back. He had disappeared for good. Looking at the emptied cave, a strong sense of loneliness arose.

...

Luo Yuan did not feel good either. The feelings he had for the innocent woman were deeply rooted in his heart at this stage. Even in the brief period that he left, there were times that he wanted to go back to the cave but he resisted the impulse to do so. Nonetheless, after running for half an hour, he stopped. He looked

back subconsciously and of course, there was no one behind him. With sadness, he realized that perhaps they would no longer have the chance to meet!

Luo Yuan chose a rock and sat down to rest. After his "four-dimensional vision" had dropped to 2%, his Strength was also greatly reduced. He would not have felt tired before but he was terribly fatigued now. Fortunately, his Strength had rose to 17 points and adding the bonus from his Earth Stomp, it was a total of 23 points. His ability to recover was astonishing and his energy was recharged in just five minutes. He took out the satellite map from his backpack and studied it again. He was trying to remember all of the geological terrains of the surrounding areas including the state of the ocean. He then kept the map back into his backpack and continued his journey to Borneo!

The next moment, he flew through the forest and loosened the headband that he wore across his forehead. His four-dimensional vision recovered immediately! Despite the fact that he had seen it in action in the past, it was still a heart-pounding moment! He was stunned and as soon as he regained his consciousness, he began propelling himself forward through the space-time bubble.

Under such a condition, his Strength would be greatly consumed and he would get exhausted within an hour. Every second he could travel was so precious. The speed when he flew through space-time was relatively slow and it required a lot more of time to accelerate. Only after 40 minutes of accelerating did his speed reached its maximum. He passed through the mountains, rivers, and lakes very quickly. His speed was so fast that even his brain was not able to process and respond to it.

Fortunately, Luo Yuan's four-dimensional vision enabled him to preempt any obstacles from the three-dimensional terrain. He could see further even though his vision was blurred and it was still possible for him to roughly determine the geographical terrain of the areas. By estimating the distance between the hilltops and the time he spent traveling, he was basically moving at a speed of five to six kilometers per second. If it was relative to the speed of sound, it would be between 15 to 18 times. The speed was amazing but it was difficult to see as it was too fast for human beings to perceive. Before the apocalypse, the fastest speed an aircraft could reach was only two to three times the speed of sound. The fastest missile was not even 10 times the speed of sound.

In less than a minute, he passed the boundary of Guizhou and arrived at Guangxi. Three minutes later, he was already halfway through Guangxi. All of a sudden, there was an extremely big tree that appeared in front of Luo Yuan. Even the mountains that were a thousand meters high looked relatively small when compared to this big tree. It had covered almost half of the sky and its leaves looked like green clouds floating in the sky.

Luo Yuan was shocked as he witnessed the tree that was 2000 to 3000 meters tall. The color of the old tree trunk was darker than usual and had cracks all over. Comparing the size of this big tree and the size of the Heaven's Pillar Tree that he found at Hedong city, the difference in size was like the difference between infants and adults.

Luo Yuan quickly got ready to get a closer look.



# Chapter 390: The Lightning Tree

---

The large tree was significantly taller than most of the mountains in the vicinity. If its height was measured vertically, not even ten ordinary trees in China stacked on top of each other could be taller than this. It was so tall that one could easily mistake it for being very near when it was actually still hundreds of kilometers away. With the speed that Luo Yuan traveled at when he flew through space-time, it only took him a minute to get right in front of it. Luo Yuan could instantly tell that this place was very near to the sea as there was a salty smell that permeated the air. He estimated that if he traveled 200 to 300 kilometers ahead of him, he could see the ocean.

As Luo Yuan approached the tree, he balanced himself against the vibrating waves in the air with his Will and gradually decreased his speed. He then put on the plasma band across his forehead and landed. If Luo Yuan were to tell this story to other people, he could not think of anyone who could imagine how big the tree stump was! The large tree's roots were black in color and grew straight down into the soil. They were intertwined and looked just like angry dragons tangled together.

Given the remarkable nature of this tree, Luo Yuan used his Will to elevate himself into the sky again and could see that the ends of its roots extended to over hundreds of kilometers away. The tangled roots were covering up to ten thousand square kilometers of ground with its height being over 400 meters which formed big hills around the area. Luo Yuan suddenly contemplated the miracles of life looking at this indescribably immense power arising from the Earth and spreading up through the atmosphere.

He then noticed that smoke was puffing out from its roots as if there was a fire there. The atmosphere was already filled with heated-air which had a strong choking effect and caused blurred vision. There was only this giant tree standing in the area with bare trunks and there were no other plants or mutated creatures in sight. Living organisms in this area must be able to withstand extreme temperatures in order to survive.

The temperature close to the ground was already about 100 degrees Celsius but as soon as Luo Yuan landed, the temperature had exceeded 200 degrees Celsius. Despite all his abilities, even Luo Yuan did not have the ability to withstand such extreme temperatures. He was still a human being regardless of how strong he had become. Once the surrounding temperature exceeds 100 degrees Celsius, he would not survive long. However, the sudden rise in temperature stimulated his pores to shrink in order to prevent heat from entering. Obviously, this approach could not effectively stop his skin from absorbing the heat but at least it helped give him more protection. In less than 10 seconds of landing, he started to feel a burning sensation on his skin.

A faint glow appeared in his hands which Luo Yuan thought was due to the fact that his skin was irritated. Upon analysis, Luo Yuan was surprised by this phenomena because even before he actively used his Will, his body had already responded to protect him as a response to danger. Luo Yuan looked at his hands and skin with care. Without a doubt, it was also his Will that contributed to the layer of faint glow but it was a lot dimmer than he would normally expect. Compared to the glow initiated by him from focusing his Will, the one on his hands looked very weak and dim as if it were going to vanish shortly. Yet, somehow the weak glow resisted the surrounding temperature and regulated his body temperature.

All of a sudden, he understood what was happening. It must be an automatic response from his body when the Will in his cells are stimulated. His cells would have been aware that his skin was exposed to extreme heat and this triggered his Will to react. The magical thing about his cells was that they were an extension of his Will as well as their ability to respond to stimulus. Therefore, his cells would automatically be activated to protect itself under extreme circumstances. He did not have to focus or concentrate his Will for this to happen. The glow generated by the Will of a single cell might be weak, but when the Will of countless cells gathered together, they would most likely be able to guard Luo Yuan against most dangers.

While looking at the layer of glow, he could not help but imagine that perhaps one day he would just stand still and not defend himself and yet he would still be invulnerable to attacks. Given how rapidly he had been evolving, it probably would not take a long time for this to happen. His Will had already been deeply immersed into every layer of his cells. Every time he checked his body, the Will absorbed by his cells would increase. At the same time, the cells would be able to control his body's activities more efficiently. When all of the cells in his body are eventually immersed with his Will, his capabilities might go through significant changes again.

...

Being deep in thought, Luo Yuan did not realize that the sky had suddenly filled with clouds and was starting to get dark. As he raised his head, he realized that the branches above him had disappeared as they were engulfed by the dark clouds that covered the sky. Fortunately, some of the branches were still visible as they

penetrated through the heavy opaque clouds. This assured him that they did not just disappear.

"Oh my god! It's going to rain!" Luo Yuan said in shock.

There were white clouds drifting across the sky not long ago so it was strange that the weather had changed so drastically in just 10 minutes. Luo Yuan frowned though he was not too worried about it. Even though he was in the forest and it seemed like he was standing in an open space, the tree seemed quite resistant to the forces of nature. Even if lightning struck it, the electricity conducted would be absorbed by the tree as there was a great distance between them. At this thought, he no longer cared about the dark clouds above him and looked instead at the tree's roots beneath his feet. Most of the roots were at least 10 meters wide and were incredibly large. Their surface was uneven with cracks and splits all over. Inside these cracks, it was faintly visible that the pith was red, seemingly dense and hot within.

There was a clump of mutated creatures that looked like ants moving in between the cracks. It was one of the few creatures that could survive under such high temperatures which did not seem to threaten them at all. Perhaps, due to the high temperature of the surroundings, it was less likely that they would have natural enemies here. The ants appeared fatter than normal and were moving slowly. Luo Yuan decided to catch one of them to see if there was anything special about them. Suddenly, he heard a thunderous sound coming from within the cracks and immediately withdrew his hand. Fortunately, he was not hurt at all as he was covered by the glow of his Will. The ants seemed agitated by the sparkling discharge all over their bodies which produced a sizzling noise. Its appearance alone was enough to strike fear into the heart

of anyone.

Luo Yuan's expression changed as he suddenly thought of something. Hastily, he used his identification technique on the roots of the tree.

"Species: Woody Plant"

"Name: Lightning Tree"

"Remarks: A rare, half-energized giant tree with that is of a light purple or higher rank. It is generally large and its height is usually a few thousand meters or taller. Its leaves can form clouds through condensation of the air and it has the ability to absorb lightning. It has a sort of spirituality to it as well."

Just as he finished reading, Luo Yuan's body floated in the air as he was shocked by lightning! One of the flashes turned the entire sky bright and the sound of the loud thunder that followed was frightening! Luo Yuan looked somber. The sky was filled with electrostatic charges right after each lightning strike. He immediately shifted his gaze toward the roots of the tree as he was scared looking at beams of blue rays penetrating through the cracks and shining its rays in all directions. The big tree shined with a dazzling light!

All of a sudden, the sky looked like there would be torrential rainfall approaching.

# Chapter 391: Arrival

---

Countless bolts of lightning looked like they were absorbed by the shade of the tree. From afar, the tree was lit up like a giant beam of light. It was a stunning scene to behold. The light continued to spread throughout the tree until it reached the roots. The terrifying energy made the place a horrifying electric field with arcs of static electricity shooting through the air.

Luo Yuan felt like a magnet. His body released galvanic electric energy, not unlike Electro! But, he did not dare stand there a moment longer. He leaped out of the way and, fortunately, he did not land too close to the electric field. He landed at the edge of the roots where the safe zone was a mere two kilometers away. He ran at full force and left the roots of the tree far behind in less than 10 seconds.

However, he did not stop running as he knew he was not in the clear. The giant tree's roots ran deep into the Earth, and what was on the surface was just the tip of an iceberg. It was a surprise that the roots burrowed deep into the barren land of hills. He ran for more than 10 minutes until he was almost a hundred kilometers away before he felt it was safe to slow down.

Lush greens growing abundantly was his signal that he was at a safe distance. Apparently, the lifeless lands on the surface were caused by the scorching heat from the lightning roots underground. Once he saw a sign of greens, he knew that the place was completely out of the range of the tree of lightning and that he was out of the danger zone. Under the rain, he quickly climbed up to a giant tree and stood on the highest branch to have a better look of his surroundings. Lightning and thunder burst through the

storm clouds that darken the sky. Although he was far away, the mind-boggling giant lightning tree looked like it was right in front of him, emitting blinding rays of light in every direction. It was launching beams light into the sky and looked to be also pulsing energy into the ground. Under the gloomy sky, it seemed like the only source of light in the entire land!

Luo Yuan was stunned and his mind wandered into oblivion. Fortunately, the abnormal thunderstorm was gone as quickly as it appeared. Just a few raindrops scattered the surface before it stopped altogether. A few minutes later, the clouds disappeared and the sun was shining through the area.

The Lightning Tree with its giant shadow appeared again. The leaves were shining and there were lights, occasionally bursting out of them. The tree trunk remained a blinding bright white, but it seemed to be getting much dimmer than it was as it was becoming darker and darker. The high temperature of the energy radiating from the tree caused a fog to rise around it. Soon, the entire tree was shrouded in the fog. From afar, it looked like a tree from a fairy tale. It was unreal.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan realized that the system did not update him on any missions related to the giant tree from the start until that very moment. It was shocking!

The system had never announced a mission to him at all. Based on his past experience, he would have probably received a level seven or level eight mission and seeing that he did not receive any, this only meant that this tree was of level nine or above. Any missions that were level nine and above would be cause for worry.

For such level nine creatures, it was beyond his imagination and way above his skill set. Although it was just a tree, he dared not underestimate it.

Its ability to absorb lightning alone implied that it harnessed some terrifyingly powerful energy. Moreover, the detection technique showed that it had a sort of spirituality within it. Although he was interested in the physical characteristics of the giant tree, he was afraid of the consequences if he was to touch it. His ability to predict future outcomes was no help to him in this case. The two-second foresight he had could do nothing against an agile creature like this that attacked as fast as lightning. Two seconds was way too short to make a difference against such plant-based mutated creature with its deadly arcs of static electricity.

Perhaps it would not have done anything if he had only retrieve one of its roots in the beginning. But, with its unpredictable temperament, it could change its mind and obliterate him with some murderous attack. By then everything would be too late, mere seconds of an interval. In the time of the cruel apocalypse, he survived by doing what was necessary, sometimes to terrible ends. But, he would never risk his life or endanger anyone who was with him when he encountered a danger he could not handle. For his time in the Ghost Horse, his thoughts were consumed by the Earth's Pulse.

...

As Luo Yuan was not in a rush to leave, he decided to take a nap on the tree he was in. It was close to the ocean as the rest of his journey would mostly be by the ocean. Aside from some scattered



islands on the ocean that he could find, if he were lucky, there would not be many places for him to land and rest. Thus, he had to recuperate completely before he could fly to Borneo at once. Physical strength was easy to recover, but his Will would take a while each time he used it. He sat quietly in the tree and meditated. Perhaps due to the lightning tree, the mutated creatures here seemed tiny. When it was close to noon, Luo Yuan opened his eyes, well rested. It had been some time since he had an undisturbed moment of peace.

By then, his Will that was drained was completely recovered. He gazed at the lightning tree from his perch up high. It looked like a thunderstorm was coming and the tree was once again ready to absorb its meal of lightning! He sighed and took one last look at the tree, watching it pulse menacingly. He took off the plasma band on his forehead and continued his journey.

After fighting through the thunderstorm created by the Lightning Tree, he arrived at the ocean 20 minutes later! The coast during the apocalypse was not at all what it used to be. All kinds of plants carpeted the sandy beaches and crept their way into the shallow parts of the ocean. From above, Luo Yuan could see the thick roots of trees burrowed deep in the sea water. It was all green, a forest that was 10 kilometers wide, extending deep into the sea. Many seagulls flew on top of the sea-forest, squawking noisily as he flew by.

Large schools of fishes swam vigorously in the water, creating abnormal waves against the tide of the ocean. Further, in the distance, a gigantic whirlpool had formed in the middle of the sea. A 100 meters long giant beast suddenly emerged out of the whirlpool and let out a loud shriek into the sky. The waves crashed

and the roar resonated for miles around.

That was the ocean, a terrifying area in the apocalypse! 99% of living beings on earth thrived under the waters on the ocean. Not long since the apocalypse, it was the first place to fall to mutation. The vast ocean became a breeding ground for the mutated creatures almost instantly. The many different conditions underwater created incredibly unpredictable and dangerous beasts. Nobody could imagine what horrifying water demons lurked under the deep blue sea.

Perhaps to humans, it would forever remain a mystery. Humans could only see some of the mutated creatures' through satellite imagery, but, the dangerous mutated beast lived a long distance away from human civilization. Therefore they were not a threat to human beings at all.

While Luo Yuan was watching in silence, a giant seagull flying by noticed his presence. It folded its wings and dove down from the sky at Luo Yuan like an arrow. It was so fast that there was a sonic boom as it broke the sound barrier! Its speed was pass had surpassed the speed of sound, but it had not even reached its maximum agility.

Within seconds, the seagull was dangerously close to him.

Luo Yuan frowned. Although he too was insanely fast, aerodynamic and was skilled at high-speed attack maneuvers in the air, he had weaknesses. Apart from the obvious one which was the stopping in mid air, he had problems changing directions too.

He gripped his saber tight with not even the slightest hint of fear in his eyes. The bird was nothing compared to the giant golden bird he saw at the lake earlier. The difference was just so apparent that he did not even break a sweat at all. He grinned as he waited for the bird to come close, as he was already poised to kill it!

But then, he released the death grip he had on his saber, as he saw what would happen next. He was shocked!

The seagull flew right through his body!

There was no collision nor was there any contact at all. He was like a shadow, nothing but an illusion that had enticed the bird. The seagull circled him, puzzled and afraid of what had happened. As it looked upon Luo Yuan, it suddenly backed way and shrilled in fear!

Soon after, it fled the place as fast as it could, as if it had seen a ghost. Luo Yuan looked at the space bubble that surrounded him. Upon further scrutiny, he noticed that there was a gentle breeze flowing inside the bubble. He was stunned. In some context, his ability to move through the fourth dimension meant that he could transport himself through the space-time fabric. The inside of the space-time bubble should be independent of the world outside it where these two spaces had no contact between them. In other words, the inside and outside of the space-time bubble could be considered to be two completely different worlds.

Attacks from outside the space-time bubble could not touch him

but at the same time, he could not attack from the inside out. Such functions would allow him to avoid obstacles without having to move a muscle. Luo Yuan felt a sense of freedom from the terrors around him. He felt like he had the world in the palm of his hand!

He did not have to worry about flying in straight lines anymore and, most importantly, he no longer had to worry about crashing into things or attacking mutated beasts as he flew by. He could even fly through a mountain! Nothing could stop him as long as it was not a gravitational-celestial-enhanced-super-being.

As time went by, his confidently flew faster and faster. He flew up to the clouds, where the view of the ocean became that of a deep blue canvas that was filled with curvy threads of waves!

He looked carefully at the scattered islands along the way and matched them with the satellite images he had memorized. Apart from occasionally adjusting his course, he enjoyed the complete freedom of flying.

The journey was much faster than he imagined. In less than an hour, a giant island appeared before him. Before the apocalypse, Borneo was the third largest island in the world with a surface area of 700,000 square kilometers. Although part of its surface had sunk due to the rising sea-level, it still was massive. It was more than 600 kilometers long and more than 400 kilometers wide in the north south side.

The entire island was filled with lush greenery and living organisms. At the same time, that implied the most definite presence of danger. Luo Yuan descended and landed on the shore.

The strength of his curvature flight was incredibly small, there was barely a wave made in the air. Although only a tiny ripple was made on the water, there was no guarantee that it would not be noticed by the extraterrestrial civilization. For safety purposes, he chose to land the far edge of the island.

Just as he landed, a mutated crab with froth oozing from its mouth darted his way and attacked him. It resembled a crab but was housed in a flat metal-like shell with eight strong claws, instead of two. It came at him very quickly, and with its claws in the air, it looked like a top with a blur of razor sharp blades, dancing in the air.

Luo Yuan pulled out his saber and leaped more than 10 meters into the air, out of the reach of the whirlwind of claws. He landed in front of it, aimed at its shell and split it in half. An invisible space wave slashed straight between its eyes. The three-storey tall creature was cut clean into half!

A few other crabs that were watching on, plotting their ambush, ran for their lives immediately. They disappeared into the jungle in the blink of an eye.

...

It was the boundary line of the ocean and the land. Most of the mutated creatures here had the marine animal characteristics. There was a lobster-like mutated beast that looked like an armor lying on a hill of sea shells. There was a new amphibian hybrid that was from a fish family. Not only were the creatures huge, they were very peculiar too. It stunned Luo Yuan who had only

encountered land-based mutated beasts this whole time.

He did not dare to stay for long. He fled the place with his Zhanmadao held high before him. There were lesser marine creatures after he had passed more than 10 kilometers in land.

The buildings occupied by the extraterrestrial civilization were located at the bottom of a valley in the middle of the Borneo mainland. It was approximately 300 kilometers from where he was. With his speed, Luo Yuan estimated he could reach the place before dark.

Before the apocalypse, the population of the Borneo lands was low. Now it looked like it was in full bloom, with plants entangled along most parts of the dark forest. There was no military presence in the country and it was one of the areas that fell first when the apocalypse happened. By far, it was the most dangerous area that he had ever been to, compared to all the rest. As he was walking, there were already three missions sent from the system.

Knowing that the extraterrestrial civilization was near, he ignored all the missions that came his way. He needed his undivided attention for the mission ahead, everything else could wait. He did not stop walking until it was almost 5 pm in the evening, he slowed down and exercised more caution as he noticed a building in the valley, right in front of him!

He walked for another few minutes and stopped as he passed through the front of the valley. He found a cave to rest safely, undetected by the extraterrestrial civilization just outside. The sky was not dark yet, so he decided he would wait a little while longer

for complete darkness. He needed the element of surprise against his enemies.

Whether being in the darkness or not, he had a feeling that it would not affect the advanced extraterrestrial technology, but no matter what, even the machines needed to rest and the chance for error on their part was present.

Luo Yuan did not know if the extraterrestrial civilization was the same as mankind as he knew it, where they worked in the morning and rest at night or if they were some intelligence that feared the light, making them the complete opposite to human beings. No matter what, before he could confirm anything, he felt more comfortable to investigate at night.

The cave was small, it could only fit one person comfortably. Luo Yuan felt a little hungry and looked around the cave. There was a movement just a few feet from him. With his incredibly fast reflexes, he shot out his hand and held down a half-meter long mutated beast carefully with his hand. No matter how much it struggled, it could move with his hand at its neck. Then, the sharp sound of bones cracking echoed through the cave. The back of the animal's head had caved in, crushed under the force of his grip.

The night was quiet and filled with unpredictable dangers. He needed to be alert at all times and be prepared for an attack at all times. He tore off the skin on the mutated beast's neck with his fingers. He then bit open a thick exposed artery and swallowed its blood. The disgusting taste made him gag a few times, but he managed to swallow in the end. Soon the mutated beast was sucked dry, and he ditched its carcass outside of the cave.

He could not light a fire as it would attract unwanted attention. It might have been no harm at all, but he could not risk it. The extraterrestrial civilization was far more dangerous than a level eight creature. If he was discovered, death or even more terrifying consequences, awaited him.

He took a deep breath and smiled. His blood-stained teeth made him look like a ruthless vampire!

The sky was getting dark, and it was pitch black in the cave. Luo Yuan sat quietly and waited patiently. He took a nap to restore his energy while waiting for the night to come. Time passed by, Luo Yuan remained seated and motionless like a statue.

It was 2 a.m. in the dead of the night. He opened his eyes and looked at his watch.

He stood up quietly and left the cave. He was like a black phantom approaching the valley in silence.

It was his first time here. However, the terrain had been analyzed countless times by the military through satellite imagery. Even if it was an insignificant slope or a pile of rock, they knew it like the back of their hands.

As he was approached the building, Luo Yuan was all fours, crawling forward on the ground. After half an hour, he peered through the bushes to study the building.



There was no moonlight at all that night, and darkness swallowed the entire forest. His pupils were large to catch at illumination that came his way, and they were like black holes in his eyes. In the bushes, a dark-gray crescent shaped building appeared before him.

# Chapter 392: No Other Way

---

The building was 200 meters around and more than 100 meters tall. The surface was smooth with no signs of cracks, patterns, designs or writings, present its perfect curve. It was like a dark, round ball that was flipped inside out.

Such a building was insignificant before the apocalypse, as bigger and more eccentric constructions were everywhere. But at that moment, the place was infested with mutated beasts and there was no sign of mankind to be seen. In the bushes, this stand-alone building in the valley appeared to be out of place. It looked very peculiar in the night.

Luo Yuan watched in silence for a while, controlled his breath and got ready to move forward to attack. When he was only a few hundred meters away, he felt something odd.

It was too quiet.

The usual sound of insects were barely even there. All the noises that he had heard were coming from far away. Suddenly, he realized that there was not a single mutated creature in sight all along the journey to the building.

In shock, he looked around immediately. Besides plants, there was nothing else.

"This is not normal. Could it be a poisonous gas or some other tactics?" he thought in alarm.

His heart raced in his chest. He did not want to risk anything so he used Will to inspect his body. He checked his body carefully and found that nothing strange had affected him to dull his senses. He then scanned the ground beneath him for abnormalities. There was nothing beneath the earth. Not even a dead corpse rotting away beneath his feet.

He was relieved for a moment, clenched his teeth and silently stepped forward towards the building.

The mission was not a simple one as the fate of mankind was in his hands. Even if nobody was to blame him, and he was to retreat to preserve his life, he would not forgive himself for the cowardice of his action. He walked slowly towards the building. His black suit was the best disguise in the darkness. He crept like a phantom in the shadows, and his stealth operation was smooth undetected, so far. Half an hour later, he was approximately 1,000 meters away from the building. He stopped and did not move any further.

At such a distance, although it was dark, the building was crystal clear to him. Its smooth surface seemed to shine in the moonlight. There were no windows or any other fixtures on the building. He circled the building for a better understanding of its construction. After a few times, all he found out that it was just a dark, smooth, beautiful crescent building, and nothing more.

Furthermore, it seemed to be completely sealed off as there were no entrances to be found. However, Luo Yuan had already predicted that. After all, the extraterrestrial civilization was not of this planet. Every planet was different in terms of adaptation to

ozone layer pressures and compositions. Those living on earth could live and breathe easily but perhaps to the aliens, it was deadly. The interior of the building obviously had its own air production and circulation system.

The night was quiet, Luo Yuan buried himself in a mound of dried leaves. He exhaled slowly and felt unusually calm, considering his circumstances. Although he was 1000 meters away from the building, he did not simply wait. His prediction ability allowed him to attempt different scenarios in his head to test the responses of the extraterrestrial civilization.

His first predicted scenario had him slowly walking to the building. And suddenly, everything went blank and nothing happened two seconds later. That was a definite failure.

With the second scenario, he made a beeline towards the building at almost 300 meters per second. In less than 0.1 seconds, a tiny hole appeared on the surface of the building. A high-energy ray hit Luo Yuan in the forehead and he blacked out. The defense of the building seemed to be extra sensitive to high speeds. It could detect targets within 0.1 seconds and instantly eliminate them. It was upsetting. He let out a sigh in defeat.

A while later, he tried again.

This time he did not run in straight line, instead, he zigzagged towards the building. The building immediately attacked once again. The first attack missed him, but the second attack hit him and again, he blacked out.

Luo Yuan tried a few times more. Besides occasionally avoiding the first hit, he always got attacked by the second hit and it was right on his forehead. Each prediction seemed to end with a blackout, meaning instant death.

Luo Yuan was really tensed and his heart was beating fast. The extraterrestrial civilization had terrifying military technology which enabled them to lock on targets immediately and state of the art data analysis systems. In such a situation, no matter how unpredictable he was with his approach, he could never run away from the system's hawkeye-like detection.

It was horrifying for such a strong evolved human like him to feel powerless. To be in such a situation, there was nothing he could do and nowhere that he could run. No matter how swift his Agility was and how fast he ran, death was the only result.

Without the help of his Predictions, he would have been in all the certain death situations that he saw in his mind if he had rushed at the building.

As his heartbeat slowed down, he tried again. This time he tested some attack tactics where he tossed makeshift spears and rocks at the building. The speed of his toss was almost three times faster than the speed of sound. His +16 Agility allowed him to attack at an impressive frequency. He seemed to have transformed into the thousand-handed Guan Yin where his hands were dancing in the air throwing spears and rocks at the structure. The attacks were like a rainstorm that pelted the extraterrestrial construction, but any spear or rock at a distance of 10 meters away from the building

was shot down by the high-energy beam. The last hit was on his head and he blacked out again.

He did not stop testing his predictions that night. He even braced himself to get closer but he retreated before he was 200 meters away, as he knew that if he stepped any further, he would reach the security zones automatic defense mechanism. No matter how slow and harmless he was, there was no escape for him. He found no blind spots or weaknesses he could exploit.

All the results of his predictions were extremely disappointing. The best one would be for him to hide behind a giant rock with his body buried in the ground. But instead of a high-energy ray, there was a large ball of energy that catapulted out of the top of the building. This time, he did not see himself dying as the two seconds of prediction was instantly blacked out. With just the impact of the energy boulder, the result would be no difference from the rest.

When the sun had risen in the sky, Luo Yuan let out a sigh and left the place cautiously. Half an hour later, he back in the cave that he was before. He leaned weakly against the wall, pale and exhausted. Although he had stayed hidden and only watched from a distance without moving, the invisible battles that he had in his prediction were no less exhausting than real battles. Especially when he was foiled again and again by the results, it discouraged him. There was no hope for him to breach the walls when he could not even break through the first-line of defense.

Leaning on the wall, he frowned. He could not think of any other ways to do it in such a short period of time. The building was like a

porcupine with all its thorns up, making it unapproachable. The only hope that he had now was that the alien or robots would not reside in there forever.

The mission he had was to first investigate the extraterrestrial civilization and his second objective was to retrieve technological devices they used. He should not be seen by anyone, if there was a risk of that, he would retreat.

The criteria of missions from the reconstruction area were wider and more meticulous, but not revealing himself was never a mandatory requirement. Besides, it was not compulsory for him to take up any other mission that was assigned to the system. As it is, it was quite an achievement to be able to reach this stage. It was impossible for any other evolved human to complete the mission if they were assigned to it. He was at his limit!

However, Luo Yuan was unwilling to return empty handed but at the same time, he did not want the reconstruction area to be demolished by the extraterrestrial civilization.

Suddenly, there was an uproar in the forest. It seemed like countless creatures were running for their lives!

"What happened?" he thought. He stood up and ran out of the cave, taking care not to be seen.

He noticed there was a tiny shudder in the air. It was barely there and its frequency was extremely low. The wave could almost be seen by the naked eye and such a wave made Luo Yuan feel as if his

organs were about to explode!

He looked at the direction the panicked mutated creatures were stampeding to figure out the origins of the wave. It seemed to have started from the valley. He realized something that caused a chill to run down his spine.

"No wonder there were no mutated creatures around the building, all of them were chased away by the painful ultrasound. Thankfully, the wave was absorbed by the walls of the mountain and the air. When the wave reached this location, it must have weakened." he concluded.

Ultrasound could damage a creature's organs, cause nausea and worse, death. It was extremely dangerous. If he did not leave the place earlier, he would have succumbed to the wave's effects.

Suddenly, Luo Yuan had an idea! "Right. Wave and resonance!" he exclaimed to himself.

He grinned from ear to ear. Since the building was like a porcupine in defense, nobody could approach it. But, he could use force to open it. Perhaps an earthquake could make that happen.

Every time he used Earth Stomp, there would be a quake and through resonance, there would be an earthquake that would shake the whole area. He had that thought when he was in the reconstruction area and the ground in the area was too weak. Minor earthquakes would happen from time to time. He could not estimate the consequences of the resonance and to prevent a



catastrophe, he had never tested his Earth Stomp in the reconstruction area.

Since he had left the reconstruction area, there was no need for such experiments and he had long forgotten about it. The infrasound here enlightened him to try the technique or else he would have forgotten about it.

But before the experiment, he would need a safe place to practice his skill and not be disturbed by anyone. He was too close to the valley. A real earthquake aside, the impact of the Earth Stomp would be equally massive. He had to be extra cautious as to not get too close. Even if he had a solution to beat the building's defense, it was not blind and would still obliterate him if he got too close.

Still, it was not ideal for him to be too far away. He could not get close enough to create resonance in the area without attracting the attention of the extraterrestrial civilization. He was in a pickle! Luo Yuan thought about it quickly and had an idea.

He took off the band on his forehead and entered his four-dimensional vision. He thought of utilizing his ability to warp through space-time to go underground.

He was solemn for a moment as the idea was really risky. Even with his prediction ability, he saw what would happen during two seconds of the earthquake and a tiny mistake would lead to being buried alive underground. But it was the only plan he had at such short notice.

He began going through the fourth dimension. As he attempted to distort the space-time around him, it took more than five minutes for the space-time bubble around him to take form. He then took control and sank into the ground. Having no sight of anything underground, he relied solely on his Sense to determine the direction at which he was going. The coverage of his sense shrunk from the usual 100 meters he could sense at to only about 30 meters with all the earth that was around. However, though this was the case, it was sufficient.

To create more impact, he moved forward to the valley coordinates that was registered in his head. He arrived at the border of the valley which was eight kilometers from the building before he stopped.

He used his Will to get rid of the space-time bubble. The space underground spread and formed a two-meter wide compartment inside the mountain. It was located eight meters below the surface of the mountain and was six meters from the ground up. The two meters of humic layer aside, the lithosphere was four meters thick. The distance was the perfect threshold for the collapse from the impact of the earthquake. If something went wrong, he could escape easily.

It was the best distance for him to escape within two seconds based on what he saw in his prediction. It was his last shot!

He put his band back over his forehead, took a deep breath and entered the Earth Pulse mode.

# Chapter 393: Spaceship

---

His heartbeat slowed to a slow yet powerful tempo. Immense strength was continuously drawn up into him from the ground. His drained physical strength within his four-dimensional vision was restored instantly. Luo Yuan closed his eyes and cleared his mind. He felt the complicated frequency of the area in the quiet that surrounded him.

Sensing the earth's frequency was a gift he had. Ever since he became an evolved human, the ability to sense all frequency waves, especially when he was in the Earth Pulse mode, came to him instinctively. The waves of the earth were so clear to his senses, they were like the radiating glow of a candle in the dark. As compared to the darkness, figuring out the mixed and complexed waves in the Earth Pulse could only be separated with specifically honed vibration impulse senses.

The waves of the area were clearer and more active as he got closer to it. With each breath, Luo Yuan felt a clear, intense rhythm. The geological formation of this area was not as complicated as he thought. Removing the humidity from the area, he focused on the composition of the mountain. It was made of granite, stuck together which formed a single rock structure with almost no cracks. That meant that even if the waves were intense, they were cluttered. Such terrain was the best place for resonance.

"Let's begin!" Luo Yuan thought to himself. He opened his eyes, lifted up his foot and stomped down hard. There was a light shake on the ground. He continued a second time, and then a third...

As compared to the Earth Stomp, the impact of the quakes as he stomped were minuscule. He was controlling his Will, not only to avoid an uproar which would alert the extraterrestrial civilization but also to conserve his energy.

As long as the frequencies match, each quake did not require much strength. It was more of a domino effect where all he needed was the continuous impulse from the resonance that picked up the frequency.

He proceeded to stomp his feet, again and again.

The resonance began. Dust fell from the ceilings overhead. He could hear that walls crack and chunks of gravel slide off to the ground. He was covered with dust, but, his eyes remained focused and he continued his stomping.

He was an earth based evolved human. He was always one with the earth to gain power and rejuvenation, and at the same time, he had control of it. Although, his control was limited by the range of his Sense, where he could do nothing about any area that was out of range.

But this time, the tables were turned! The Earth Stomp was not achieved by the simple lifting of a foot, that was just the start. In reality, not only did he have to match the frequency of his Earth Pulse, but it required a lot of focused attention for the perfect release. That was the reason why the coverage of the Earth Pulse was similar to the range of his Sense.

However, as the resonance was initiated, the limits of his Sense's coverage was shattered. With the spread of the vibration's coverage area, his control was widened correspondingly. As the resonance spread wider and wider, everything went haywire!

By then, Luo Yuan was immersed in the central zone of the vibration and could not pull himself out of it. His heart and soul were one with the earth, while the resonance spread from the initial 100 meters to 1,000 meters, and then 10,000 meters...

Suddenly, the earth was part of him!

The mountain was a part of his body, the ravines in the valley were his limbs, the soft soil was his skin while the plants and a variety of mutated creatures were the mold and parasites on his living being. He felt like he was invincible and an endless strength rose up within him. One stroke of his hand could make the mountain collapse and the ground crack open beneath him. It continued spreading all over his body at a lightning speed, his strength was multiplying at an amazing speed!

He was concerned but he could not control it. All he could do was just allow things to happen around him. Soon his concern faded as his strength continued to build up within him. Soon he felt his consciousness blur as he gained more power, and his body started to enlarge...

Suddenly, there was an intense shudder on the ground that made things fall all around him, but Luo Yuan remained still. The Earth Stomp under his feet went on and the intensity of the resonance did not falter. The major change in the terrain deformed the cave

and the walls were cracked from top to bottom. The two-meter wide cave shrunk to less than half a meter.

Giant pieces of gravels rained down and large rocks of up to 100 kilograms smashed on Luo Yuan's head, but he did not feel anything at all. Blood trailed down his forehead and dripped off his chin. Drops of blood influenced by his Will floated in the air and some just fell to the ground making small puddles at his feet. It was like mercury, a viscous, shiny liquid that rolled on the ground, rippled by the chaotic vibrations.

As time went by, the ground above was in complete turmoil! The mountain had split into half and collapsed to the ground. A huge piece of land had sunk and formed a giant sinkhole! A fearsome crack formed like an enormous mouth with canine teeth, which opened wide and swallowed the mudslides around it. Countless mutated beasts were either petrified with fear on the ground or ran for their lives over all the dead bodies beneath them.

...

An intense crash woke him from his trance like state, like a gong in the morning. He looked around him and a chill ran down his spine. The cave walls were so close together, some sharp rocks were close to piercing his body. If his body was not as tough, they would have through and killed him instantly.

He did not hesitate to break the rock edges with a sweep of his hand. He stomped hard and gave the wall on the top of his head a punch. In such a treacherous situation, his adrenaline pumped quickly, which allowed him to push his limits with his speed. An

endless barrage of punches made contact with the wall. Each hit unleashed 20 tonnes of strength, like cannons bomb pummeling the wall.

The tough rock crumbled like biscuits under such terrifying force. He was like a super-rock drilling machine. In a blink of an eye, he emerged from the underground cavern he was trapped in. He wiped the dust and blood off his face and was stunned at the scene that met him. Many giant trees had fallen, their roots high in the air. There were severe changes to the terrain. He looked at the 10-meter wide crack not far away and the hills that just shot up nearby from the movement of the tectonic plates beneath the surface. He gasped in surprise, surprised at the terrifying impact of the resonance.

At this moment, he was truly shocked by what he could do. When he snapped out of the zone, he noticed something strange. He was shocked! Not only did his Sense now have an unbelievably wide coverage, allowing him to feel up to 500-meters of distance, with images that were much clearer. He glanced at his system updates and noticed that his Sense was now +16. It had gained +2 at once!

Added to his Haunted Locust Heart, it was +17, which was the same as his Will.

He was happy as his Sense came to achieve a much greater potential. Not only was the coverage widened, it was now the same as his Will where both sides of his mental strength were now fearsomely powerful. It was like a material that had both characteristics of strength as well as incredible malleability, one of the ways to describe the ultimate form of mental strength.

The upgrade of his Sense allowed him to see much clearly when he was using his Will. "It seems like the change in Sense was caused by the resonance which affected my state of mind." Luo Yuan guessed. He recalled the amazing feeling he had earlier. While he was grateful for the upgrade in his Sense, he was concerned.

He did not expect the resonance to be so dangerous as it was sent forth with his state of mind. If he was not alarmed by the danger and did not snap out of the mode, the spread of his mindset would have been horrifying, and he might have still been deeply immersed in the invisible power. Even worse, his consciousness would have integrated to the ground and he would not be able to return to his own body, which would have wasted away under the rubble.

Fortunately, everything was over. Not only did he survive the danger, his Sense got a massive upgrade, he concluded. Simultaneously, a thought flashed through his mind. He calmed his excitement and set his focus back on the mission at hand. "Let's see what happened to the building," he said aloud, a menacing tone to his voice.

He pointed his foot in the direction of the building and leaped forward. The day had just dawned, but the sun was not out. There was still darkness in the forest. The terrain was completely destroyed by the resonant-caused earthquake. The ground caved in, mountains slid away and there were some spouting fountains that were caused by the breaking and redirecting of an underground river. It showered water all around him.



While concealing himself behind bushes and trees, Luo Yuan moved forward cautiously. In less than 20 minutes, he arrived at the building site. He was thrilled to see that the building was nowhere to be found. Instead, there were piles of giant rocks all over the place. The extraterrestrial civilization was out of luck! During the earthquake, there was mud slide on the mountain next to the building. Half the cliff had disappeared, and massive amounts of rocks and mud devoured the building to the chunks of rocks he saw.

To be buried in gravel that was almost 100,000 tonnes, even if it did not break into smaller boulders, the aliens and robot could not get out of the building in time. As he stood there assessing the damage, there was a shiver in the earth and the terrain shifted again!

He heard a loud thud that sounded like a thunder and the rocks on the ground shook with the vibrations. At the same time, a terrifying heat rose out of the ground, and the heat waves seemed to be rumbling.

Mist from the instant vaporization of water shot out of the piles of hot gravels, the air was suddenly covered in a fog!

The temperature was insanely high as the wet rocks became dry instantly. Soon, dark red lava started flowing out of the gaps in the earth. The earth shook more intensely, giant rocks rolled around like pebbles. It felt like there was a giant creature trying to escape from it. Luo Yuan who was initially relaxed became anxious. He stood up and held his saber tight in his hands. He ran towards the

pile of rocks 1,000 meters away in the blink of an eye.

Just as he got closer, the terrifying heat wave almost singed his hair. He summoned a layer of Will that coated his body, and the heat wave was blocked off him immediately. He looked at the chaos that was smoking and melting around him, clenched his teeth and leaped up in the air away from it all.

He used his Sense and focused it on the interior of the building. The images he saw in his head gave him goosebumps. He and the reconstruction area were wrong! The crescent object was not a building. It was not an outpost. It was a mini spaceship!

The 100,000 tonnes of gravels that had buried it only made some insignificant tiny holes, scratches and minor deformation. Nothing majorly destructive had happened to it.

Suddenly, its base that was buried in the ground reshaped itself into a rocket and plasma flames fired out of it. The ground below it had become red hot and formed a pool of molten lava with bright, white beams that quickly vaporized in the air. It also released a hot and dense gas which melted the area nearby.

There was a scary force from the spaceship's engine. The shake got more and more intense, countless rocks flew out from beneath it and the ship rose swiftly into the air. Luo Yuan was astounded. With such speed, the spaceship would escape in less than half a minute! He moved around so that he would not sink into the melting ground beneath him. Looking down from the sky as he flew up, the ground got tinier below him. He held his saber high, his heart racing in his chest. The intense anxiety made his palms

sweaty, it felt like he could not hold his blade any longer.

The mission made him feel like he was dancing with death. There was no other possibility of survival if he failed the mission. When he battled with mutated beasts, even if he failed, there was still a chance he could escape alive. But his opponent this time was a spaceship from outer space! The technology used remained unknown as well as its tactics. He emptied his mind and he gathered all his Will to his saber!

He waited for the time to come with a blank consciousness. At that moment, he only had one shot! All his terrors, worries, tactics and thorough plannings would be all behind him if it worked. He was a hunter, the most powerful hunter in the apocalypse. The only thing different was that the target was not a mutated beast, but an alien spaceship.

It felt like time had slowed down, the seconds passed by excruciatingly. He felt like he was levitating in the air, tonnes of soil slid off the spaceship as it launched into the air.

Suddenly, he became furious. He slashed down his Zhanmadao and drew a bright deadly stroke in the air causing the space to explode. He reached his maximum speed. His body became a blur, his face could not be seen as he darted down. Countless saber strikes were like bolts of lightning in the darkness of the dawn. He made a few hundred swings per second, an airtight web was formed, mercilessly slicing the spaceship. The armor on the spaceship that seemed tough was nothing but a thin sheet of paper under such terrifying slashes.

Two seconds later, the engine died after a few shot of flames splurted out of the rocket.

Three seconds later, the top of the spaceship fell open, sliced into pieces like a peeled orange. It collapsed in the dirt, completely destroyed. Luo Yuan hopped off the wreckage, landing lightly on the ground.

# Chapter 394: Escape

---

Before he hopped off the spaceship, Luo Yuan's checked the entire building with his Sense for any signs of life. The insane slashing earlier had damaged most of the energy-transmission structures within the cabin. It was dark inside and apart from some glowing lights on machines that made no sense to him. It seemed to be empty. There were no living creatures or intelligent robots in sight. Although, if there were any, they would not have lasted long against his glowing blade.

While he was still in the air, he went into the Earth Pulse mode. As he landed, he lifted his foot and stomped down hard. His Sense that had gained two points made his Earth Pulse gain a level too. It was now level seven. The power of his Earth Stomp was a few times stronger than it was before.

An explosion echoed through the jungle like a bomb went off on the deck of the spaceship. The deck shook violently, but there was no damage to it at all. It was tough. However, the outer layer, packaging and strange decorations in the cabin splintered and shattered into millions of tiny pieces.

The entire spaceship shuddered for a few moments after. The effect of his Earth Stomp was no longer limited to that particular area. The 'ground' was now more of a general reference to his range. As long as the structure was connected to the ground and was not an independent system that floated in the air, the effect was no different to him stomping right on top of it. He did not stop his attack on the ship. He stomped three times continuously and the entire spaceship rocked fiercely.

The weaponry on the ship was no doubt powerful, but at the same time, it had its weaknesses. It was deadly at long distance attacks that were almost impossible to defend, had an almost impenetrable outer shell and it was also terrifyingly flexible to movement and strategy. However, when the interior was compromised, it fell apart immediately. The same would have happened to mankind in a similar attack, Luo Yuan thought, as the extraterrestrial beings had technology that could easily annihilate any human countermeasure he knew.

His strong Sense allowed him to visualize all the movement within the spaceship. Perhaps the attack was too sudden and Luo Yuan's intrusion into the spaceship was so quick that the aliens had no time to brace themselves for the attack. There were only seven aliens in the spaceship and all of them seemed to have died when the first Earth Stomp hit. They were all smashed into small heaps of minced meat and bone. One of the corpses laid on a crescent-shaped machine. It seemed to be the only one that had managed to escaped the attack but it had passed out and laid there motionless. Seeing that it was was not moving, it was no threat to him so he decided not to slice it open with his saber just yet.

However, as compared to the fragile life forms that were on the ship, all the robots that were still intact had begun stabilizing and rebooting the ship's powerful defense system. The Earth Stomp was nothing to such terrifyingly intelligent robots. They were similar to the Earthly robots in shape as they were round and sturdy. It seemed like they were categorized into three modes based on color and size.

Luo Yuan had seen the smallest one before. The middle-level one

was yellow and stood at a height of one meter while the final robot was green and 1.5 meters tall.

To mankind, such a robot was tiny. Even for the third green robot, it seemed to not pose a threat at all. But, considering the size of the aliens, which was half a meter tall, such robots were considered massive.

The extraterrestrial civilization seemed to worship spherical figures. Be it the decorations of rooms, devices and the shapes of their robots, most of them were designed to be spherical. The shape influenced everything in the spaceship. Suddenly, Luo Yuan sensed the presence of a mini intelligent robot near the cabin that seemed to notice disturbance. It flew straight at him with a wide smile on its robotic face.

Luo Yuan lifted up his foot and stomped down hard again. That was no longer an Earth Stomp, but instead, what happened was more of a powerful Earth Geyser!

The deck shook once more, a terrifying wave pierced through the deck straight at the flying robot. Without a moment to react, it was hit hard by the force, rocketed into the ceiling and fell hard on the ground.

Slashes of electric arcs sparked on its surface. It struggled for a while, its body seemed like it was attempting an escape. But with a soft fizz followed by a tiny explosion, it fell immediately and its body shook the last time.

What the small robot had experienced was not a simple physical hit, but instead, it was hit with a high-frequency quake from the Earth Geyser. The more precise the technology, the more complicated the internal structure. Once a tiny part of the system was affected, the entire system would be compromised.

His Earth Geyser attack was the best against such intelligent robots. Luo Yuan used the same method to kill the rest of them too. If one hit was not enough, he could repeat it two or three times for better effect.

As time went by, the intelligent robots lay paralyzed, fizzing on the deck floor.

The strength of the internal weapons of the spaceship was very limited. After removing the external laser beam 'claws' of the spaceship, there were no other threats left within the structure.

He then decided to initiate a large scale attack to take it down. His strong Sense made the entire spaceship a kill zone for the last Earth Geyser attack.

Luo Yuan noticed a trail of smoke out of the control room that was located in the middle of the spaceship. The screens in the room started to shut off one by one.

Something seemed to be affecting the energy-transfer circuit, electric sparks shot high into the air! The reserved energy and machines lost their power and froze.



Soon, all the lights in the spaceship went off and the actual gravity in the ship was restored.

The gravity in the spaceship was only 60% the gravity of the earth. Luo Yuan felt like he was floating and it made him very uncomfortable. After a few seconds, the gravity went back to normal, and he felt much better.

After the power of the spaceship was completely out, he proceeded to destroy the possible cameras and all the controls on the spaceship. Now, he felt safer as nothing recorded his massacre of all the aliens.

Finally, Luo Yuan was relieved that the mission was a success. There were two stories in the spaceship and the bottom floor had a larger compartment. It was the location of the power center and an engine filled with gigantic metal tunnels. It was complex like a maze, and that floor was no doubt the core of the spaceship was where the most valuable pieces of technology were stored.

However, those gadgets were not what Luo Yuan was after. Those objects were massive and at least 100 tonnes to 10,000 tonnes. Even a simple small part weighed 100 kilograms! With him alone, even if he tried, he would not be able to take much back with him. Furthermore, he knew very well that the technology that was needed the most by the reconstruction area was not from the spaceship engine. Instead, they were more interested in the attack capabilities developed by the extraterrestrial civilization.

Higher functional energy weapons, higher density and more concrete nuclear fusion devices as well as more powerful analyzing

abilities or more advanced detection techniques were part of the inventory he was supposed to search for in the wreckage.

Fortunately, all the intelligent robots were fitted with the first three technological advancements they needed. Although they were small, size did not determine the power within it. Though it was not the latest updated technology, skills were transferable and the differences were not too major. The biggest difference would have been the matchlock and flintlock, which came with similar threats anyway.

For the fourth technology they needed, it all depended on luck. However, based on Luo Yuan's estimation, that was a simplified version of such a technology within the intelligent robots.

Immediately he ran towards the cabin like a puff of smoke. The cabin was locked with a dark metal rod. It would have been difficult for an ordinary human being to open but it would not stop Luo Yuan. He unsheathed his Zhanmadao, and in a few slashes, the door fell apart.

There was an alien lying flat on the floor, and it seemed to be a ranked official among the extraterrestrial civilization. It was 1.5 meters tall as compared to the rest which was only half a meter tall. This alien being seemed to be more important than the others. At the same time, it did manage to take six Earth Geysers before it collapsed.

There was a transistor on the concave arc of its round head, and it was still blinking. Although it could not move as it was completely paralyzed, Luo Yuan was still cautious. He summoned a

hint of Will that made his palm glow and directed his it towards the robot. After a fizz came from it, the robot had been totally incapacitated.

He went ahead to lift the alien. As it turned out, it was quite heavy. It was almost 600 kilograms but with his +17 Strength, he could handle it with ease. He then rushed out through the tunnels with the only survivor on his back. No matter what information they had about the extraterrestrial civilization, the captive alien could reveal a lot more and even help mankind advance themselves with their technology. It was crucial to his whole mission. Its willingness was not an issue as many evolved humans in the reconstruction area had the hypnosis and mind control abilities. Luo Yuan chuckled at the thought.

To prevent the alien from regaining consciousness, Luo Yuan used his Will to put it into a deep sleep. The half-meter tall robots were petite and weighed not more than 30 kilograms. He placed it on top of the alien and lifted them both. To his surprise, it did not seem to add any extra burden to him at all.

He dared not stay any longer. He glanced at all the machines around him for one last time with a heavy heart. His eyes especially lingered on the supercomputer that was outside the control room in the middle of the spaceship that had caught his eye since he started searching the place. Unfortunately, he could not bring it along as it was not part of his inventory.

He turned around in regret and ran immediately with the aliens on his shoulder.

He knew that in all that time since the outpost spaceship lost contact with the mothership, the base camp of the extraterrestrial civilization in outer space would have been notified. The longer he stayed, the more dangerous it would be.

Even the surrounding area was not safe anymore. He was lucky this time that the civilization had not managed to fight back. His ability would have only played a small part in his victory while the rest of the mission was completely due to good fortune. He was not sure if he could be this lucky next time.

He went back to his cave, retrieved his backpack and continued to run. He scaled the mountains at lighting speed and hid in the shadows of the forest to conceal his retreat. He launched his four-dimensional vision to aid in his escape. With all the weight added by his loot, the speed that he could travel through his space-time bubble was slowed down significantly.

Worry began to settle on his shoulders as his heart raced in his chest. He was not this afraid when he attacked the spaceship. However, he only realized the consequences of his actions as he began his escape. Not only was his life on the line, he now realized that he had most likely initiated a war with the extraterrestrial civilization and that they might launch an attack on the planet.

The incident was very serious as six out of seven aliens were killed while one was held captive by him, and the entire spaceship was completely destroyed. Without major repairs, it was completely useless. He could not be sure if the attack had revealed who he was to the aliens in outer space. He had attempted to destroy all recorded evidence but was not sure if any video

identification of the attack was sent to the mothership. The difference in technology was too vast, and no matter how careful he was, there was a possibility that he could be recognized. If they found out or even suspected that it was done by a human, Luo Yuan could not imagine what they would do to seek revenge.

He took a deep breath and removed the negative thoughts from his mind. At that moment, it was no use overthinking it. Since the extraterrestrial civilization was capable of deadly warfare, facing them should not be a cowardly affair. Even if that meant the end of mankind, they were ready to fight for their lives.

...

With the extra weight on his back, it was a surprise that his space-time bubble still managed to propel him forward at full speed. The first 10 minutes of his flight had him moving forward slowly but at a consistent pace. Although, half an hour later, he broke through the speed of sound with ease. He got faster and faster and soon, the island disappeared in the distance beyond the horizon. He could feel the breeze of the ocean, blowing on his face and with whatever he had, he proceeded to fly as fast as he could.

He did not dare fly straight to the reconstruction area as it was too risky. He barely had any knowledge of the extraterrestrial civilization's protocol for search and rescue operations. Regardless if it was the intelligent robot or the alien that survived, he could not guarantee if any of them had positioning signal on them that alerted the others of their locations.

An hour later, Luo Yuan landed on a small island off the coast. He

put the robot down in the sand, and carefully slid the alien off his back. He started to check the alien thoroughly. It wore a tight one-piece suit which was similar to a space suit but compared to those usually worn by mankind, the one it had on was light, smooth and soft to the touch. On its head, it wore a mask that was connected to its suit, similar to a gas mask.

Luo Yuan had done a scan earlier, and it was nothing like a common gas mask. Instead, it was an intelligent filter system that balanced air pressure. There was no circuit he recognized inside it and the structure was extremely complex. It was powered by a small piece of semi-transparent material he had never seen before. He had absolutely no clue as to how it was operated, but he was well aware of the vast difference in technology and did not question its superior craftsmanship.

The alien's body was similar to that of a human body. It had no hair, a slender frame, and a sharp chin. There seemed to be small horns shaped like a crown on its head, and its spine was slightly hunched. Its skin was a dull gray color.

As compared to a human, it only had four long fingers and each of them had five joints. It looked like each finger could bend backward and in many other complicated movements that would have been a swordsman's dream, Luo Yuan thought.

Perhaps because the gravity was lower on earth as compared to their motherland, it was weak and seemed to only have the strength of a six-year-old. It could be easily subdued and defeated if it dared challenge, Luo Yuan. He continued his probing of the body, pressed its body and scanned it using his Will. His strong

Will broke the defense system of its body easily, and he scanned its body right down to its core.

Soon, Luo Yuan found out that there was a piece of tissue at the back of its head. It looked strange to him, as the tissue was shaped like an ocean wave. It was the size of a coin, and the details were very intricate.

What concerned him was the patterns and distorted words on the tissue.

"Was it a personal messaging system for the aliens?" Luo Yuan thought to himself. The more he thought about it, the more it made sense. How could any living thing have tissues that were carved with patterns and images?

He jolted and felt a chill spread through his body. Fortunately, he was lucky he found out sooner than later or else, with this built-in personal messaging system, the extraterrestrial civilization would have surely found out where he was. He did not hesitate for a second. Immediately, he placed his palm on the back of its head and unleashed a burst of his Will. Soon, the tissue within its head was incinerated there and then. He exhaled, breathing a sigh of relief.

He then went to the intelligent robot and checked for the same built-in messaging system. He also wanted to see if there was a reservoir of energy within its body that was still working. He was relieved when he realized that every part of its body was out of service. However, due to safety concerns he could not stay put any longer and put his captives back on his shoulders.

Although his Strength had yet to be fully restored, Luo Yuan continued on his journey. He flew more than 1,000 kilometers away and landed on another island. As he landed, he stumbled and almost fell on the ground. Traveling with the space-time bubble continuously for more than two hours had drained all his energy. He was weak and rested for a moment in the sand. There were giant sea beasts that were skulking not far away from him, but he could not care less about their intentions. The beasts made the waves crash loudly on the shoreline, which greatly irritated him. He got to his feet and looked towards the jungle a few meters away from him. Shortly after, he found a hole in a tree and rested in it.

The hole was small. After placing both the robot and the alien in it, it was quite cramped. Even though he could not even straighten his legs, the small and smelly hole relaxed him into a deep sleep. In exhaustion, he laid against the wall and passed out. He did not plan to continue running any further as he had done all he could. As to whether the extraterrestrial beings would find him or not, it was all down to luck now. Even if he were to die, there would be nothing he could do in his state of fatigue.

After what seemed like hours of slumber, he began to feel thirsty. He placed his backpack on his knee and unzipped it. He retrieved his bottle and unscrewed the cork. Just when he prepared to take a swig of water, a ball rolled out of his pack. He looked at the ball and was stunned. Thirst did not bother him anymore. He put the bottle back into his backpack and picked up the ball.

It was a soul-eating beast's eyeball with the ability to dream walk. Suddenly a thought crossed his mind. With the alien asleep, should he take a look at its dream?



# Chapter 395: Friendly Glassians

---

Luo Yuan then placed the soul-eating beast's eyeball on his forehead and closed his eyes.

As he went into the zone, an amazing change happened to the pitch black eyeball.

It seemed like it was electrified where its color faded at a fast pace and soon it became a clear crystal. There was a glow came out of it at the same time, it was soft and lively.

With the help of the flow, the cave lit up with a mysterious and dreamy atmosphere. There were changes happened to Luo Yuan's vision as well. It was complete darkness when he closed his eyes, but now there was a cloud of colorful mist. The color of the mist was ever-changing, it was strange yet mysterious.

As Luo Yuan had tried the soul-eating eyeball before, the mist was not strange to him. He focused on the mist and approached it. As he changed his mind, it enlarged in a blink of an eye. From the size of a watermelon, it became as big as a house when he was half a meter closer.

When he almost touched it, it became a giant creature that was as huge as a hill. It was terrifying but at the same time, it showed its true color.

It was not some ever-changing color, but it was filled with countless images.

Calling them images were inaccurate, to be precise, those were short clips of videos.

As the mist rumbled, the videos appeared one by one like bubbles on a bowl of soup but most of them did not last too long. Just when they appeared, the videos disappeared before he could see any of them clearly.

Of course, those were not the dream that Luo Yuan wanted, they were the thoughts that were created in its sleep. They were messy, scattered and self-destructive. The real dreamland was located in the center of the mist while the videos were just fragments of thoughts from the dream.

As Luo Yuan focused, there was a catastrophic change to the hill-sized mist.

Compared to the alien's state of mind, his was overwhelmingly strong where a change in his thoughts could cause a disaster.

He was like a scorching sun, his body released a terrifying aura. Countless images collapsed before they could even come close to him. The cloud of mist shook intensely.

Watching the collapsing mist, Luo Yuan went silent immediately and stopped thinking so that his thoughts would not disturb the dream.

He stayed at the same spot for some time and eventually, the mist returned back to normal.

He was relieved and walked slowly towards the mist. Though his slow movement, he managed created a huge vacuum tunnel as he walked through the mist.

Soon, he arrived at the dreamland. It covered most parts of the cloud of mist and felt like reality. It would be absolutely stunning for a first-timer.

Luo Yuan did not stay there and went straight into the dreamland without hesitation.

The dreamland shook a few times and went back to normal. As long as he was near, space within the dream became unstable and felt like it would collapse anytime.

But there was nothing that he could do as his state of mind was too strong. Even if he was to turn off his mind, his existence would still be a major disturbance to the dreamland.

He maintained calm in his mind and observed the dreamland in silence.

Seemed to be affected by Luo Yuan's entrance, the dreams changed from one scene to another where most of them made no sense.

However, the scattered images were very valuable and precious.

There were images of the inside of the spaceship and on a galaxy but most of them were images of a room that was filled with a variety of devices. It also showed scenes of this alien working with other aliens.

The alien seemed to hold a high position as Luo Yuan noticed there were a few images of it scolding other aliens. But he was too far away, he could not hear what they said, just some noise that was barely there. Suddenly, Luo Yuan felt something that made his heart jolt. He hesitated and got closer.

"The mutation of this antidote-based virus is very dangerous. I don't think I should repeat myself that all experiment materials should be quarantined. If such rudimentary mistake happened again, please go back to the mothership!"

"I'm sorry, I will not repeat the mistake ever again!"

A close voice was sent to his head. He was stunned and could not maintain his silence at the moment. His strong thoughts were released uncontrollably. The dreamland shook intensely, it was collapsing and the air was distorted, it crumbled eventually. Even the outer region of the mist cloud as the world fell into darkness.

However, Luo Yuan did not regret that. He looked at the soul-eating beast's eyeball in his hand, it was still unbelievable to him. He had never imagined this little thing could allow him to listen to the aliens' conversations.

He thought to himself while he calmed himself down and realized something.

With the help of the eyeball, he could enter the dream of others without his five senses. What he got were frequencies that came from the heart.

When he did try invading a dream previously, it was in the same language he spoke. If it were not for the alien that he met today, he would have never noticed that and at the same time, he would not know how precious this eyeball was.

Suddenly, he recalled the conversation between the two aliens he saw at the dreamland. It was strange, the aliens seemed to be experimenting with a dangerous virus, but what kind of virus would make them come all the way to earth!

The more he thought about it, the more ridiculous the incident was. He seemed to get a hint of what happened.

"Should I take a look again?" Luo Yuan thought to himself.

But he looked at the alien who frowned and seemed to be suffering, Luo Yuan scrapped off his idea.

This alien was valuable to the reconstruction area, he could not torture it until it lost its mind. No matter what, he had all the time with it.

He looked at the watch, it was only 8 a.m. in the morning.

It was a slow day for Luo Yuan, he could not feel time pass at all.

He felt that his Strength had been fully recovered, he walked out of the hole. A salty sea breeze blew on his face, he was recharged and he felt much happier.

He climbed the tree and took a good look at the island.

The island he rested his feet on was pathetically small, the surface of the land was barely 10 square kilometers. The longest part of the island was seven kilometers apart while the smallest area was only two kilometers apart.

Though small, it was quite dangerous. There was almost no sight of any land based mutated creature. What he saw were many giant beasts that crawled out of the sea, even some of the aquatic plants invaded the land.

He saw seaweed taking over a beach not far away. The seaweed was enormous, each of the leaves could cover an entire highway before the apocalypse.

After another glance, he went back to the hole. The alien had awakened and it sat up.

When Luo Yuan entered, it was checking the intelligence robot next to it. Seeing Luo Yuan walking in, it pulled back its hand immediately and mustered its courage to look at him calmly,"@#¥%\*&)(@\*)#! !@(#\*!)(@# )!(\*\$)(^@!#!\*(#\*!)(@#!!!!!!!!!!!!!! !)(@#\*)((#\*@!#"

It opened its mouth and said something with a weird accent through its mask, it sounded boring.

Luo Yuan looked at it in silence, walked into the hole and used Will to check the intelligent robot again. It was still in sleep mode, and he was relieved.

To think about it, the intelligent robot had been destroyed in every physical sense. Without tools or replacement materials, even if its creator was here, there was nothing that could be done.

Luo Yuan ignored the alien while he laid on the wall. He held the eyeball in his hand and thought to himself.

Seeing Luo Yuan not showing any hostility, the alien seemed to have more courage. It attempted to stand up. However, it seems that the alien could not handle the gravity on earth.

It struggled for a while and stood straight as it spoke again, "#%\*\*@#%"

Not getting any responses from Luo yuan after a few sentences, it seemed to have thought of something and said, "person, 人类,

человечество?"

The three words were in English, Mandarin and Russian, they were the most prominent languages that remained of mankind.

Luo Yuan was shocked, he lifted his head. Although its accent was weird and blur, it was still understandable, "You can speak our language."

It stopped and seemed to be thinking. A while later, it spoke, "You are... Chinese, reconstruction...area?"

"You got it right!" Luo Yuan said in all seriousness, he could see that it had high intelligence.

If its message system was still there, he could assume that it was translated but now that the system was destroyed, all of that was self-taught.

"What you...did...leads to...death, you can't run away, your race... will be... punished by us!" The way it talked was cautious yet arrogant. To it, the intelligence of the human race was similar to natives from a pre-historic period.

"Let me... go, send me... back, we will... repay you, high-end... technology, lengthen your lives, you will be the human... hero!" It continued to speak.

"Haha, are you kidding me?" Luo Yuan laughed in sarcasm while



he ignored the fact that the aliens had shown their hostility to mankind. There would be no good consequences to him since he killed so many of the aliens.

"We... Glassians... are friendly, we... don't joke around!" The alien proceeded to say but soon he could not say anything anymore.

A saber had been pointed at its forehead. It was stunned as it took a few steps backward, stumbling and falling on the ground. It stood up in pain and said, "Disagree... violence, friendly... talk!"

"Go f\*uck yourself!"

Not only Luo Yuan did not keep his saber, he pointed the sharp end even closer to its forehead.

"Now it's my turn to ask and you will answer! How many of you are here?" Luo Yuan asked as he exuded a faint aura of Will around him.

"12... 85 of us!"

"How many spaceships are there?"

"It's not a spaceship... It's just an aircraft, there is only...one spaceship!"

Luo Yuan was shocked, he felt weak all of a sudden. He was lucky that he was alive as he thought the aircraft was the extraterrestrial civilization's biggest strength, but it was just merely an aircraft although it served the similar purpose of short-distance flying in space.

"Last question, what is your...purpose here?" Luo Yuan gathered his Will as a glow came out of from his eyes as he increased the intensity of the Will he exuded into the interrogation.

Suddenly, the alien struggled, it frowned and seemed like it was suffering. Soon there was blood flowing out of its nose and it became yellow. A few moments later it said, "Expedition, we are an expedition team. Glassians are... friends with the humans!"

# Chapter 396: Lies

---

Suddenly, the alien struggled, it frowned and seemed like it was suffering. Soon there was blood flowing out of its nose and it became yellow. A while later it said, "Expedition, we are an expedition team. Glassians are... friends with the humans!"

Although it seemed weak, it seemed to have a kind of resistance to hypnosis. During the last question, it seemed to show signs of relief, which was suspicious.

Friendly?

Would an advanced civilization be friendly to a backward civilization which would soon become a threat to it?

He did not believe it at all. The history of humanity was the best examples. A good example was the mass depopulation of the indigenous people in America back in the past as well as the slavery that happened on top of many other records of atrocities in our civilization that was lost in the records.

The entire human history was that of war.

Moreover, when all these had happened in the past, it was between two parties of a similar species. If two civilizations from different species were to meet, the war would be a hundred times worse and the end result would inevitably have only one civilization that would eventually remain standing on earth.

If the extraterrestrial civilization left its motherland to expand their territory in the galaxy, Luo Yuan believed that nobody would just sit there and watch as other civilizations of another species threatened them.

Friendly? Without a doubt, that was one of the worst lies.

Luo Yuan wanted to use his Will to make it speak again but since its nose was bleeding, he was afraid that he would kill it and gave up on that thought.

"What... did you... do to me." The alien panted in fear and did not hold back when he responded, "You're... a dirty savage!"

"Dirty savage?" Hearing such insulting words, Luo Yuan face turned solemn as he said coldly, "Please be reminded that you're a prisoner. If you're ever disrespectful to me again, don't blame me for not warning you."

As he finished his words, he retrieved his saber. The glow on the Zhanmadao slashed the alien before its chest, scaring it and made it take a few steps backward. Luo Yuan made his stand and it apologized immediately, "No no no, powerful... warrior, that was... unintentional!"

Luo Yuan ignored him. A while later, it got startled and tried to convince him, "Please... let me go, I'm no use... to you, perhaps you... don't know... what you're doing? What kind of scary power that you are encountering? This will bring disaster... to your

people!"

"What you say disaster, do you mean the antidote virus?" Luo Yuan suddenly thought about that and asked.

"Not the antidote virus!" The alien said and suddenly, it was stunning. It then showed a fear and unbelievable expression like it just heard something scary. It was shaking, "How... How do you know about... the antidote virus?"

"It was you who told me!" Luo Yuan proceeded to test him. His heart was heavy, he could feel that the antidote virus was crucial and extremely dangerous.

"Not... not possible, that's... not possible." It started to panic but soon it was calm again. It was obvious that the alien held back its panic, "The antidote virus... is an experimental project... in my motherland, it is very... dangerous, it has been... classified... as a prohibited project, maybe... I unconsciously... spilled it to you."

Looking at it speaking incoherently, it was obvious that it was hiding something. Moreover, the images that Luo Yuan saw in the dream was not from some galaxy but was in the spaceship that he destroyed. He was sure because the scene in the dream was the exact same with the cabin of the spaceship.

However, seeing that he could not use his Will to make it speak, could he get more information from him?

The alien noticed that it talked too much, it immediately shut its mouth and did not talk again!

Luo Yuan did not want to force it. He sat down leaning against the hole. He closed his eyes, the atmosphere became silent.

When it was near evening, he went out and soon came back with a gigantic seashell. He used his Zhanmadao to open the shell and white, juicy meat appeared. He took out salt from his backpack and sprinkled on it evenly.

The shellfish was still alive, triggered by the salt, the white shellfish had an intense spasm.

He cut a slice of it with his Zhanmadao and put it into his mouth as he frowned.

The risk was not completely over as the extraterrestrial civilization might still be looking for Luo Yuan. He did not want to make a fire to avoid himself from being noticed.

He chewed slowly, he was surprised to find that not as horrible than he thought. The light flavor from the salt elevated the freshness of the shellfish, it was juicy and tender as it melted in his mouth. It would be perfect if there was some wasabi.

But those were just fantasies that he had.

Since the apocalypse, seasoning that was available in the

reconstruction area was limited. Apart from salt, soy sauce and vinegar, there was nothing else.

Soon, Luo Yuan finished most of the shellfish. Suddenly he thought of the alien, turned around and asked, "Do you want some?"

The alien avoided eye contact and said nervously, "No... No... I don't eat... such things!"

Luo Yuan was not surprised. A human would not die from hunger if they did not eat for a few days, it should be the same for aliens. Since it did not look like it was dying, Luo Yuan did not mind him. He then finished the entire shellfish with the exception of its internal organs.

More than 10 kilograms of meat was in his stomach but he did not feel bloated at all and soon, it was all digested.

He tossed the shell out of the hole and cleaned his hands. He had enough rest and was ready to work again. He turned around and asked the alien, "Aren't you sleepy!"

"No..." Before the alien could finish its words, it felt a deep exhaustion kicked in its body. Then, its body was swaying and its eyelids became heavy.

Luo Yuan looked at it and said, "If you're sleepy, then sleep!"

It could not fight the sleepiness and laid slowly on the ground. It closed its eyes, there was a sound that echoed in its ears.

"You're now a prisoner to human and you revealed something in a conversation earlier. You have been suspected, this is making you uneasy. You can only relax and let down your guards in your sleep. Let go of all the secrets, as they are the most personal thing for your spirit..."

During the training in New Capital City, Luo Yuan had seen a few hypnosis techniques.

As compared to the use of his Will to make it talk which was straightforward, hypnosis was like a silent lubricant that allowed people to let down of their guards.

However, use of such techniques was difficult. First, one would have to make the other party relax their body and mind. It would require a quiet environment that nobody would interrupt and at the same time, it needed extensive guidance. The process was extremely tedious.

However, it was not as much work for Luo Yuan. His strong Will allowed him to do hypnosis anytime, anywhere. As the alien's expression was completely relaxed and entered the dreamland that was customized by Luo Yuan, he took out the soul-eating beast's eyeball and invaded its dream again.



# Chapter 397: The Truth

---

Perhaps it was deeply hypnotized, the mist in the dream this time was many times bigger than the previous one. It was gigantic and majestic. At the same time, the dream was stable. When Luo Yuan entered it, he did not cause any major waves.

The scene in the dream was no longer the cabin but a much bigger room. Apart from a round-shaped window, there was a pitch black, quiet galaxy. It was obviously outer space outside.

"That would probably be the real spaceship!" Luo Yuan thought to himself.

"Nobody would have expected the high-energy cosmic rays from the new planet's explosion would cause a mutation in the antidote virus. The evolution of the organism is just too fast. It has not even been half a year and the entire planet had already fallen apart. How could such a mutation happen?" An alien mumbled to itself as it looked outside, "Fortunately, looking at the natives on the planet, it seemed like these intelligent organisms have great control over their bodies where they would be able to suppress the antidote virus effectively. In any other scenario, it would be too dangerous!"

Soon, the scene changed.

A screen float in midair appeared in front of Luo Yuan. The image was familiar to him where he could tell what it was in one glance. It was a double helix image of genes.

The screen was surrounded by aliens in uniforms, an alien seemed to be persuading the team with excitement.

"This is one of the infectious agent genes for the antidote virus from this planet. You could see from the image that the gene is unable to survive and there will be mutation happening anytime.

However, during the mutation, mysterious parts were formed in the genes. They stunned me, one of them could even control electromagnetic forces. Perhaps this planet is more valuable than we ever imagined. It is a priceless treasure trove of genes. I want to venture into this plant for an expedition."

The scene changed again. The screen that hung midair had a video of a giant mutated creature. Its body was glowing, it looked beautiful and mysterious. The stunning part was, the location in the video was not from earth, but was near to outer space instead. Earth could be seen from not far away.

Suddenly, a high-energy ray hit its body. It was so bright that it was hurtful for the eyes, like a sun rising in the dark. As the light faded, its body that was not harmed at all. The only thing that changed was that the glow was now dimmer than before.

It lifted its head and roared into outer space, the video tripped and there was distortion, showing that there was a massive disturbance. Then, there were three high-energy rays that came out of nowhere, hitting its body again...

"That is unbelievable! It's a miracle. Such defensive abilities are even better than the technology the Glassians' possessed. If we could get enough gene samples and return to the motherland, there would be a breakthrough in Glassian technology."

...

This time it was no doubt a nightmare for the alien where Luo Yuan saw himself in the dreamland. He was cruel in the dream, he looked ferocious.

"You cannot... kill me!" It kept running in fear and suddenly, it stumbled on a rock on the ground. It fell down and the image of a black saber and shadows of people surrounding it appeared. It looked hopeless.

Luo Yuan frowned as he watched the dream. If it died in the dream, it would be the end of the dream as his emotion would be triggered. It was a great opportunity, he did not want it to end so soon. He thought and entered a state of mind to stop himself in the dream. He did not just manage to stun the aliens, but even himself in the dream. He stopped immediately with a strange expression as he found himself looking at the Luo Yuan from the dream.

It was like looking at his doppelganger, the feeling was amazing. He was unsure but he felt a mysterious connection from the bottom of his heart when he looked at his doppelganger. Soon, the body of Luo Yuan in the dream distorted as it began to collapse and disappear.

Luo Yuan was shocked. He realised that the understanding he had of the inner workings of a dream was still insufficient. What he saw boggled his mind.

Looking at the signs of a collapse in the dream that was caused by Luo Yuan's emotions, he quickly zoned out and disappeared from the dream. The disappearance of both Luo Yuan's did not even bother the aliens in the dream. The alien was deep in thought for a moment and was glad that it managed to survive. The scene seemed to change again.

A while later, Luo Yuan left the dream. He heaved a sigh of relief. The sky was dark, it was midnight.

He was in the dream for more than six hours. The endless changing scenes, aircrafts, spaceships to their motherland and everything he experienced in the dream... He had seen almost all the important memories that were hiding in its subconscious mind when he was in its dream.

Through those scattered images, Luo Yuan managed to deduce the purpose of the aliens that visited earth after some analysis.

The apocalypse was started by the aliens!

The antidote virus got its name from its ability to unlock bonds within biological mutations. Through the viral gene, it destabilized existing genes, allowing mutations to take place within a short period of time.

Since the discovery of such a virus, the Glassians have had it on their wanted list. They even went so far as to carry out a secret experiment even after they found out the extreme levels of danger that it posed, that it could even destroy the entire planet. This was the reason why the virus was not allowed to be experimented on... Until they received radio waves from the humans. They felt threatened and this eventually led to the expedition that happened.

In reality, the Glassians were not at the level of an interstellar civilization. In interstellar space, flight had just begun. The idea of flying through the fourth dimension was still in its infancy and they could only fly at a suboptimal speed, utilizing nuclear fusion pulse.

The motherland of the Glassians was more than 40 lightyears away from earth. They spent 50 years in a deep sleep and five years ago, they were on earth to release the virus.

The mutation speed of the initial version of the antidote virus could barely be considered S fast. For the first three years, the biological change was so slow that it barely caused any serious threat to humanity. That was, until a cosmic storm caused by an explosion that happened on a new planet that happened in outer space, the antidote virus mutated into a new strain. That was how the virus went haywire, triggering the onset of the apocalypse on earth.

The experiment of the virus was just an additional expedition mission for the Glassians.

Their real objective was to destroy the humanity.

However, their objective was delayed as the experiment was a rare one. A planet was the subject of their experiment and in their expedition, soldiers were not the only people that were involved but many scientists and elite scholars as well. The data of how the humans responded and their experience during such an occurrence was invaluable to the Glassians.

Another reason was because they were two different civilizations. The Glassians may have technology that was way beyond the reach of mankind but human had their own unique way of living. Although they went on the same journey, they had something that they could learn from one another.

However, the time mankind had remaining was not that long. They had perhaps a year or two at most.

Once the resistance of humanity no longer proved to be valuable to them, havoc would ensue.

He was stressed, like a giant rock was pressed hard against his heart, suffocating him. Although his will was as hard as steel, he could not take on such an attack. Feeling like that was the only way forward, he felt hopelessness take over his being and as he looked at the sleeping alien, an urge to kill flashed by his mind. He let out a sigh as he sat in the hole, emptying his mind.

# Chapter 398: Team 125

---

A few moments later, Luo Yuan returned to reality.

He looked at the time and realized that it was now 11 p.m. at night. It was pitch black outside and as he listened to the sound of waves and mutated beasts roaring, he walked out and climbed into a tree nearby. As he looked into the sky, he found that it had only dark clouds and not an inkling of starlight. The darkness was like a black cloth that covered the entire sky. Gloomy and depressing, he let out a sigh.

"God help me!"

The Glassians only had superior detection skills if compared to mankind. However, they only excelled in accuracy, distance, and power. They had little advancements in other segments of technology. Though they had the most advanced gravitational wave detection technology as well as technology to detect life, they had little going for them in other fields. Their technology to gauge distance was similar to the abilities of mankind to detect electromagnetic waves as well as optical detection techniques.

Clouds would cause a disturbance in both techniques. This was especially so for optical detection techniques. As long as the clouds remained there, it was redundant.

It was the best time to leave.

"It seemed like I will be back to reconstruction area tonight!"

Luo Yuan thought to himself, hopped off the tree and returned to the hole. He suppressed the hurry to leave and stayed on for an hour more. After 12 a.m., he carried his backpack, removed the headband and put the alien into a deeper sleep with his Will. He then picked up the robot and placed the alien on top as walked out of the hole immediately. He picked a spot on higher ground and initiated his space-time bubble.

...

Within half an hour, a glow could be seen shooting across the surface of the sea. It disappeared on the horizon as its speed got increasingly faster. The sea was not calm at all, waves were rumbling. He was like a high-speed elusive shadow that crossed the waves. Eventually, everything was behind him as he disappeared beyond the horizon.

Almost an hour later, Luo Yuan arrived in China. As he carried some weight with him, his speed when traveling in the space-time bubble was affected. He had reached his maximum speed but it was only two kilometers per second. His speed had dropped more than once but it was sufficient to get him where he wanted to go.

To be safe, Luo Yuan flew so close to the ground that he almost touched it when he was in flight. The obstacles in the terrain had no effect on his flight at all. His journey was almost a straight line through all the obstacles before him. He crossed trees and even mountains!



Occasionally he would cross high altitude areas where he flew in darkness most of the time. There was neither light nor sound there.

For a claustrophobic person, such an environment would ruin everything. Fortunately, Luo Yuan's strong Will helped him fight such emotions.

The use of his four-dimensional vision drained his energy. He felt weak and he was pale but he did not slow down at all.

During his final journey, he almost saw stars and blacked out. He relied heavily on his determination.

He forcefully controlled the direction he was flying in and flew above the ground. Looking at the reconstruction area that was far away, he was relieved. He flew for a few seconds more, then he left his space-time bubble and fell slowly from the sky.

As he landed, Luo Yuan fell weak on the ground with the robot in his hands.

He was drenched in sweat, he looked like he came out of a pool of water. He struggled to put on the band on his forehead and entered the Earth Pulse mode. His strength restored at a fast pace. Within seconds, his pale face regained its color and after a minute, he was fully restored.

He got out of his Earth Pulse mode and lay on the ground,

refusing to get up. After a long time, he gathered his Will and sent out a communication wave. Soon the phone was connected, "Is this Wang Jing? I'm Luo Yuan, I'm back!" He then hung up the phone.

It was 1:30 a.m. and she was fast asleep. Wang Jing, who was the contact person assigned by the high commissioner picked up the phone that was placed next to her bed. She was half awake when he called and before she managed to figure out what the call was about, Luo Yuan had hung up.

Just as she turned around and got ready to fall asleep, she jolted and sat upright. She did not feel like sleeping anymore.

She was fully awake, took the phone in her hand and realized that it was really Luo Yuan.

"Luo Yuan... Major Luo, how could he be back so soon!" Even with an optimistic estimation, Major Luo would take at least two months to complete the mission. Else, taking an entire year to complete the mission was expected as the distance to the location the mission was at was one-third of the distance of a trip around the earth.

She tried to return his call but it never connected. Suddenly, she realized that Major Luo's satellite phone was given to her before he left. It was shut down and placed in a metal box. She hopped off her bed, opened her drawer and took out the metal box. She keyed in the password and opened it, the phone was still inside. She switched on the phone and called Luo Yuan, the phone she held rang.

"What the hell!" Wang Jing placed her hand on her heart that was beating fast, it was unbelievable!

That aside, it was a serious case where the fate of reconstruction area was in the account. She dared not be reckless, even though it was in the middle of the night, she called the leader.

"What's wrong?" Soon the phone was connected, it was picked up by a person who sounded tired.

Before Wang Jing could say anything, Luo Yuan caught the signal and interrupted,

"I'm Luo Yuan. The goods are here, I have also captured a strange mutated beast. It's alive."

Wang Jing did not say anything. A while later, she said in excitement, "Please stay wherever you are, don't hang up, and don't move!"

Both of them did not say more as the communication on earth was basically transparent to the aliens. They did not want to reveal anything.

In the quiet night, many were woken up from their slumber.

Luo Yuan put the call on hold, satellite phones could send out his

location as well but compared to a mobile phone that relied on a base station, it was much more complicated. More than 10 minutes later, the phone was cut off by the other party.

...

After a long wait, it was almost 5 a.m. and the sun was rising.

Three modified heavy trucks arrived in front of Luo Yuan. Many soldiers hopped down and surrounded the place. A middle-aged man of the lieutenant general rank hopped off from the driver's seat. He glanced at the shiny green intelligent robot and the alien that were next to Luo Yuan. His pupils shrunk. He quickly ran towards Luo Yuan and shook his hand hard.

"Major Luo, I am the Team 125's commander, Xie Zeming, I'm greeting you on behalf of the leader. Thank you so much, your dedication will be forever remembered by mankind!"

He saluted him when he saw Luo Yuan's clothes were neat and his face was clean. He was one of the few people who knew about the mission. He knew very well that Luo Yuan had terrifying abilities to be able to make it back from Borneo to the reconstruction area through such dangerous environments in such a short period of time.

"I'm flattered, Major Xie. You guys worked hard too. The things here, quickly move them away!" Luo Yuan nodded and said. 125 was a unique serial number. Before he left the reconstruction area, he was in contact with Team 125's intelligence office which

specialized in the investigation of aliens. Team 125 was obviously assigned to be in touch with him with regards to their battle with the aliens.

"Yes, the business is important!" He looked at the robot and saw that the alien that was in deep sleep. He waved his hand at the soldier at the back, he was in deep thought. Previously, he had suspected the existence of aliens. He had thought that he was paranoid but now that the truth was right in front of him, he was relieved.

Apart from a transport truck, the two heavy trucks were covered with lead plating. One of them even had a medical team and a variety of medical machinery that made it was like a mini hospital. It was obviously prepared for the alien so that they could come and rescue it if it was injured along the journey.

The soldiers were fast and efficient, most of them were obviously evolved humans with great strength. In less than half a minute, the robot and alien were moved into each truck.

When he was invited into the truck, Luo Yuan rejected, "I'm not going, I'll be going home and will be resting for for two days before I take my leave to New Capital City!"

"You should go. We'll make a move then." The major nodded understandingly. Luo Yuan had been out in the wilderness for far too long. Even for a powerful evolved human like him, it was not an easy feat. The suffering and loneliness he experienced were unimaginable by ordinary people.

Soon the trucks left.

Luo Yuan remained at the same spot and looked into the sky. He imagined the aliens and the spaceship in outer space. He then sighed, found the direction he was headed to, pointed his feet and ran quickly to Hope City.

He ran faster and faster. He had left the reconstruction area for so many days and had never felt so overwhelmed with home sickness.

He missed his home and the people at home!

He missed his bed and the hot soup!

The more he thought, the more nervous he became. If not for his lack of Will, he would have used the space-time bubble to fly back.

The day was beginning to get bright as Luo Yuan arrived at the entrance of his home. He was emotional, he attempted to knock the door for a few times but refrained from doing so, hesitating. He walked in circles outside the door, took a deep breath and finally knocked on the door.

Huang Jiahui and the rest were still sleeping. More than a minute later, there were footsteps approaching the door.

"Who is that? Coming, coming!"

It was Huang Jiahui and upon hearing her sleepy voice, it was obvious that she was woken up by his knocks.

Soon, the door was opened. Huang Jiahui looked at Luo Yuan who stood in front of the door, stunned. Joy could be seen on her face, but she was not as surprised as Luo Yuan imagined she would be, "Why are you back? It hasn't even been a week, I thought you said there were problems at the mining area in your letter? I thought you would only be back after a few months!"

Luo Yuan was shocked, the emotions that he mustered along the way were crushed by her words. It was absolutely the fault of the committee but soon, he snapped out these thoughts and said, "It was a coincidence. There was a change to the situation, they don't need me in the mining area anymore."

"That's great, if you did not write to us every day, we would have been worried dead! I bet you haven't even eaten! I'll make you some food, it must be rough out there!" Huang Jiahui did not think too much and went ahead to cook in excitement.

Luo Yuan did not respond to her as his eyes were aimed at her peachy butt. His breath got faster as he walked toward her immediately. Huang Jiahui felt there was something strange behind her. Just when she was going to turn around, she felt dizzy as she was carried by a strong man who walked towards the room, "Food can wait, what I'm hungry for right now isn't food." Luo Yuan said while he panted.

He was exuberant and his adrenaline was pumped 10 times more than ordinary people which caused him to have strong desires. He could not release his desire when he was in the wilderness, he almost lost his mind to a point where a mutated human that was filled with scales was beautiful and tempting to him.

"What's wrong with you, the rest will wake up soon." Huang Jiahui blushed and slapped Luo Yuan's chest a few times. Noticed that he was not walking in the direction to her room, she screamed, "You're going to the wrong room!"

Just when she finished talking, he slammed the door open!

Soon, there were screams from Zhao Yali coming out of the room as well as the noise of clothes being torn with great strength.



# Chapter 399: First Cosmic Velocity

---

An intense thunderstorm had finally stopped, there was a musky smell that lingered in the air. Two fair, plump bodies laid weak on the bed. Their eyes stared into space, there was redness in their bodies. They were as weak as a pile of slime, having no more strength to struggle any further.

After his desires were fulfilled, he fell asleep and unknowingly snored. Luo Yuan had not been resting properly for the past two days. He was strung like a tight wire with the amount of stress he was under, about to break at any moment. His four-dimensional vision that drained his energy added to his exhaustion.

Although he had a strong physical strength that could be restored easily but he was still a human after all. Even if he was a piece of metal, there would be times when the metal would be worn out. Even though he looked strong and full of energy, like there was absolutely nothing wrong with him, he was actually on the brink of collapse.

He slept all the way to the next morning. He opened his eyes, there was nobody else on the bed. He did not wake up immediately, he was silently watching the ceiling. He was surprisingly calm, he could feel that there were changes that were happening to him. Deep down in his spirit was a dense energy passing through. The energy was as calm as water flowing in him, it was following his thoughts.

He extended his hand and saw an inch long glow on his palm. It seemed like spring water from deep reservoirs in the mountains, it

was crystal clear and so pure that it made people think of perfect white snow, clear crystals and brilliant diamonds. The glow flowed through his body and in a blink of an eye, his entire body was glowing.

He levitated from the bed and sat slowly on the edge of his bed. He opened the attributes panel, the bare attribute of Will was upgraded to +17. Combined with the Haunted Locust Heart, it was a shocking +18.

When he was younger, Luo Yuan used to always see a sentence in novels that said the best practice was the alternating between a stressed and relaxed state. He had always wondered how true it was but had never experienced such a situation. Now, after having a breakthrough from one full day of sleeping, it was proven.

But Luo Yuan knew very well that the crucial part of it was the stressed state instead of the relaxed state. If a person did not accumulate a sufficient amount of stress, how could one be talking about being relaxed?

In reality, after his Will increased again, besides joy, Luo Yuan noticed he was surprisingly calm. The desires that used to bother him had reduced and he was now fully alert.

He put on his clothes and put out his hand as the Zhanmadao flew into his hand immediately.

After the Will upgraded again, the Zhanmadao's flight was faster than before. It had almost reached the level of the legendary flying

sword.

However, Luo Yuan was confused. Although his Will had an increase of one point and the upgrade was great, it was not the upgraded from the system. Instead, it had upgraded due to his accumulated experience of utilizing his Will. Its growth was limited and based on the increase he felt, it was less than 10%

However, the change in his Zhanmadao made Luo Yuan realize that the growth of his Will was not as simple as the number of points he had in his Will. On top of the change in quantity, there were some qualitative changes as well and the changes in his Will had actually been predicted.

The most obvious one was when he recently he noticed that there was an unusual magnification of his vision at a fast pace when he used his Will. Initially, he could only see the outside of a blood vessel but now he could see all sorts of cells.

Previously he thought it was the effect of the changes that happened to his brain when it became a four-dimensional brain but now he could see that it was a sign of his Will's transformation.

He sat down and a few moments later, he opened his eyes looking stunned.

If the cells that he saw earlier were previously just the size of a sesame seed but was now the size of a longan fruit under his vision, this meant he could see the cells even clearer. Even the mitochondria and the nucleus of the cell could be seen clearly.

This did not only mean that his Will was upgraded but at some point, he would have the ability to transform bodies. Luo Yuan thought that eventually, he would be able to copy the abilities of other evolved humans and transform the structure of his genes. The more he thought, the more opportunities seemed to present themselves to him.

Environmental triggers could affect the genes too!

It was like parents who were both athletes. Their offsprings would be much healthier than the others. The same applied to an alcoholic father, his offsprings could possibly be an alcoholic too due to the environment they were brought up in. A mutation was not the only factor that will cause genes to change. The theory of use and disuse could be applied in theory of evolution as well.

But those were only his ideas and he was not in a hurry to experiment.

He grabbed his saber and walked out of the room. The ladies were asleep, there was nobody in the living room.

He did not want to wake them up, he walked out of the house quietly and arrived at Hope City.

He gathered his Will and started to fly. He flew far away, his speed was faster and faster. The flight using Will picked up faster than curvature flight. In about 10 seconds of acceleration, Luo Yuan had reached his maximum speed.

He did not stop at all, in five minutes, Hope City was far behind him.

The biggest obstacle occurred when flying with Will was the air pressure. Without air pressure, he could still accelerate without gravity.

Before he owned the battle suit, he could only fly at a speed of only 30 meters per second and at the same time, the flow of air would push against him. When the wind blew in the right direction, he could go up to 60 meters per second if he was lucky. When against the wind, it was hard to even fly.

Before he had the battle suit made of the Demonic Horse's mane, the weather was the biggest factor when he flew with Will. It was not exactly helpful and not only it was slow but it was dangerous as well.

Now, with his new tailored battle suit, the air pressure had decreased significantly and the speed of his flight increased to an insane amount where he could fly up to 200 meters per second.

Now that his Will was +18, his speed was even more shocking. It was now more than 800 meters per second, twice the speed of sound.

Under such high speeds, the area that was a few kilometers experienced a mysterious phenomenon. Cyclones and vortexes came out of nowhere. They stayed there for a long time, blurring

the sky. Luo Yuan could barely be seen in there.

More than 10 minutes later, when he was out of the range of reconstruction city. He stopped.

As he floated in the air, he took off the band on his forehead and proceeded to try flying in the space-time bubble.

The time needed for him to pick up speed decreased. A minute later, Luo Yuan was already moving slowly.

10 minutes later, he had broken through the speed of sound.

30 minutes later, his speed had reached the maximum.

Not only it was 10 minutes shorter than the time it took initially, the speed was faster too.

He was like a streamer that flew across the sky and disappeared. As his speed was too fast, he did not have the time to control his direction at all.

His body was cutting straight through the earth like a flash of light, disappearing in the sky.

The speed was at least 10 kilometres per second, it had exceeded the [first cosmic velocity](#).

First Cosmic Velocity: Also known as orbital velocity, is the speed

that will bring a rocket or any other projectile into orbit around the earth. A slower projectile will fall down to earth.

Fortunately, he realized that he was going too fast. He quickly got out of the space-time bubble and stopped.

After the bubble had gone, the air that was contained within faded away and disappeared. He could not breath properly so he decided to hold his breath. He looked around curiously and found that he had arrived more than 10,000 meters above the ground.

He could see a blurred arc of the earth, it was stunning.

Soon there was a white glow appearing from the edges of the ground. In a short period of time, the glow got stronger and stronger. The darkness was soon overtaken by light at an alarming rate.

It was the sun rising!

# Chapter 400: Love Rival

---

The white light poured from the sun soon spread across the surface of the earth. In between darkness and light, there was a majestic arc that formed. Milky-white mist evaporated as the light shined, it was a breathtaking scene.

He put on the band on his forehead while floating high in the sky to witness the breathtaking view. He felt like his spirit was cleansed. Being in something so big, he felt like nothing although he was powerful.

The air was thin and the oxygen was low. There was hardly any signs of mutated creatures at that altitude. Luo Yuan looked around, he could only see several small flecks floating in the sky. Creatures that could survive at such an altitude should be on a terrifying level. Although they were just small flecks in a distance, in reality, they were gigantic.

After staying for a while, Luo Yuan dove down from the sky.

The gravity helped in his acceleration. He was like a meteorite falling from the sky. Majestic phenomenon covered the skies as he dove down. Cyclones and vortexes surrounded him, making him look like a God descending to earth.

When he got closer to the ground, a terrifying force could be felt. A Strong wind blew and there were tornadoes around him. It was like a catastrophic event had happened. He slowed down and landed on a branch. He was the focal point as typhoons formed



around him, making trees fall down while smaller ones were uprooted while others danced in the air.

A while later, the cyclones, vortexes, and typhoons stopped. Many sticks and gravel fell from the sky.

Looking at the damages that were caused by the vortex that was created by his suit, Luo Yuan was shocked. Fortunately, he did not land on the reconstruction area or else the streets would be destroyed.

"This was only made from the Demonic Horse's mane. If it was the real Demonic Horse, the thought of the damage alone was terrifying. The existence of a level eight creature was horrifying."

Suddenly, Luo Yuan thought of the scary creature in space that he saw in the alien's dream. He did not know which level that creature was at but he guessed its level should be even higher than the Demonic Horse.

Surprisingly, Luo Yuan was not worried at all. As long as the spaceship was still flying above their heads, the lives of humans were not guaranteed. However, it did him no good by worrying about it.

He did not stay any longer as he levitated and flew towards the reconstruction area.

...

As Luo Yuan entered the house, the ladies had woken up. There were some others too, Wang Xiaguang and Chen Jiayi were there. There was another man that he had never seen before.

Seeing his return, Wang Shishi ran to him and kisses his cheeks several times, "Boss Luo, why did you sleep for so long? Luckily the doctor said it was alright as you were catching up on your sleep that you lost earlier."

"Maybe I was too tired from my mission!" He said.

Zhao Yali and Huang Jiahui were flushing in anger. If he knew that he was tired, why would he insist on having sex with them? If not for that, he would not be sleeping for the entire day. They were blaming themselves as they thought something bad had happened to him!

Sensing their anger, Luo Yuan was embarrassed.

His desire took over. He could not control himself and because of that, an embarrassing incident like that had happened.

He tried to change the topic and asked, "Chen Jiayi do you not have school today?"

Hearing his voice, Chen Jiayi lifted her head in a blur but she did not say anything. She spaced out.

"It's their tenth-day rest today, don't you remember?" Wang Shishi said.

Luo Yuan had been in the wilderness recently, he would not bother about the tenth-day.

In the cruel environment that followed the apocalypse, the reconstruction area was surrounded by islands. The battle of living space between mankind and mutated beasts as well as plants did not stop at all. Every single day, they had to use what they had to fight this battle. If they were to compare the amount they spent in the military before and after the apocalypse, what they spent in the past for a year was now their daily expenses.

Millions of factories worked every single day, with most of them being research institutes that specialized in the military.

Even so, mankind was just maintaining their current living conditions and expansion was not even on the table for discussion.

Under such conditions, the initial rest day system did not apply anymore. They only get one rest day after 10 days, which was called the tenth-day rest. But even with the ten-day system, most of the factories were on auto-pilot. Apart from sleeping and eating, the workers were basically working continuously where they did not get to rest for months. Only schools get the regular rest day.

He then looked at Wang Xianguang and the man next to her, feeling uncomfortable. Soon, he adjusted himself, "It's rare to see you here. Who is that next to you, why not introduce us?"

The man showed hostility ever since he stepped into the house.

Wang Xiaguang pouted and smiled, "I forgot to introduce him. This is Guo Zhiping. He is also an evolved human and he's working at the City Security Section."

Guo Zhiping was tall and he looked healthy and filled with righteousness. He wore a battle suit on him and it seemed unusually fitting.

He stood up and forced out a smile, "Hi, I am Guo Zhiping."

Luo Yuan looked at him and said, "Hi, I am Luo Yuan, but what is the purpose of your visit?"

"It was a little presumptuous, I got to know Wang Xiaguang from a blind date that was organised by a government institute. It was love at first sight. No matter her personalities or look, she's my ideal type. I have been trying very hard to woo her but she did not give me a chance. At first I thought she was playing hard to get, but now I understand that she has someone else. I don't blame her, it was me who insisted to come. I want to see who exactly it was that she couldn't forget so that I can finally give up on her. "

The rest looked at each other, Luo Yuan stared at Wang Xiaguang, she looked at another direction without any expression. He said, "So... What now"

"I'm truly disappointed. You are a womaniser, you don't deserve Wang Xiaguang. I heard from her that you are an evolved human, perhaps that's the only thing that's attractive about you. I wonder, how strong are you?" said Guo Zhiping but he did not want to admit how handsome Luo Yuan was. He also had this mysterious vibe about him which was the most attractive thing about him. However, to be able to defeat his love rival, he had to give his best.

Before Luo Yuan could say anything, Wang Shishi was angered, "What did you just say? Why don't you look into the mirror? Boss Luo, let me teach him a lesson!"

"It's alright Shishi. He's our guest, I'll pretend that I didn't hear what he said." Luo Yuan said coldly, "If you dare to disrespect me again, I will teach you a lesson."

Guo Zhiping opened his mouth, he wanted to say something but there were no words coming out of his mouth. He was not sure why, but Luo Yuan who seemed like an ordinary person to him suddenly gave off an irresistible charm and a terrifying vibe at the same time. It was like a massive hand pressing against his heart, suffocating him.

"Wow, it's so crowded in here today. I see the door was opened so I invited myself in, I hope leader Luo wouldn't mind." He said with a smile and a present on his hand. It was Minister Ren from the Municipal Organization Department,

Everything was back to normal, Guo Zhiping gasped for air, the air was flowing again. He looked at Luo Yuan in shock.

"It's my pleasure to have you here Minister Ren, please have a seat! Jiahui please get us some tea." Luo Yuan stopped giving off his aura and stood up to greet Minister Ren.

"It's alright, there's no need for tea. Old civil servants like me always have tea in our bellies." Minister Ren laughed, "Ah, Wang Xiaguang is here too. How's work? Have you adapted yourself?"

When Minister Ren came in, Wang Xiaguang and Guo Zhiping stood up straight.

"It's alright. Couldn't get used to it in the beginning and I was clumsy but many of them are taking care of me, I have adapted well now, " Wang Xiaguang said immediately.

"That's great!" Minister Ren said, "Work is really hectic at the Industry Bureau."

After a short chat, Minister Ren told them the purpose of his visit, "I heard that you haven't been feeling well, Hope City sent me here to pay you a visit. I wanted to come earlier but I didn't want to disturb you!"

This time Luo Yuan was just catching up on his sleep, he was not even hospitalized. If they were to send someone who had a high rank to visit him, that was totally overreacting.

There was no secret that could be kept too long in the world.

Although the news about Luo Yuan being promoted to the vice-captain of the Firearms Bureau had not been announced, everyone was talking about it. As a special bureau that was formed by super evolved humans, their influence was not that wide but it was definitely not something that you can just brush off as well.

Their influence was small in the sense that they had limited rights and it was wide in the sense that they were the highest committee that was directly under the highest ranked departments where they held an independent status, allowing them to talk directly to the superiors.

Also, as the most driven security force of the reconstruction area, many other cities relied on their existence. To form a good relationship with the deputy minister of Hope City was a necessity for Luo Yuan.